



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

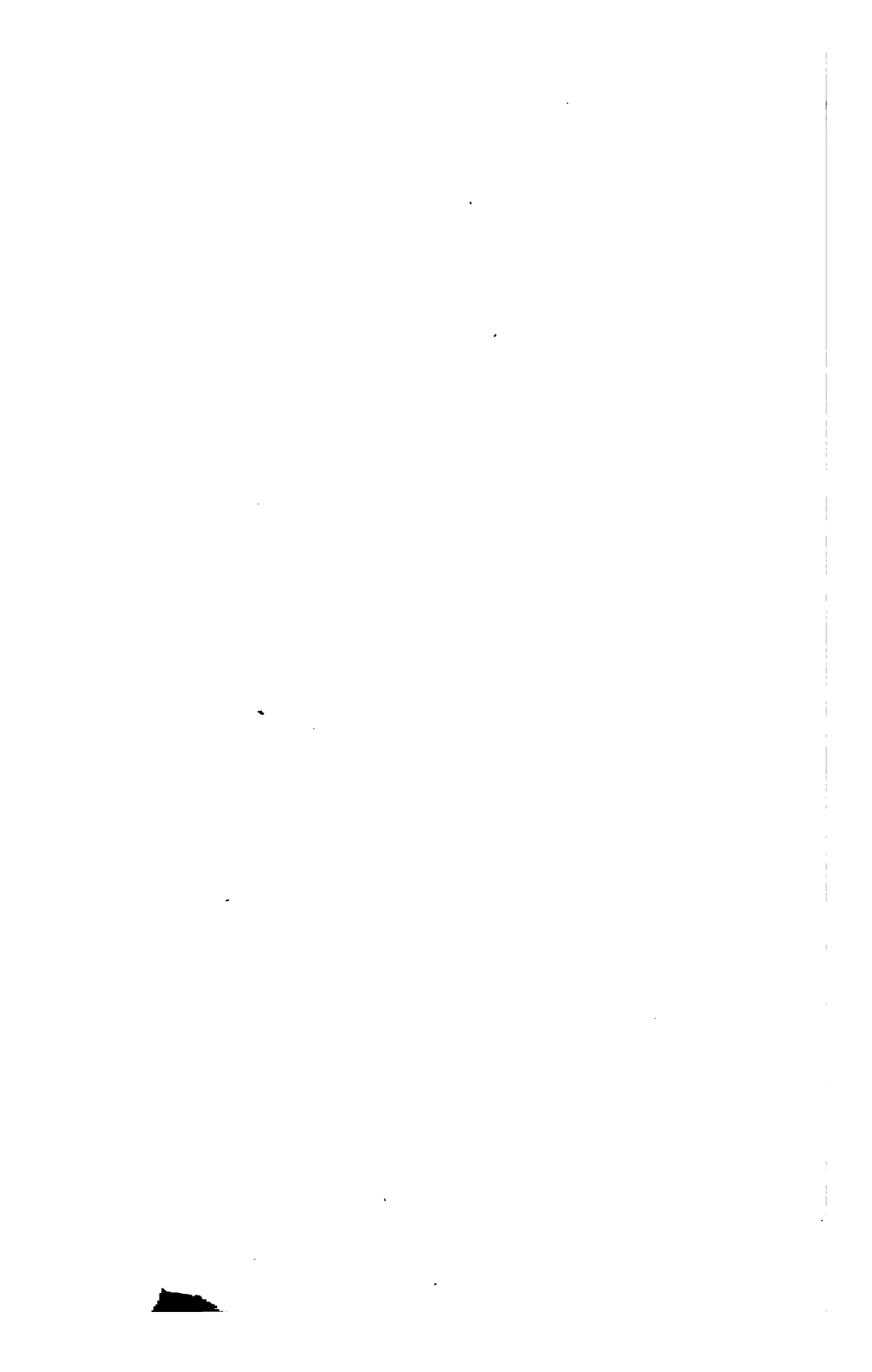
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



820.6
S431 na

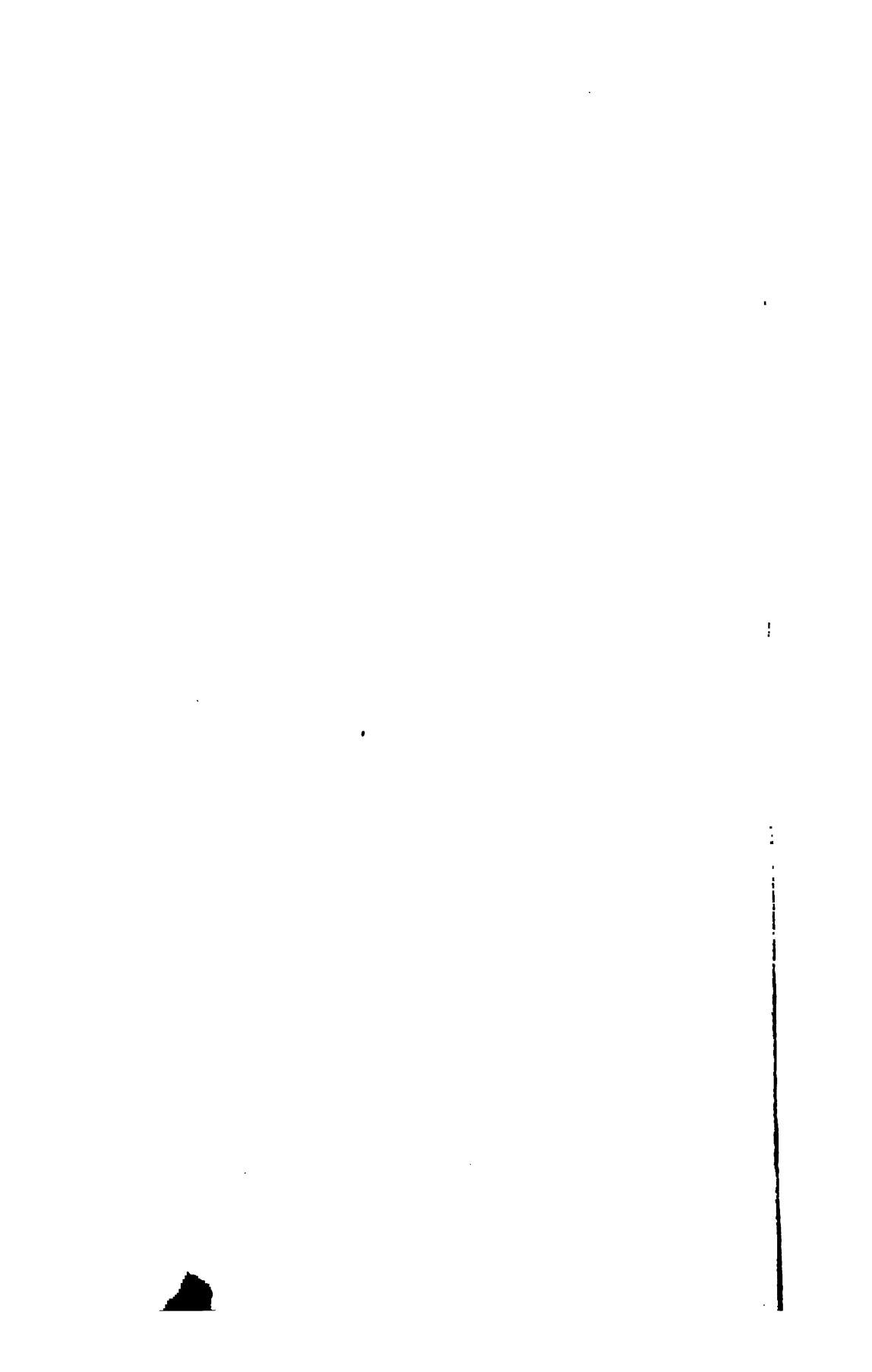


LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY



The Scottish Text Society

BELLENDEN'S
TRANSLATION OF LIVY





subyne to't grete nother of standie tube
ye capitoll, holl manulie pryncie of la/
tyme come, to't me army in supporte of ro/
mane, holl herdomie the same to tall
his complie/and ye capitoll restorist in
Ed. 3.
The Jugement e proff of ym tubmiane lathie
holl ye cote in it continuel exortation yna opton
theue followat in ye 300/66 tubmie Guband victas

LIVY'S
HISTORY OF ROME

THE FIRST FIVE BOOKS

TRANSLATED INTO SCOTS BY

JOHN BELLENDEN

1533

EDITED, WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY

BY

W. A. CRAIGIE, M.A.

VOL. I.

Printed for the Society by

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS

EDINBURGH AND LONDON

1901

114170

CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	vii
THE PROLOGUE TO THE TRANSLATION	I
THE PROLOGUE TO THE FIRST BOOK	7
THE FIRST BOOK	12
THE SECOND BOOK	129
THE THIRD BOOK (chaps. i.-xiv.)	240

FACSIMILE OF P. 248 OF THE ADVOCATES' LIBRARY MS.

(see p. 262) *Facing title-page*

INTRODUCTION.

THE Scottish translation of the first five books of Livy, which is here printed for the second time, was made in the year 1533 by John Bellenden or Ballantyne,¹ Archdean of Moray, better known as the translator of Hector Boece's 'History and Chronicles of Scotland.'² The date is definitely fixed by the following entries in the accounts of the Lord High Treasurer, which record the payments made to the translator during the progress, and at the completion, of his work :—

1533.

July 26. Item, to Maister John Ballentyne in part payment of the translatioun of Titus Leuius. viij li.

¹ "Ballantyne" is the form of the name given in the Advocates' MS. of the Livy, and this (or "Ballentyne," as in the Treasurer's accounts) was undoubtedly the one by which the author was commonly known to his contemporaries (see the 1821 reprint of the 'Chronicles,' pp. xxxvi-xxxix). That "Bellenden" is more familiar in modern times is entirely due to the fact that it is used in the printed text of the 'Chronicles.' A third form is "Bannatyne" (as in 'Pitcottie's Chronicles,' Introd. lxxviii), in connection with which it may be mentioned that Bannatyne House, near Newtyle in Forfarshire, is locally called "Ballintin."

² As a life of Bellenden would more appropriately be prefixed to a new edition of the 'Chronicles,' I have not thought it necessary to enter into biographical details here.

1533-

Aug. 24. To Maister John Ballentyne, in part payment of the
translatioun of the secund buke of Titus Livius. viij li.

Nov. 30. To Maister Johne Ballentyne, be the Kingis p̄cept
for his lauboris done in translating of Livie. xx li.

Though thus commissioned and paid for by the king, it is improbable that the work was ever much in request, and only two copies of it seem to be preserved. Fortunately one of these is excellent, and its slight defects are so well supplemented by the other, that it is possible to give a text which is practically complete, and of which the correctness can seldom be called in question.

The elder and better of the two copies is a manuscript (*A*) belonging to the Faculty of Advocates. This is a small folio, with pages measuring $10\frac{1}{4}$ by $7\frac{1}{2}$ inches, and evidently written before the middle of the sixteenth century, probably about 1540. The writing, which is clear and good,¹ and averages forty lines to the page, is the same throughout, with the exception of some later additions, of which the following are the most important. At the end of the prologue in verse are these lines, in a hand belonging to the early part of the seventeenth century:—

The copie of the Leter writin by gods awin hand, as it his

¹ Its only defect is the want of a clear distinction between *c* and *t*; both letters are formed by a down and side stroke, and the length and curve of the former is so irregular, that in cases where either *c* or *t* might be used (as *natioun* or *nacioun*, *Tacius* or *Tatius*) it is often impossible to say which letter is really intended. In such cases the shorter or more curved letter has been read as *c* and the longer or straighter one as *t*, but I am not sure that the scribe always intended this. In the other MS. *c* has a different form from *t*, but the one letter is frequently written for the other, showing that even the scribes of the period could not clearly distinguish them.

said, and fune vnder ane staine in ane waig (*sic*) callit ane acombe (*sic*) neir vnto þe toun of Isandamy in þe 3eir of our Lord God 1603.

Unfortunately the "copy" does not follow on this. Further down on the same page appears the signature of Lord Elliock, by whom the MS. was presented to the Library, "Ja. Veitch, Edin^r, 16 July, 1730"; this is repeated on p. x, "James Veitch, Edinburgh, 1731," and again on the last page of the book, with the date "16 October, 1731." The Prologue is followed by a table of the chapters of the fifth book in a later hand, and some one has made a considerable number of marginal notes in Latin: these refer entirely to the subject-matter, and are of no special interest or value. The concluding chapter of Book V., on p. 511, is in the same hand and ink as the lines on p. 512 ("Fyve Buikis, etc."), which are signed "A. Home." Then, in a different ink, but perhaps by the same hand, comes Martial's distich (xiv. 190)—

Pellibus exiguis arctatur Liuius ingens,
quem mea non totum Bibliotheca capit.

Below this appears twice, each time in different ink, the signature "A. Home, St Leonardis."

The defects of the MS. are fortunately few. A leaf has been lost between pp. 26 and 27, containing the end of chap. v. and the beginning of chap. vi., and a few leaves are missing at the end, containing the original conclusion of Book V.; the defect here is only partially supplied by A. Home's translation of chap. xxv. Except in these two places the MS. is in perfect condition throughout.

In respect of the text it contains, the Advocates' copy is remarkably good. The scribe evidently wrote with great care, and his mistakes and omissions are comparatively few. The orthography is very regular and free from eccentricities, one noticeable point being the care with which *w* is discriminated from *u* and *v*. In the case of the vowels, the scribe tends to follow the older practice of denoting long *a*, *e*, and *o* by the addition of final *e*, instead of using the digraphs *ai*, *ei*, *oi*; thus he usually writes *wate*, *wrate*, *barne*, *dede*, *here*, *glore*, rather than *wait*, *wrait*, *bairn*, *deid*, *heir*, *gloir*, though examples of the later forms are not wanting, as *haill*, *deith*, &c. As the MS. must have been written within a few years after the translation was made, it probably represents Bellenden's text pretty accurately in this and other points, though the character of some of the errors makes it doubtful whether it was transcribed directly from his autograph.

The edition of 1822¹ was based on the Advocates' MS. which was the only copy then known to exist. Unfortunately the editor, who in other respects seems to have been careful enough, considered that it lay within his editorial duties to normalise still further the already very regular spelling of the manuscript. No hint of this is given in the preface, and the result is very misleading. In some cases also the Roman names have been completely altered so as to agree with modern texts of Livy. The edition is thus altogether useless from a

¹ The First Five Books of the Roman History : translated from the Latin of Titus Livius by John Bellenden, &c. Edinburgh : Printed for W. and C. Tait. M. DCCC. XXII.

strictly philological point of view, as the form of no single word in it can be depended on, though in the main the text is correct enough as far as the wording is concerned.

The other copy of the translation (*B*) is the property of J. C. M. Ogilvie Forbes, Esq. of Boyndlie. The names of some earlier possessors are written here and there on the margins: thus on pp. 27 and 40, "Mongo Wood ought this book"; p. 65, "Mr William Gordon aught this book"; p. 253, "Georg Gordon Aught this booke." No dates or localities, however, are appended to any of these names, so that they give no obvious assistance towards ascertaining the history of the MS. prior to the time when it came into the hands of Mr Forbes' great-grandfather.

This manuscript differs widely in character from the one described above. In form it is a tall folio of 568 pages, measuring $11\frac{1}{2}$ by $7\frac{3}{4}$ inches. A slight examination is sufficient to show that the MS. consists of two distinct portions, the one containing Books I.-III., the other Books IV. and V. The latter portion, exactly 200 pages, is all in one hand and in a somewhat faint ink, whereas that of the first part is of a strong black colour. On looking more closely at this first portion, it becomes apparent that more than one scribe has been at work, and the remarkable fact is finally discovered that at the outset each of these scribes copied separate quires of sixteen pages. This arrangement continues as far as p. 176, after which the division of labour becomes much more irregular. The total number of hands which appear in this portion is no less than

eleven, and the precise pages written by each are shown in the following list:—

<i>No. 1.</i> —1-16.	<i>No. 6.</i> —225-226.
<i>No. 2.</i> —17-48, 65-80, 129-144, 161-176, 241-256.	<i>No. 7.</i> —227-240.
<i>No. 3.</i> —49-64, 81-96, 113-128, 180-208, 273-288, 295-320.	<i>No. 8.</i> —257-261.
<i>No. 4.</i> —97-112, 209-225.	<i>No. 9.</i> —261-272.
<i>No. 5.</i> —145-160, 177-179.	<i>No. 10.</i> —289-295.
	<i>No. 11.</i> —321-366.

It is pretty obvious that the original from which the Boyndlie MS. was copied must have been unbound, so that the separate quires could be distributed among a number of copyists. That this was the procedure adopted is made certain by the way in which each scribe has tried to make his quire end so as to run on neatly with the next; all are not equally successful in this, and sometimes half a line is left blank, or widely spaced writing shows the effort made to fill the allotted space. For some reason the scribe who began the seventeenth quire (p. 257) omitted to finish it, and the blank was afterwards filled up by the one who wrote Books IV. and V.: in this case there was some miscalculation, with the result that a portion of the text is missing between pages 272 and 273. Perhaps this was written on a separate leaf, which has since dropped out. Apart from this, the MS. is defective only in two places: the prologue in verse has disappeared (and with it the translator's name), and the loss of the last page has deprived us of the closing lines of Book V. These few lines, however, are all that is really lost of Bellenden's work, as in other respects the Boyndlie MS. supplies the deficiencies of the Advocates' copy.

From the general character of the various hands, the date of *B* may be set down as 1550-60. Its text is thus naturally of a later type than that of *A*, and is, moreover, inferior to it in every respect. Scribal errors of every kind abound; misspellings and distortions of words are frequent, and there are constant omissions of words and lines, occasionally of several lines at a time. Some of the scribes are certainly better than others, but no one of them can at all compare with the writer of *A*. In all probability the portion containing Books I.-III. was executed very hurriedly, which would account for most of the blunders, but there is also some reason for believing that the original itself was of an inferior type. There has been no attempt at revision, so that even the most glaring errors have been left uncorrected. The spelling is very irregular, and varies with the different hands: some of the scribes show a strong preference for *w* in place of *v*; some write *grit*, *cite*, *fader*, *autor*, *solempne*, &c., while others have *greit* or *grete*, *ceite*, *faper*, *author*, *solemne*; No. 3 is fond of doubling *r* and *s*, as in *faderris*, *appeirrit*, *rassit*, *inclussit*; No. 4 has a special fancy for *i* in the terminations *-aible*, *-aige*, *-ait*, *-air*; and close study would no doubt show that each of the others has his own peculiarities. On the other hand, some spellings which differ from those used in *A* are common to all the hands, and must have existed in their original. That this was on the whole very similar to *A* appears especially from the portions written by Nos. 2 and 10, who probably copied it more closely than their fellows, whereas Nos. 4 and 9 have treated it with considerable freedom, sometimes substituting their own wording for Bellenden's. This is notably the case in the early chapters of Book IV.,

where the copyist must have looked at the Latin, unless we suppose that Bellenden himself made alterations at this point.

Despite its many defects, however, the Boyndlie MS is of considerable value for the text. Not only does it fill up the larger gaps in *A*, but it supplies numerous words and sometimes lines which have been accidentally omitted there, and occasionally has the correct reading when *A* has the wrong one. It is thus an excellent instance of how an inferior copy may be of service as a check upon a better one, and a close comparison of the two is sufficient to yield an almost perfect text.

In the present edition the text is naturally that of the Advocates' MS., an exact transcript of which was made for the purpose by the Rev. Walter Macleod. As the value of the work is chiefly a philological one, the printed text is intended to reproduce the written one as closely as possible. Capitals and small letters are as in the manuscript, expanded contractions are denoted by italics, and the letters ð, fð, and þ (in the MS. of course identical with *y*) have been retained wherever they occur: on the other hand, the punctuation is entirely editorial. A close collation has been made with the Boyndlie MS., which Mr Ogilvie Forbes kindly placed in my hands for this purpose. As the differences between the two copies are largely those of spelling, it was somewhat difficult to decide how far the variations were worth noting, but on the whole I have worked on the following principles. All differences in wording have been carefully recorded, and all spellings which are not exactly equivalent to those of *A*. Mere variations of *i* and *y*, *w* and *v*, *c* and *k*, have as a rule been passed over, as well as the constant em-

ployment in *B* of *ai*, *ei*, &c., in place of *a-e*, *e-e* (see p. x above). *B* has also, as a rule, *de-*, *sc-*, *-ble*, *-eis*, *-onis*, *-tion*, in contrast to *A*'s *di-*, *sk-*, *-bill*, *-yis*, *-ouns*, *-cioun*; it never inserts the *e* in *spuleze*, *faleze*, &c.; it commonly has single consonants in such words as *hider*, *gader*, *strikin*, *redy*, *gotin*, &c., while in both MSS. there is constant variation between *-er* and *-ar*, *-at* and *-ate*, *twa* and *two*, *mare* and *more*, *said* and *saidis*, *quhilk* and *quhilkis*; in the majority of cases these differences have been ignored. There are also certain words of frequent occurrence in which *B* is fairly consistent in using a spelling which is different from the usual one in *A*; only a few instances of these have been registered, but a full list of them will be given with the notes at the end of the work. So numerous, moreover, are the errors and omissions of *B*, that to record them all would only have cumbered the page without corresponding profit. I have therefore noted only the more extensive skipings of the scribes, and have given only occasional samples of the way in which they could miscopy the simplest words.

With these exceptions, the variants from *B* may be taken to include everything of interest to be found in the manuscript. Owing probably to the haste with which the scribes worked, their spelling is much less conventional than that of *A*, and often supplies interesting evidence as to the pronunciation of the period. There is considerable reason to believe that the Scottish tongue underwent some important changes about the middle of the sixteenth century, which are only partially represented in the usual written forms of the words. Everything in the Boyndlie MS. which seemed likely to throw light on this question has been carefully noted,

and the more interesting points will be discussed in the notes.

The main text, therefore, is that of the Advocates' MS., printed for the most part without alteration: wherever it has been amended, from *B* or otherwise, the actual reading will be found at the foot of the page, followed by "*A*." All words or letters within square brackets are taken from *B*; in some cases these are not absolutely necessary for the sense, and may be interpolations of the one MS. rather than omissions of the other, but many are obviously genuine. All readings at the foot of the page which are not marked "*A*" are from *B*; and in order to show how the various scribes of the latter MS. dealt with their original, I have printed a number of longer passages for comparison with *A* and with each other. In this way the reader will perhaps have as clear an idea of the general character of the Boyndlie MS. as could well be given without printing it in full.

Two sets of numbers will be found on the outer margins. Those preceded by "p." give the pages of the Advocates MS., the exact beginning of each being indicated by an upright line in the text. Those enclosed in round brackets, and corresponding to an asterisk in the text, show the page in the edition of 1822: these have been added to facilitate the use of older references. To assist comparison with the Latin original I have also inserted in the text, within round brackets, the numbers of the chapters as given in the "Oxford Pocket Classics" edition. These do not correspond in any way with Bellenden's chapters, which again are differently numbered in the two copies. In *A* those of each book are numbered separ-

ately; in *B* the numbers are continuous to the end of Book III., after which they are altogether omitted.

As one of the few specimens of older Scottish prose which can properly be classed under the head of literature, the translation of Livy has considerable value, though in point of general interest it falls far short of the translator's other work. Along with a somewhat excessive Latinism, Bellenden has a large command of the vernacular, and his Scottish words and phrases are often very effectively employed. He has avoided the mistake of translating too closely, while at the same time he rarely paraphrases more loosely than is necessary to give a natural turn to the sentences. On the whole he correctly represents the meaning of the original, and some of the more prominent errors may be due to faults in the Latin text of the period. Why his translation extends no further than the five books can only be conjectured, but in the portion he did execute, Bellenden has shown both scholarship and a ready use of language, and it is an undoubted gain for Scottish literature that his work has been preserved in so original and accurate a form as that here presented to the reader.

W. A. C.

Here beynnys the proloug¹ apoun ye traduction of titus i (iii).
linius be Maister Johne Ballantyne Archden of
Murray.

ARMIPOTENT Lady Bellona serene,
Goddess of Wisdome and Ieoperdyis of Were,
Sister of mars and ledare of his rene,
And of his batallis awfull messingere,
5 Thy Werelike trumpett thounder in myne ere,
The horribill batellis and þe bludy harmes
To write of romanis, þe nobil men of armes.

And bricht appollo, with þi courß eterne
That makis þe frutis spring on euery ground,
10 And with þi mychty influenc[e] dois governe
The twynkland sternis about þe mappamound,
Thy fyry visage on my verß diffound,
And quykin þe spretis of my dull Ingyne
With rutuland bemes of þi low dyvine.

15 And 3e, my souerane, be lyne continewall (iv).
Ay cumin of kingis 3oure progenitouris,
And writis in ornat² stile poeticall
Qwik flowand verß of rethorik cullouris,
Sa freschlie springand in 3oure lusty flouris,
20 To þe grete comforte of all trew Scottismen;
Be now my muse and ledare of my pen.

¹ This prologue is wanting in the Boyndlie MS.

² orname, MS.

That be ȝoure helpe and favoure graciſ
 I may be abill (as ȝe commandit me)
 To follow þe prince of storie liuius,
 Quhais curious reſſouns tonit ar so hie,
 And euery ſenß ſa full of maieſte,
 That so he paßß¹ vthir ſtorie all
 As ſiluer diane doiſ the ſterneſ ſmall.

5

ii. And ſchortlie for to tell I will aſſay
 How ſobirly begouth þe romane blude,
 Thare commoun weill augmentand day be day
 And mony ȝeris vnder kingis ſtude ;
 And ſyne how þai proude terquyne did exclude,
 With tyrannye quhen he abone þame rang,
 And all hiſ lynnage out of þare ciete dang.

10

And þan how ſtoutlie Brutus waſ providit,
 And gart þe pepill wíth mychty aithis ſwere
 Neuer with kingis eftir to be gidit,
 Bot wíth two conſullis changit euery ȝere.
 And quhen maiſt troubill and perrell did appere,
 How þai create ane prudent dictatoure
 Onlie ſex monethis to be gournoure.

15

20

(v). ffollowis how romanis to þe grekis went,
 And brocht ten tabillis of þare conſtitutions ;
 And becauſe þe ſamyn waſ nocht ſufficient
 Of euery douttis to gif deciſiouns,
 With two vthir tablis þai made additiouns.
 Thir twelf tabillis (aſ þe ſtorie ſchawis)
 War þe firſt foundment of þe ciuill lawis.

25

Apperis, be ſindri boundis of þiſ ſtorie,
 That na thing in þe hicht iſ permanent,
 Nor in þe ſamyn may haue tranquillite ;
 ffor aſ of rome the empire & regyment

30

¹ = passis.

ffra romane kingis vnto consullis went,
 Sa fra þe consullis be ane uncouth gise
 It come to ten men on þe samyn wise.

Thir ten men eftir þare creatioun
 5 Renowne and favoure of all þe ciete gat,
 And doand Iustice but appellatioun
 Thare courß about on euery mater sat ;
 Quhil at þe last þai war exterminat
 ffor siclike crymes, as þe kingis did.
 10 Thus þe empire agane to consullis 3eid.

Sa knichtly dedis in bukis historiall
 Sall neuer be fundin quhil þe warld Induris,
 Seand how fortoun rollis as ane ball
 The liffe of man with sindri aventuris,
 15 And how þe state of mortall creaturis
 Has nevir mare knaulage (as myne auctor beris)
 Of suddand fall þan¹ quhen it leist apperis.

iii.

Quhat realmes and cieteis for falt of Iustice lost,
 Quhat vailþeand campiouns & dukis militare
 20 ffor falt of wisdom bene tynt with all þare Oist,
 Myne auctor schewis, and sum tyme will declare
 The damage of divisioun populare,
 Quhilk haistelie (quhare na concorde is socht)
 The commoun weill resoluis in to nocht.

(vi).

Be mony exemplis dois þis storie preif
 25 Of tressoun falsett and rebelloun,
 The fynale end Is no thing bot myschefe.
 And as na wrangis nor Iniure war done
 Amang þe romanis but punycioun,
 30 Richt so 3e may in to þare storie rede
 Conding rewarde for euery nobil dede.

¹ þat, MS.

Of awfull batallis þe crafty gouernance,
 The wise array, þe manlie leoperdie,
 3e may fynd here, *wit* mony doutsum chance,
 Als quyk as þai war led afore 3our Ee.
 3e may also be mony stories see
 Quhat besynes may proffitt or avance
 3oure princely state with ferme continuance.

5

Considdir of romanis in all þare tyme bywent
 baith wikkitt fortoun & prosperiteis.
 Nocht fell to þame (quhen þai war negligent
 In divyne *seruice*) bot trubill and distreß;
 And be þe contrare 3e sall fynd expreß,
 Quhen þai relligious & devote war found,
 All welth and grace with honoure did habound.

10

iv (vii).

3e may als se how goddis did Invade
 The romane pepill with derth and pestilence,
 Becaus þare sacrifice war nocht deulie made,
 As aucht to be, with glorie and reuerence;
 Syne how of goddis þe cruell violence
 Be erdly wit couth neuer be pecifyit,
 Quhil be sum meretis þare Ire war satisfyit.

15

20

Throw quhilk apperis ane notabil doctryne
 To ws þat has þe trew relligioun,
 To mak ws fervent in þe law divyne
 And for offence to drede punycioun,
 Sen sic vane faith and superstitioun
 Preservit þe pepill (quhen it was deuly *servit*)
 ffra every vengeance þat þare syn *deservit*.

25

To schaw all proffittis I wil nocht pretend
 Quhilk þe first decade of þis werk dois bere,
 ffor, þocht I spendit ane moneth to þe end,
 Thare suld 3it rest ane largeare feild til ere

30

Than all my pleuch *mycht* teill in to ane ȝere ;
 ffor in quhat sorte ȝoure hienes will delite,
 ȝe may gett stories to ȝoure appetite.

5 Richt proffittabill till undermynde ȝoure fais
 And for to lere þe arte of chevelrie,
 Seand how romanis be þare vertew rais
 Abone þe pepill in riches, honeste,
 Relligioun, manhede, witt and equite ;
 And, finalie, how þai all cuntreis wan
 10 Be Ieoperdyis abone Ingyne of man ;

And war sa strang, þat na thing *mycht* doun cast (viii).
 Thare souerane power nor mak þe samyn declyne,
 War nocht þai rageit on þame self at last
 With civil batellis and weris Intestyne :
 15 Bot I will nathing schew of þare rewynne,
 ffor þat war nocht þe way, I vnderstand,
 To dant þe province quhilk I tuke on hand.

For I Intend of þis difficill werk v.
 To mak ane end, Or I my lauboure stynt,
 20 War *nocht* þe passage and stremes ar sa stark
 Quhare I haue salit, full of crag & clynt,
 That ruddir and takillis of my schip ar tynt,
 And þus my schip (without ȝe mak supporte)
 Wil periß lang or It cum to þe porte.

FFINIS.¹

Here endis the proloug.²

¹ In paler ink.

² "Of þis guid buik" is added in paler ink. Pages vii-x contain a table of the chapters of Book V. in a later hand.



Here begynnys the proloug made be the nobill clerk titus p. 1.
Titius, prince of historiographouris, apoun þe first decade
fra þe begynnng of rome.

I WATE nocht gif I war to do ane proffitabil werk, gif I
wrote þe dedis of romanis sen the first begynnyng of
rome; peraventure I dar nocht write þe samyñ þocht I could.
And ȝit I se þare werkis of lang begynnyng and richt divulgate
5 to þe pepill, señ new¹ authouris belevis Ilk day owthir to
write þe said history with mare faith and sikkirnes, or ellis
be þare crafty eloquence traistis to vincuñ the rude langage
of anciant authouris. in quhatsumeir way It sall happin, It
will pleiñ me to haue pastance and consolacioun with my self,
10 to haue in memorie þe Illustir and wourthy dedis of þat pepil
quhilk is þe prince of þe warld. And þocht in sic pluralite
of writaris my fame is obscure and of litill estimatioun, ȝit I
sall comforte my self in þe nobilite and magnitude of þare

Specimen of the quair written by the first scribe in the Boyndlie MS.

15 I WAIT nocht giff I wer to do ane proffit[a]ble werk, gyf I wrait
þe dedis of romanis sen the first begynnyng of rome; perawenture
I dar nocht writ þe samin þocht I culd. And ȝit I se thair werkis
of lang begynning and rycht dewulgat to þe pepill, Sen new authoris
belewis Ilk day othair to writ þe said historie with mair fayth and
20 sickernes, or ellis be thair crafty eloquence traistis to wincuñ þe Rude
langage of anciant authoris. in quhatsumeir way It sal-happin, It
will pleiñ me to hayf pastance and consolatioun with my self, to
hawe in memory þe Illuster and vorthy dedis of þat pepill, quhilk
is þe prince of the varld. And thocht in sic pluralite of writaris my
25 fame is obscure and of litill existimatioun, ȝit I sall confort my self
in The nobilite and mangnitude of thair renoun that sall noy my

¹ now, *A*.

- renoun þat sall noy my name. Attoure þe historie of romanis
 is of grete besines, becaus It is now to be repetit abone sevin
 (2). hundreth ȝeris. And þocht þe Impire of *romanis is procedit
 of smal begynnynge, ȝit it is incressit and rissin in sic magni-
 ficence and hicht, þat þe samyn Is chargeand and lauborius 5
 to þame self. I dout nocht bot the begynnyng of romanis,
 and þe historyis nixt following fra þair begynnynge, sall be of
 leß pleser to þe redaris þan recent historyis. becaus þai will
 haisty þame self to here þir nowellis and recent dedis done
 in our dais, In quhilkis þe strenthis of þe maist strang pepill 10
 in erde has devorit and consumyt þame self. On þe tothir
 parte, I wil desire na thing erare in reward of my laubouris
 þan to subtract me fra sight of sic miserijs as oft occurris in to
 oure dayis, quhil I may reherß in mynde the antiquiteis of
 mony ȝeris departit; quharethrow I may be sa void of curis 15
 p. 2. þat, howbeit the samyn may mak my mynde full of sollicitude,
 ȝit þai may na thing divert me fra þe treuth of historie. And
 þocht sic thingis (as bene schewin afore þe begynnynge of rome
 or señ It was biggit) be decorit mare be poeticali fabillis þan

name. Attoure, þe histore of romanis Is of grit besines, becaus 20
 It Is now to be repetit abone seuin hundreth ȝeris. And þoch þe
 Empire of romanis Is procedit of small begynning, ȝit It Is incressit
 and Rysin to sic magnifice[nce] and hicht, that þe samyn Is charge-
 and [and] lauborius to þame self. I dout nocht bot þe begynning
 of romanis, and þe historiis nixt following fra thair begynning, sal-be 25
 of leß pleser to þe redaris than recent historiis, becaus þe redaris
 will haisti thame self to heir thir nowellis and recent Dedis done
 In our dayis, in quhilkis þe strenthis of maist strang pepill hes
 Deworit and consumit þame self. on the toþir part, I will Desyre
 na thing erar In reuarde of my Lauboris than to ¹subtract me fra 30
 þe sight of sik miseriis as oft occurris in to our dayis, quhill I
 may Reherß in mynde þe antequiteis of mony ȝeris departit;
 Quhairthrow I may¹ be sa woid of curis þat, howbeit þe samyn
 may mak my mind full of sollicitude, ȝit thay ma na thing dewert
 me fra the treuth of history. And thoct sic thingis as bene schawin 35
 afore þe begynnin of rome (or señ It was biggit) be decorit mair with

¹— These lines, coming at the foot of p. 1, are repeated at the top of p. 2.

ony Incorruptit testimoniall of trew historiis, ȝit þe samyñ ar
 nouthir to be affermit nor reprevit be ws; for sic thingis suld
 be perdonit be ressouñ of þare antiquiteis, Becaus þai fabillis
 in discribing þe begynnyng of romanis wald mak þe samyñ þe
 5 more divyne and mervellus, þat þe power of meñ Is supportit
 be commixtioun of goddis. Attoure, gif It be lefull to ony
 pepil to consecrate þare begynnyng, and to refer þare progeni-
 touris to goddis, sic glore mycht weil be gevin to romanis, for
 þai had mars þe god of batall to þare progenitoure and first
 10 begynnare. all pepill sustenis þ[a]ir opiniouñs oñ þe samyn maner
 as þai sustene þe empire of romanis. Bot ȝit, in quhatsumeir
 way thir and sic opiniouns are considerit or belevit, we hald þame
 of litil forð. Now euery redare gif his mynde with vehement
 attendance to know quhat maneris has bene afore this tyme
 15 amang þe romanis, be quhat pepill, be quhat crafty Ingynys, þe
 empire of romanis has be conquest and ekit baith in were and
 pece to þir dayis. And consider in his mynde how sleuthfull
 war þe maneris of romanis, quheñ morall disciplynis begañ to
 failþe. And how þe more þai slaid fra gude maneris and doc-

20 poeticall fabillis þan ony Incorruptit testimoniall of trew historiis,
 ȝit the samin ar nouþir to be affirmit nor repreuit be vs; ffor sik
 thingis suld be perdonat be resson of thare antiquiteis, Becaus þai
 fabillis in discrying In (*sic*) þe beginnyng of romanis wald mak þe
 sammin þe more dewine and mervalus, þat þe power of men Is
 25 supportit be commixtioun of [goddis]. attoure, gyf it be lefoull to
 ony pepill to consecrate thair beginnin, and to refere þair progeni-
 touris to goddis, sic glore might be gevin to romanis for þai had mair
 (*sic*) þe god of battall to þair progenitoure & first beginner. all pepill
 sustenis þair opynionis on þe samin maner as þai sustene þe empire
 30 of romanis. Bot ȝit, in quhatsumewer way þir and sik opinnyonis
 ar considerit or belewit, we hald þame on litill forð. Now euery
 redar gif his mynd with wehement attendance to know quhat man-
 erris hes bene afoir þis tyme amang þe Romanis, be quhat pepill, be
 [quhat] crafty inginis the empire of romanis hes bene conquest and
 35 eikit bayt in were and pece to þir dayis, and consider in his mind
 quhow sleuthfull wer þe maneris¹ . . . and doctrine thay rane þe

¹ No break in MS.

tryne, They ran the more feirsleie vnto euery vice, quhil at last It
 is *cummyn* to þir dayis, In quhilkis we may nouthir suffir oure
 (3). vices, nor lawis to remeid the samyn. *Ȝit ane thing sall be richt
 hailsum & proffitable to þe þat happynnys to haue cognicioun of
 þis historie, seing þe documentis of sa mony Illuster and nobil 5
 exemplis as ar colleckit here togiddir vnder ane historie, quhare-
 throw þow may do grete *commodite* baith to þi self & *commoun*
 wele, sum tymes lerand sic doctrynis as þow may vse eftir in þi
 p. 13. | life, And sum tymes lerand to eschew all thingis quhilkis has
 baith ane schamefull begynnyng & ane schamefull ending. And 10
 forthir owthir þe affectioun þat I bure to þis *present* besines dis-
 savis me, or ellis þare was nevir ciete þat had þare *commoun*
 weil of mare renoun, of mare halynes, nor more riche of gude
 examplis, þan was þe toun of rome. Attoure þare was neuer pepil
 in quhilkis avarice and licherie gat later Intrefß, nor in quhilk 15
 hie renowne and honoure war gevin sa lang to temperance &
 poverté; for þe mare pouerte þai had þe leß avarice was with
 þame, quhil now latelie Riches and superabundant pleseris has
 brocht in avarice, and gevin occasioun be voluptuousß leving to
 devore and consume euerything. The deploracion of sic miseris 20

more fe[r]slye vnto euerry vice; quhill at þe last It is *cumin* to þir
 dayis, In quilkis we may nouþir suffer Oure wices, nor Lawis to
 remeid þe samyn. Ȝit ane thing sal-be *rycht* halsum and proffitable
 to þe þat happinnys to hayf cognitioun Off þis history, seing þe
 documentis of sa mony Illuster & notabill exemplis as ar collectit heir 25
 togiddir onder ane history, Quhairthrow þow may do grit *commodite*
 bayth to thy self and þe *commone* wele, sum tymis lerand sic Doc-
 trinis as þow may vse eftir in thi lyfe, and sum tymes lerand to
 eschew all thingis quilkis hes bayth ane schamefull begynnyng & ane
 schamefull endyng. And forþir þe affectioun þat [I] beir to þis precent 30
 besines dissauis me, Or ellis þair ves neuer ceite þat [had] þair *com-*
 moun wele of [mair] renoun, of mair halines, nor more riche of gude
 exemplis, þane was þe toun of rome. Attoure þair vas *neuir* pepill
 in quilkis auirice and lichory gat later Incres, nor In quhilk he renoun
 and honour wer gewin sa lang to temperance & pouerte; for þe mair 35
 pouerte þai had the leß temperance (*sic*) wes with þame, quhill now
 laity riches & superabundand pleseris hes brocht in auirice, And
 gewin occasioun be voluptuous lewing to Dewore & consume all
 thingis. The deploratioun of sic miseris will *nocht* be plesand,

wil *nocht* be plesand, Suppois þe tyme was neccessare þareto ;
 ffor sic thingis suld *nocht* be rehersit at þe begynnyng of þis grete
 werk, bot erare to convert oure prayeris be Imitacioun of poetis,
 to Implore with solemne cerymonis þe favour of goddis and
 5 goddeß, to grant me ane happy ending to þe begynnyng of þis
 grete werk.

Here endis the preface of titus livius apon his first
 buke fra þe begynnyng of rome, and begynnys þe
 historye.

10 Suppois þe tyme ver nesessar þairto ; for sik thingis suld *nocht* be re-
 hersit at þe begynnyng of þis grit verk, bot erer to convert our pray-
 eris be Immitatioun of poetis, to implore *with* solemp cerimonis þe
 fawour of goddis & goddasis, to grant ane hapy endyng to þe begyn-
 nyng of þis grit werk.

15 Heir endis þe preface of titus liuius Apon his first buke
 fra the begynnyng of rome, & begynnys þe histore.

- (4). * How Eneas and antenor come in Italy¹ eftir the
 eversioun of troy; how antenor foundit² Venys;
 and how Eneas foundit² lavyne, and was allyat
 with King latyne; of his sindry aventuris³ and
 deith. Capitulum primum. 5

IN the begynnyng It is patent yneuch, quhen troy was takin,
 þat þe grekis slew mony of þe cietezanis þareof. Two
 princes war in þis ciete, Antenor and Eneas, quham þe grekis
 p. 14. be | richt of anciant lugeing⁴ noch Invadit with batall, for thir
 princes war compositouris of pece, and lauborit to restore helene 10
 agane to grekis; and for þir causes war sufferit to departe with
 þare body and gudis saif. It is als knawin þat Antenor, brokin
 be sindri aventuris, [come] in þe maist Inwart partis of þe
 Adriaykis⁵ seyis, having⁶ with him ane multitude of Pepill callit
 henettis, quhilkis be seditioun falling amang þame self war doun 15
 out of paphlagone þare ciete and constrenit⁷ to seik ane new
 gouernoure and duelling place, for þare king philome⁸ was slane
 (5). at Troy. * Antenor, eftir his cummyng in Italy with þir henettis
 & troianis, eiekkit þe auld Inhabitantis þare of, namyt euganis,
 duelland þat tyme betuix the seyis⁹ and þe montanis⁹ of Italy 20
 callit Alpes. Antenor, with thir henettis and troianis, eftir þe
 expulsoun of Euganis tuke reall¹⁰ possession of all þare landis
 & gudis. The place In quhilk þai come first was namyt be þame
 Troy, bot¹¹ It was callit eftir¹² Pagus, þat is to say, ane landwart
 towne; Syne callit baith þe¹³ pepill vnder ane name venicianis. 25
 It is als patent how Eneas, fugitive fra his ciete on þe samyn

¹ Etalie.⁴ lugin.⁷ constranit.¹⁰ ryall.¹² om.² fundit.⁵ hadreakis.⁸ Phelomene.¹¹ efter.¹³ þir.³ auentoure.⁶ hayfand.⁹ transp.

maner, (how beit þe weirdis led him to ¹þe begynnnyng of ¹greter renoun and pepill) come first in ²macedone, and to seik ane duelling place was eftir drevin in Sicill, and come eftir *wit* ane grete navy ³in þe cuntre of laurence, and namyt the place (quhare
 5 he first landit) Troy, and all his pepill troianis. Thir troianis brokin *wit* lang travell in þare viage, ⁴eftir þare *cummyn* in þe said land, (becaus na thing was þan restand amang þame sauffing ⁵þare mvnycioun and armoure), tuke ane large pray out of þe landis of laurence to refreshe þare wery pepill. In þe
 10 meyn tyme, king latyne of laurence assemblit þe auld Inhabitantis of | his realme namyt aborigines, armyt in þare maist werelie p. 5. ordinance, to repreß þe violent Incursion of þir strangearis. ⁶sindri opiniouns ⁷ar in þis mater. Sum historicianis allegeis þat king latyne was vincust be Eneas in batall, and constrenit ⁸
 15 þare throw to gif his dochter Lavinia, þe heretowr of his realme, in mariage to þe said Eneas, and made pece with him be þis affinite. Vtheris allegis quhen baith þe armyis ⁹stude arrayit in vtheris ¹⁰sicht, afore þe trumpettis gaif signe ¹¹to Ione, ¹²þat king latyne drew Eneas, gouernour of þir strangearis, to ane freyndlie
 20 *commonyng*, and demandit him quhat pepil þai war þan present ¹³in his cumpany; how and be quhat aventure þai left þare native ¹⁴cuntre, and quhat þai ¹⁵disirit or socht in his landis of laurens. At last king latyne, herand þame troianis and *cummyn* within
 25 þare prince Eneas was þe son of Anchises & Venus, banist and his ciete brynt, and sekand ane place to big ¹⁶ane toun, and fra he considerit þe grete nobilite of his pepill and þe hie curage of himself, reddy to al aventuris baith in were and pece, he tuke trewis *wit* þe said Eneas, Promitting ¹⁷to gif his dochter Lavinia
 30 in mariage ¹⁸to him. ¹⁸* Sone eftir, þir twa ¹⁹princis war con- (6). federate, & generall concorde made betuix þare ²⁰pepil. Than Eneas was ressauit in lugeing *wit* king latyne, and in presence

¹—¹ om.² to.³ naway.⁴ vaige (!).⁵ saifing.⁶ strangioris.⁷ oppinionis.⁸ constranit.⁹ armis.¹⁰ vþthairris (!).¹¹ sing.¹² Iune.¹³ precent.¹⁴ natyf.¹⁵ þa.¹⁶ byge.¹⁷ promittand to him.¹⁸—¹⁸ om.¹⁹ two.²⁰ þair two.

of his familiare goddis Resauit Lavinia his dochter in mariage, in
 takin of perpetuall amite. This new affinite and concorde gaif
 ferme *esperance*¹ to troianis to finis al þare *errouris*² with ane
 stabill and sikkir duelling. Sone eftir þai biggit ane toune, quhilk
 was namyt *lavinium*, eftir þe name of Eneas wiffe. Eneas within 5
 schort tyme following had ane son³ gottin be his new affinite,
 namyt *Ascanus*. (II) And *nocht withstanding* þis new affinite
 p. 6. lang weris continewit betuix thir | troianis and aborigines, for
 turnus king of Rutules (to quham *lavinia* was hecht in mariage
 afore þe *cummyn* of Eneas in Itale) was richt Impacient to suffir ane 10
 strangeare to be preferrit to him, and for þat cauß invadit king
 latyne and Eneas with batall baith atanis. Nane of þir partyis⁴
 war glade of þe *chancis*⁵ falling be þis fechtin, for þe Rutules
 war vincust, and þocht þir troianis and aborigines war victorius,
 zit þai tynt king latyne, for he was slane in þe said batall. Than 15
 turnus and þe Rutules, *disparit* of releif, fled to *Mezentius* king
 of *hetruria* to get support of his maist riche and pussant pepill þe
hethruschis.⁶ This *mezentius* regnand⁷ in his toun of *Cere*, than
 flowand⁸ in hie prosperite and riches, was na thing content of
 þe suspicius rising of þis new toun of *lavyne*, traisting þe *commoun* 20
*weil*⁹ of troianis to rise haistlie of sic firmance, þat na sikkir rest
 nor¹⁰ *felicite* mycht stand to þare *nychtbouris*; and for þat cauß
Mezentius was confederate lichtlie with þe *Rutuleis*. Than
 Eneas to resist þe rage and terroure of sa pussant *Inemyis*, and
 to conqueß þe mare hartlie kyndenes of þe auld *Inhabitantis* of 25
 þat regioun, callit baith þame and þe troianis vnder ane name
 latynis, to þat fyne þat baith þe pepill suld Increß togiddir¹¹ vnder
 ane mynd & lawis. ffra þat furth þir aborigines concurrir with
 Eneas in all *aventuris*, In na leß faith & ferme societe than did
 þir¹² troianis. Eneas confiding in¹³ þe curage of þir two pepill 30
Increasing Ilk day in more riches and strenth, Howbeit þe
 Realme of *hethruschis* flowit in sic *felicite* & welth þat þare grete

¹ asperance.⁵ chanß.⁸ follouand (!). ¹¹ þe gidder.² *arrouis*.⁶ *Ethruschis*.⁹ *weillfair*.¹² þe.³ (namit *Ascanius here*.)⁷ ringand.¹⁰ na.¹³ considering.⁴ pertyis.

senȝeorie fillit baith * seyis and landis, fra þe montanis namyt (7).
 Alpes endlang¹ Italie² vnto Sicill *witþ* þe renoun | thareof; ȝit p. 7.
 Eneas (suppoisþ he mycht haue³ resistit þe Incursioun of þir
 maist strang pepil be onlye mvnitiouns⁴ and wallis of his new
 5 toun) he brocht furth þe⁵ pepil arrayit to þe campis to gif batal to
 all Invasouris. Þis batall was richt fortunate to latynis, and was
 þe last of al Eneas mortale laubouris, for þe Ethruschis war
 vincust and Eneas slane in It, and buryit beside þe River of
 Numyk.⁶ with quhatsumeuir name It is lefull to call him, he
 10 was haldin be þe pepil for Iupiter Indiges, and ekit to þe nowmer
 of goddis.

Of Ascanius empire eftir þe deith⁷ of Eneas, And
 how he foundit⁸ þe Ciete of Alba; of þe lang 2.
 posterite succeding eftir him; how romulus and
 15 remus slew þare eme Amulus, & restorit numi-
 tor þare gudeschir to his realme. Ca. ij.

(III) Ascanius, eftir þe deith⁹ of Eneas, was be his minorite
 nocht ganand to succede to his empire; Howbeit It remanit
 hail to his age of xiiii ȝeris. The realme of latynis and troi-
 20 anis was sauffit to þis childe Ascanius be prudent tutorie of
 lavinia his moder, In quham¹⁰ grete vertew haboundit. quha
 may sikkerlie afferme sa remote & vncouth¹¹ historie? I wil
 nocht dispute gif þis Ascanius was more agit þan to be
 gottin on lavinia; he was gottin (as sum belevis) on Creusa¹²
 25 þe spouß of Eneas mony ȝeris afore¹³ þe exterminioun of
 troy, and come with his fader as fugitive & companȝoun¹⁴ in
 all his aventuris, namit Iulus, fra quham the houß of Iulius

¹ endland, *A.*⁵ his.⁹ deth.¹² Crusa, *A.*² etalie.⁶ nunyk, *A.*; mwnik, *B.*¹⁰ quhom.¹³ efter (!).³ a.⁷ deth.¹¹ vncouht.¹⁴ compainȝeone.⁴ *inventionis* (!).⁸ fundit.

tuke begynnyng. Trew It is¹ þat Ascanus, (in quhatsumeir place or on quhatsumeir woman he was gottin) was þe son of Eneas, and becaus he saw þe toun of lavyne fluriß in grete felicitye be fouth² of men & richeß, he left þe samyn p. 8. to be Inhabit be his moder, | or ellis his stepmoder, lavinia, 5
 (8). And³ in esperance of greter⁴ felicitye he beildit ane vþir new toun vndir the fute of mont Albane. This toun (becaus It was mare extendit to þe lenth þan brede) was callit lang Alba. fra þe begynnyng of lavyne to þe begynnyng of Alba þe colony and pendikillis⁵ þareof war xxx ȝeris. Thir townys, 10
 lavyne and Alba, increscit togidder in sic affluence of men and richeß, specially eftir þis huge victorie gottin on mezen-tius and hethruschis, þat nothir⁶ þe said hethruschis nor ȝit ony vthir pepil had audacite to Invade þame in þe deith of Eneas, nor in þe tutorie of lavinia, nor ȝit in þe first 15
 ȝeris of Ascanus empire; for sic pece was made betuix þe hethruschis and [þe] latynis, þat þe river of Albula, quhilk is now callit tyber, was equale marche to þame baith. Efter Ascanus succedit his son Siluius, quhilk was borne be aventure in ane wod. Siluius had to his son Eneas siluius, 20
 succeding eftir him. Eneas siluius gat Latynus siluius, fra quhom mony smal cieteis tuke [þair] begynnyng, quhais Inhabitantis war callit þe anciant latynis. Siluius was þe commoun surname to all þame quhilk eftir þe deith of latynus siluius succedit to þe empire of Alba. Eftir latynus siluius succedit 25
 his son, Alba siluius. Eftir alba succedit Atis; eftir Atis succedit Capis; And eftir capis rang Capetus; And eftir capetus rang Tiberynus, quhilk passand oure þe river of Albula perist, throw quhilk þe Ryver was callit eftir his name tiber. Eftir tyberinus succedit Agrippa siluius; And eftir 30
 Agrippa rang Romulus siluius, and resignit⁷ the croun to his soun⁸ Aventyne, quhilk⁹ aventyne was slane be thunder on ane litill montane quhilk is now ane parte of rome, be quham þe said Montane was eftir callit Aventyne. Eftir þe

¹ Trewth is.³ An.⁵ pendikill.⁷ resingnit.⁹ This.² foucht.⁴ gretar.⁶ nouþir.⁸ sone.

deith of aventyne succedit his son Proca, quhilk | had twa p. 9.
sonnys Nunitor¹ and Amulus. This proca left in legacy to
Nunitor² (becaus he was eldest son) the kingdome of þe
houß and lynage of siluius; ȝit þe preiße and violence of
5 tyranny³ was mare pussant in þis mater þan ony reuerence
of age or faderly piete;⁴ for Amulus banist his brother, &
vsurpit þe croun be force, and, to eik ilk cruelte abone vthir,
he slew all þe lynage mail of his brother, traisting þare throw
to regne⁵ in quiet, but ony eftir clame. Syne tuke his
10 brother dochter namyt Rhea, and profest hir as ane nvn⁶ in
þe tempil of Vesta, goddes of chaistite,⁷ vnder cullovr to de-
core hir with solemne⁸ religioun, how *beit his purpoiß was (9).
þat be hir perpetual virginite the successioun of hir body suld
aluterly expire. (IV) ȝit, as I beleif, þe begynnyng of rome,
15 the maist pussant kingdome vnder þe power of goddiß, was
thirllit to destanye⁹ and fatale chance of werdis. This Rhea¹⁰
happynnyt to be deflorit of hir virginite, and brocht atanis to
þe licht twa twynnys, namyt eftir Romulus and Remus. All
wayis scho held Mars¹¹ þe god of batall to be fader to hir
20 sonnys, vncertane quhiddir scho fermelie traistit sa was as
scho ymaginit, or gif scho thocht mars mycht be þe mare
honest excuse for þe offence made aganis hir religion. ȝit
nothir¹² þe fere of goddis nor men mycht deliuer hir nor hir
sonnys fra tyranny¹³ of Amulus, ffor scho, *nocht withstanding*
25 þe reuerence of hir religion,¹⁴ was cassin in presoun,¹⁵ quhare
scho sone eftir decessit, And hir sonnys war *commandit* but
ony miseracioun to be cassin in tyber. This Ryver be divyne
purviance was zett¹⁶ furth *with* large flude abone þe brayis, in
sic maner þat na men mycht haue passage to þe streme or
30 iuste bankis þare of; ȝit It gaif¹⁷ sic esperance to þe bur-
reouris quhilkis bure þe barnis¹⁸ to þe River, þat þai traistit,
how beit þai kest þame in þe schald wattir¹⁹ þareof, | ȝit þai p. 10.

¹ *Altered from Mv'nitor, as in B.*² *om.*³ *orig. Munitor, A.*⁴ *tirranry.*⁵ *pete.*⁶ *reng.*⁷ *nwne.*⁸ *chestite.*⁹ *solemp.*¹⁰ *destine.*¹¹ *Rea.*¹² *Merß.*¹³ *nouþir.*¹⁴ *tyranry.*¹⁵ *relegioun.*¹⁶ *prissoun.*¹⁷ *ȝit.*¹⁸ *gef.*¹⁹ *þir bairnis.*²⁰ *walter.*

suld perist. Their burroughis, traisting to have dome suffici-
entlie þare devore, kest baith þir barnis¹ in ane pele within
þe shade mark. The place quhare þir barnis war cassin to be
perist is now callit ficus Ruminalis, quhare grete wildernes
and desertis war in þai dayis. The fame is, quhen þe River 5
was fallin to the ald marchis,² ane wolf, richt thirsty eftir
chaich of beistis, descendit fra þe montanis to þe said Rivere,
and be skirl of þir barnys come to þe samyn place quhare
þai war cassin to be perist,³ all ourrecovert sauffand⁴ þare
hedis with watter; And be divyne providence this wolf schew 10
hir sa meik to þir barnis, þat þe maister scheipberd⁵ fastulus
fand hir nocht alanerly gevand⁶ þame souke wið hir pappis,⁷
bot als likand þame with hir toung. This hird, movit be
pietuous⁸ commiseracioun, brocht hame thir barnis⁹ to be
nurist be his wife, namyt Laurence. Sam haldis þis laurence, 15
(becaus hir body was common to lust of men) was callit
lupa, quhilk in oure langage is ane wolf; throu quhilk It is
fengeit be poetis þat þir barnis¹⁰ war nurist be ane wolf. * In
quhatsumeur way þai war nurist, treuth is, fra þai¹¹ come to
strenth¹² and perfectioun of þeris, þai mycht nothir¹³ be haldin 20
at vile nor small laubouris, bot be Innative ferocite sum
tymes¹⁴ quhen þai kepit þair bestiall, þai chasit¹⁵ and slew
Ravenous beistis; and nocht satisfyt¹⁶ with sic besynes, slew
and tuke be frequent Incursiouns sindri strang thevis¹⁷ of þe
cuntre, quhilkis war accustomyt to Invaide þe hirdis þareof. 25
And to conquess¹⁸ þe more benevolence of þare compan-
zeouns¹⁹ þai devidit þe pray and spulezeis quhilkis war takin
fra þe saidis Theiffis amang þe remanent²⁰ hirdis of þat
regioun. Schortlie, be sindry companyis of feirß and young
p. 11. companzeouns¹⁹ daly²¹ assisting to þare opinioun, thay had 30
exercitioun als wele in merynes as in vþer more ernyst
gammyn. And to mak þare laubouris succede with more

¹ bairnyß.⁶ gyfand.¹⁰ barnes.¹⁴ tyme.¹⁸ conquest.² marchis.⁷ palpis.¹¹ þa.¹⁵ chayßit.¹⁹ compaigneonis.³ perist.⁸ peteous.¹² strenht.¹⁶ satisfyt.²⁰ remenantis.⁴ sauffing.⁹ bairnyß.¹³ noder.¹⁷ thewis.²¹ dayly.⁵ schepbird.

felicite, þai maid solemne¹ feistis eftir þare vsage on ane
 montane namyt palentine. (V) This montane was namyt
 palantium² fra palanteum ane toun of Archadie, bot eftir þat
 [it] was callit palantyne. Vnder þe fute of þis montane was
 5 ane den or ellis ane Vale³ namyt lupercall, dedicate to Pan
 god of Archadie be king Evander, quhilk rang mony ʒeris
 abone þe pepil of þat region. Be þis evander was institute
 ane sportsum play, þat ʒoung men⁴ suld ryn nakit in þare
 lust and Insolence, to wourschip⁴ pan Linceus, þe foresaid god
 10 of Archadie, quhilk eftir was callit Invus be þe romanis.
 quhen þe ʒoung men of þis cuntre war rynnand⁵ eftir þare
 gise⁶ in veneracioun of þe said pan, god of Archadie, Ane
 buschement of brigantes lay in wate,⁷ with grete haterent
 aganis Romulus and Remus for þe recovering of diuers
 15 prayis of gudis fra þame. And þocht Romulus eschapit be
 his singulare manhede, ʒit þai tuke Remus, and deliverit him
 as⁸ presoner to Amulius, saying he was ane theif and, be
 assistance of vthir lymmaris his companʒeouns, waistit & reft
 þe landis of Nuntor þe kingis brother. Thus was Remus
 20 gevin to nuntor to be punist. Now had fastulus gude
 cognossance⁹ þat Romulus and Remus, quhilkis war nurist
 be him, war of þe¹⁰ lynage and blude Riall; for he knew
 weill how þai war commandit to be drownit, and saw þe tyme
 of þar finding¹¹ and date of ʒeris aggreand togiddir.¹² how
 25 beit he wald noch^t opin ane haisty and vnprovisit mater, les
 þan he war *constrenit be necessite, Or ellis had fundin¹³ (11).
 sufficient occasioun to reveil þe samyn. Always sic necessite
 occurrit, þat he for fere of Remus life opynyt this¹⁴ mater to p. 12.
 Romulus and on þe samyn¹⁵ maner oppynyt this mater to
 30 numitor, quhilk havand the said Remus in presoun, and
 herand how he and his brother Romulus war twynnys, and
 þare age respondent to þe samyn date and supputatioun of

¹ solemp.⁵ vas rinand.⁹ congnoſce.¹³ fund.² palantin.⁶ gyið.¹⁰ he.¹⁴ þe sam.³ om.⁷ vait.¹¹ findin.¹⁵ sam.⁴ wirchop.⁸ aß ane.¹² wele aggreand þe gidder.

3eris In quhilkis þai¹ war devisit to be slane; And findand
 þame of heare² curage and sprete þan apperis with men of
 vile and obscure lynage, come haistelic to his mynde the
 memorie of his nevois,³ and seirchit finalie⁴ the mater sa fer
 þat he knewe al maist perfitelie Remus. Thus was ane 5
 conspiracy made on Ilk⁵ side aganis þe king Amulus.
 Romulus seand him self nocht⁶ party to Invade the king be
 opin violence, come nocht *wit* ane cumpany of armyt men
 atanis, bot trystit his freyndis and companjeouns to mete him,
 Ilk man cummand ane sindri gate, at þe palace of amulius 10
 agane ane certane houre. Remus, supportit *wit* na litill
 garnisoun be his gudeschir Nunitor, met romulus at þe samyn
 place at tyme affixt, And be this slicht⁷ slew þare eme
 Amulius. (VI) Numytor, herand þe suddane effray,⁸ said to
 his folkis þat sum Inemyis had Invadit þe toun; And be 15
 þat occasioun gadderit haistely ane strang band of armit men,
 as he wald haue passit to defend the king and palace fra
 Incursioun of all Inemyis; and quhen he was enterit in the
 castell, and saw his nevois eftir þe slauchter returnyng *wit*
 reiosit visage to him, he callit the pepill haistelic to ane 20
 counsale, & began to schaw baith þe cruelte⁹ of his bruthir
 aganis him, and þe mervellus and wounderfull begynnyng of
 his twa nevois; how þai war gottin and nurist, and in quhat
 maner þai war first knawin to him; And eftir this schew þe
 slauchter¹⁰ of þe tyran Amulius, grantand him be oppyn con- 25
 fessioun þe slaare¹¹ þareof. And in the myddis of his orisoun
 p. 3. enterit Romulus & Remus with | ane band of armit men and
 salute thare gudeschir nunitor as king. Than þe remanent
 pepill did salute and ratify him king on þe samyn maner.

¹ þa.² heair.³ newoyð.⁴ serschit finely.⁵ ilk ane.⁶ sell noth.⁷ slyth.⁸ affray.⁹ crewelte.¹⁰ slauther.¹¹ slayare.

How rome was foundate¹; of þe slauchter of remus; (12).
 how cacus was slane be hercules for steling of
 his ky; of þe sacrifice dedicate be evander to þe
 said hercules, and how romulus made lawis to
 5 governe his pepil in Iustice. Ca. iij.

Quhen the crowne of Alba was restorit to Numitor in þis
 maner, Romulus and Remus tuke purpois to edifie ane ciete,
 in þe samyn place quhare þai war cassin to danger and nurist.
 Than war with Romulus and Remus greit confluence baith of
 10 latynis and albanis assemblit togidder,² with mony vthir hirdis
 þare companjeouns.³ All thir pepill vnder ane mynd and
 esperance traistit fermelie the townis of lavyne & alba to be of
 litill estimacioun in respect of þis towne quhilk was to be
 edifyit.⁴ followit be þir slichtis⁵ þe samyn⁶ displeser þat
 15 Numitor þare gudeschir sustenit afore, þat is to say, avarice and
 desire of kingdome. succedit finalie ane schameful debate,
 rasis fra ane richt pure begynnyng; for sen þir brethir war
 twynnys, þe decisioun of þare richtis⁷ mycht nocht follow be re-
 uerence of age; And for thir ressouns⁸ It was statute to explore
 20 and serche the myndis of þare goddis (in quhais tutorie þai placis
 war dedicate) be auguris and divinacioun of foulis, quhilkis of þir
 two brethir sall put name to þis [new] tovne, and reiose⁹ þe
 senjeory of þe pepill þareof in tymes cummyn. Romulus went
 to mont palentyne, and Remus to mont aventyne, to mak þare
 25 templis þareon; and to haue knaulege of þare desiris be au-
 gures & divinatioun of foulis. (VII) Apperit to Remus sex
 grapis afore ony foule apperit to Romulus; and quhen he had
 schawin þe samyn, apperit to Romulus xij¹⁰ grapis. als sone as
 þir brethir had schawin þir augures,¹¹ | every ane of þame war salute p. 4.
 30 king be thare favoraris and freyndis. The freyndis of Remus

¹ fundit.⁴ edyfeit.⁶ sam.⁸ rasoniſſ.¹⁰ twoll.² þe gidder.⁵ þis slychtthis.⁷ rycchtthis.⁹ reois (!).¹¹ augureis.³ compaigneonis.

allegit þat he suld regnne,¹ for he was preferrit to Romulus be
 priorite of tyme, for he saw first [þe] sex grapis. On ² þe tothir
 (13). * side was allegit þat Romulus suld regne ³ be pluralite of nowmer,
 for he saw xij grapis. be thir contenciouns þir brethir raiß Ilk
 day in grete haterent, persewing vthir with maist ⁴ cruelte and 5
 slauchter.⁵ At last þai mett togiddir at ane skarmusche, In
 quhilk Remus alwayis was slane. The opinioun mare vulgare is
 þat Remus, in ⁶ derisioun of his brother, past oure the new wallis
 of þis toun, and was slane þarefore be Romulus, Rageand [In]
 þat tyme in maist Ire,⁷ to certifye þe pepil þat every vthir 10
 persoun þat past oure his wallis suld be slane in þe samyn maner.
 Thus succedit Romulus, but ony [mair] colleig, to þe haill
 empire of þis new toun, and namyt þe samyn ⁸ fra his name
 rome. Sic thingis done, he garnist mont palentyne, quhare he
 was nurist, with strang mvnitioun; syne made sacrifice to þe 15
 greke ⁹ Hercules, in þe samyn gise as þai war ¹⁰ institute be king
 evander þe forsaid king of Archadie; And eftir þat, he made
 sacrifice to þe remanent goddis on the albane wise. Sum men
 sayis þat Hercules, eftir the slauchtir of gereon, draif in thir
 boundis ¹¹ fare tydy ¹² kye of maist plesand bewtie, And, becaus he 20
 was sowpit ¹³ with lang travel, he lay down in ¹⁴ ane halesum and
 plentuous gerß beside the Ryver of tyber, Nocht fer fra the samyn
 place quhare he swam oure þe said Ryver with his beistis, to
 refresch þame with þe battill ¹⁵ gerß þareof. This hercules, eftir
 þat he was fillit with surfett ¹⁶ mete & wynes, fell on ane hevvy ¹⁷ 25
 slepe; And in the mene tyme ane hird of þat cuntre namyt
 Cacus, cruell & richt strang of body, was sa revist ¹⁸ with the
 bewtie of þir kye, þat he pullit ¹⁹ ane certane of þame (quhilkis war
 farest and of maist bewtie) bakwartis be the talis in his cove; ¹⁹
 for gif he had drevin þame to his cove,²⁰ thare futestepis ²¹ 30
 wald haue schewin to hercules to quhat place þai war brocht.

¹ ring.⁷ Iir.¹³ sopit.^{19—19} ane certane off þir² on to.⁸ sam.¹⁴ on.

kye bakuertis quhilk

³ ringne.⁹ grete, A.¹⁵ battall.

waß of farest bewte be

⁴ grit.¹⁰ þa wair.¹⁶ surfett.

þe talis in this coyfe.

⁵ slauchter.¹¹ bonddis.¹⁷ heue.²⁰ coyf.⁶ be.¹² plesand, A.¹⁸ reueist.²¹ futstappis.

Hercules, arelie awalkynnyt on þe nixt morow out of his slepe, eftir p. 15.
 he had vesityt¹ his flok & found ane large parte of þame absent,
 past to þe nixt cove,² to espy gif he could fynd þare ony fute-
 steppis³ of his ky. And becaus he saw þe futesteppis³ fordwart,
 5 apperandly as certane beistis had be cumin⁴ fra þat cove,² he was
 confusit, and nocht knawand in his mynde quhat was to be done,
 And began to drive⁵ away the residew of his beistis fra þat
 noysum pasture At⁶ last, quhen hercules was drivand⁷ þe saidis
 ky by þe *cove,⁸ ane certane of þame lowit,⁹ be desire to haue (14).
 10 þare marrowis.¹⁰ The ky, quhilkis war stollin and Inclusit within
 þe said cove,⁸ lowit⁹ agane on þe samyn maner, and causit
 hercules to returne haistely to þe said cove.⁸ Cacus, seand him
 cum, made him with grete mynassing to defend the said cove,⁸
 and schoutit on þe remanent hirdis & pepill of þat cuntre to assist
 15 to his defence; nochtþeles hercules slew him with his maif.¹¹
 King Evander, fugitive fra peloponeso ane province of grece,¹²
 governit thir boundis in þai dayis, mare be autorite þan ony
 empire; And was haldin in veneracioun for his lettres, quhilkis
 war ane new and vncouth thing amang þe rude and vncrafty
 20 pepill of þat regioun. Bot ȝit he was haldin in more honoure &
 veneracioun amang þame for þe prophecy and divinacioun of his
 moder carpenta, quhom þe pepill held in na litill admiracioun
 afore þe cummyng of Sibilla in Italie. This evander assemblit
 haistelie þe hirdis and pepill of þat regioun, to revenge þe
 25 slauchter of Cacus sa pertlie¹³ committit. Nochtþeles, quhen he
 vnderstude clerelie the maner of his slauchter, with þe hie offence
 and tressoun committit be him, & had vesityt þe habit, forme,
 and contenance of hercules, apperand of mare devyne and
 hevinlie stature þan was sene with erdlie¹⁴ creaturis, he began to
 30 demand him quhat he was. Alsone¹⁵ as he was aduertist of his
 name, his fader and cuntre, he fell on kneis and said, "haill¹⁶
 hercules, son of Iupiter. my moder | carpenta, the trew Inter- p. 16.

¹ wysyit.⁵ dryfe.⁹ rowtit.¹³ peirtlye.² cove.⁶ And, A.¹⁰ marrouf.¹⁴ erthilie.³ futestappis.⁷ dryfand.¹¹ mef.¹⁵ Alf sone.⁴ cumand.⁸ coyf.¹² grit (!).¹⁶ hale.

pretour of divyne mysteriis, revelit to me þat þow suld eik þe
 nowmer¹ of goddis, and schew þat here sall be dedicate to the
 ane altar, quhilk sum tyme þe maist riche pepil in erde sal haue
 in reuerence, makand on It ȝerelie sacrifice to þi honoure and
 loving." als sone as þis altare was erekkit and dedicate on þis 5
 wise,² hercules embrasit Evander, and said he accepit³ þe werdis,
 & suld fulfill all destanyis⁴ as his moder carpenta devinit.⁵
 And Incontinent þe maist excellent & lusty kow, chosin amang
 þe residewe of his flok, was slane in sacrifice to hercules; and to
 mak þe sacrifice war brocht two pepil, þat ane [namit] poticianis 10
 and þis vthir pinarianis, discending of twa maist riche & Illuster
 (15). houff⁶ of þat *cuntre. It happynnyt so⁷ þat þir poticianis war
 present & reddy wíth all cerymonis effering⁸ to þe sacrifice, and
 quhen þai had etin⁹ all þe bowellis of þis sacrifice, comperit the
 pinarianis to eit of þe remanent mete þareof; And for þat cauß 15
¹⁰ It was commandit be hercules,¹⁰ sa lang as þe pinarianis war on
 life, nane of þame nor þare lynnage suld ete of þe solemne¹¹
 bowellis of ony sacrifice. The poticianis, lernit to mak sacri-
 fice in þis wise be king Evander, war mony ȝeris eftir maist happy
 bischoppis, quhill at [þe] last þe solemne¹² office pertenyng to 20
 þare lynnage was gevin to public *servandis*, Throw quhilk al
 þe lynnage of poticianis sone eftir failȝete.¹³ Thir sacrificis onely
 ressaut Romulus, of all þe vtheris solemniteis quhilkis war þat
 tyme accustomyt¹⁴ in þe warld. This Romulus, clothit wíth
 vertew of Immortalite, to quhilk his werdis led him, was þe 25
 favorare (VIII) of divyne *seruice* lauchfully done, And callit þe
 citeȝanis¹⁵ of his new ciete to ane counsale, And gaif to þame
 mony halesum and proffittabil constitucions, to mak þame leif
 & Increß togiddir¹⁶ vnder his lawis and Justice. Attoure¹⁷
 becauß he knewe þe more venerabill, þe more princely, þat he 30
 behad him in his dignite riall, the mor his lawis and constitu-
 cions wald be dred and estemyt¹⁸ be rude and sympill¹⁹ pepill,

¹ nomer.⁶ housis.¹¹ solempt.¹⁶ pegiddir.² on his vyf (!).⁷ sua.¹² solemnit.¹⁷ Atour.³ exceppit (!).⁸ affering.¹³ failȝit.¹⁸ estimit.⁴ destyneis.⁹ eittin.¹⁴ acustomit.¹⁹ sempill.⁵ dewisit.^{10—10} Hercules commandit.¹⁵ ceiteȝanis.

Tharefore he | made him in all his abulzementis¹ mair honest p. 17.
 þan afore ; and first he gart xij lictoris, armyt *witʰ* xij brade axis,
 pas afore him quhare he ʒede, baith in signe of his divyne hon-
 ouris & punytion of transgressouris. Sum allegis he tuke thir
 5 xij axis in honoure of the xij grapis, quhilkis apperit to him in
 mont palentyne, be þare divinacioun schew þat he suld regne
 and gif name to this new ciete ; ʒit It plesis me to applaud erare
 to þe opinioun of þame, quhilkis haldis þat romulus tuke þir xij
 axis be Imitatioun of þe Ethruschis, þare nixt nychtbouris,
 10 quhilkis had certane apparatouris and men of armes reddy for-
 nent all aventuris þat mycht occur. ffor be exempill of þir
 Ethruschis þe sadill currill and þe pretext govne, with mony vthir
 ornamentis quhilkis war haldin in þai dayis In signe of honoure,
 war brocht vp in rome. The ethruschis had xij *seriandis* armit
 15 *witʰ* xij axis, becaus þai had vnder þare senzeorie xij sindri tribus
 & pepill, of quhilkis euery ane send ane * man armit *witʰ* ane (16).
 ax to þe said Ethruschis, quhen þare king was to be chosin. In

¹ Here begins p. 17 of the *Boyndlie MS.*; this and the following quair
 are written by the second scribe, whose orthography is very close
 20 to that of the *Advocates' MS.*, though with more contractions: a
 specimen is subjoined.

And first gart xij littoris, armyt w^t xij braid axis, paß afore him
 quhair he ʒeid, baith in signe of his devyne honouris and pvnitoun
 of transgressouris. Sum allegis he tuke þe xij axis in honour of þe
 25 xij grapis, quhilkis appering to him in mont palentyne be þir divina-
 tioun schew þat he suld regne and gif name till his new ciete ; ʒit it
 plesis me to applaude erar to þe opinioun of þame quhilkis haldis
 þat romulus tuke þe xij axis be Imitatioun of þir nixt nychtbouris,
 quhilkis had certane apparatouris and men of armys reddy for-
 30 nent all aventuris þat mycht occur. ffor be exempill of þir ethruschis þe
 sadill currill and þe pretext govne, *witʰ* mony vþer ornamentis
 (quhilkis wer haldin in þi dayis in signe of honour), wer brocht vp in
 Rome. The ethruschis had xij *seriandis* armyt with xij axis, becaus
 þai had vnder þair senzeorie xij sindry tribis and pepill, off quhilkis
 35 euery ane send ane man armyt *witʰ* ane ax to þe said ethruscis, quhen
 þair king wes to be chosin. In þe mene tyme, þe romanis Incestit

¹ abulzementis.

þe menetyme the romanis increscit Ilk day in new mvnitioun,
 bringand new rowmes vnder þare dominion, and dilating þe
 boundis of þare toun *with* grete magnificence, traisting be þare
 esperance mare nowmer of pepill to cum haistelie to þare toun
 þan was present for þe tyme. Attoure, þat the renowne and 5
 magnificence of þare toun suld *nocht* appere in vane, be counsell
 of aigit pepill (sic as war begynnaris of new cieteis, fenȝeing þare
 dochteris gottin on þe erde) to bring ane multitude of vile and
 obscure pepill to Inhabit and fill þare ciete, Thay proclamit ane
 generall refuge within þare ciete. þis refuge was callit Asilum, 10
 circulit and hedgit with thik breris on euery side, betuix twa
 woddis *within* þe said toun; And schortlie, throw þe generall
 proclamatioun, mony and diuers cumpanyis of pepill liand þare
 p. 18. about, richt desirus of new | changis, fremen and *servandis* but
 ony difference fled to þe said refuge. This was the first way 15
 þat made þe ciete of rome strang & pussant be multitude of
 pepill. Romulus, na thing penitent of haisty mvnicioun and
 grete nowmer of pepil Rising to his new ciete, chesit ane hun-
 dreth men of maist wisdom and age to be senatouris, To þat fyne
 þat his new ciete *mycht* rise equalie in wisdom and pussance. 20

Ilk day in new mvnitioun, bringand new rowmes vnder þair domin-
 ion, and dilating the boundis of þair toun *with* greit magnificence,
 traisting be þair esperance mair novmer of pepill to cum haistelie to
 þair toun þan was *present* for þe tyme. Attour, þat þe Renoun and
 magnificence of þair ton suld *nocht* appere in vane, be counsale of 25
 agit pepill (sis [*sic*] as war begynnaris of new cieteis fenȝeing þair
 dochteris gottin on þe erd) to bring ane multitude of vile and obscure
 pepill to Inhabit and fyll *þair* ciete, Thay proclamit ane generall
 Refuge *within* þair ciete. þis refuge was callit asilum, circulit and
 hegit *with* thyk breris on *euery* syde betuix twa woddis *within* þe said 30
 toun. And schortlie throw þe generall proclamatioun mony and
 diuers cumpanyes of pepill liand *þair*about, *rycht* desyrus of new
 changis, fremen and *servandis* but ony difference fled to þe said
 refuge. This wes þe first way þat made þe ciete of rome strang and
 pussant be multitude of pepill. romulus, na thing penitent of 35
 haisty mvnitioun and grete novmer of pepill Rysing to his new ciete,
 chesit ane hundreth men of maist wisdom and age to be senatouris,
 to þat fyne þat his new ciete *mycht* ryse equalie in wisdom and

The caus of þis nowmer of senatouris was, þat he tho~~cht~~ þe same sufficient (as he belevit) to decide all difficulte of quhatsumeuer materis my~~cht~~ occur to his pepil, or ellis becaus he could no~~cht~~ fynd in that tyme ma persouns wourthy to reioi~~ß~~ þe said auctor-
 5 ite. Thir senatouris war callit Patres, þat Is to say, þe faderis of the toun, be ressoun of þare reuerence and honoure, and þe barnis discending of þare blude war callit patricii.

How the romanis send þare legatis, desiring affinite (17).
 and mariage of þare nyctbouris; of þe solemne
 10 play Institute be Romulus, and how he revist þe madynmys & virginis of his nyctbouris; of þe weris rising þarethrow, & of his sindri victoryis.

Ca. iiij.

(IX) Now was þe pepill and power of Rome sa strang in euery sorte, þat It was equale in glore of armes to ony toun
 15 appocheand; 3it þe multitude of pepill þareof mycht no~~cht~~ endure abone þe age of man, ffor þai had nothir¹ barnis, nor 3it had mariage of þare nyctbouris to multiply þare successioun. Than Romulus, be counsell of þe agit faderis, send legatis to his nyctbouris, desiring to haue societe & mariage of þame to
 20 his new pepill, And praying þame to contempe² no~~cht~~ his desiris, sen citeis (as euery vthir thinges) Rysis of small begynnynge. Attoure þai haue conquest grete Riches & renoun daly³ sen

pussance. The caus of þis nowmer of senatouris wes þat he tho~~cht~~ þe same sufficience (as he belevit) to decide all difficulte Of quhat
 25 sumeuer materis mycht occurre to his pepill, Or ellis becaus he culd no~~cht~~ fynd in þat tyme may personis worthy to reioi~~ß~~ þe said autorite, thir senatours wer callit patres, þat Is to say, þe faderis of þe toun, be resoun of þare Reuerance and honou~~r~~, and þe barnis discending of þair blud war callit patricij.

¹ nowthir.

² contemne.

³ dailie.

þe goddis began to supporte þame be þare awne vertew,
 throw quhilk þare nychtbouris mycht sufficientlie vndirstand, þat
 nowthir vertew nor favour of goddis apperit to fail to Romanis
 In tymes following. fforthir, sen þare nychtbouris war bot
 men, prayit þame to disdenze *nocht* to haue societe & com- 5
 mixtioun of blude with pepill als gude as þame self. This
 legacioun was contempnit and evil herd in euery partis, for
 all pepil approcheand towart þame *nocht* onely¹ refusit to haue
 confederacioun or alliance with romanis, bot als dred þat þis
 new ciete, Rysing haistelie within the myddis of þare rowmes, 10
 be multitude and confluence of pepil suld finalie succede to
 þe grete damage baith of þame self and þare posterite. The
 legatis returnit *wit* repulß to Rome, eftir that sindri pepill
 had demandit þame, to quhat purpois or fyne Romulus pro-
 clamit ane generale refuge to women ²alßwele as to men, 15
 thinkand þarefore þe women (quhilk war fled to þe said refuge)
 (18). mycht be sufficient enewch² for his societe. *The romanis
 war sa hie commovit at þis repulß, þat but ony dout þai had
 rvn all to harnes, to haue bene revengit in maist furie on þare
 nychtbouris, gif Romulus had bene Respondent to þare vndantit 20
 furie.³ *Nocht*þeles Romulus, to fynd ane tyme and place mare
 ganand to satisfy⁴ þare desiris, dissimulit þe Indignacioun of
 his mynde, And be his crafty Industry proclamyt ane solempne⁵
 play, callit in þai dayis consualia, quhilkis war dedicate In
 honoure of Neptunus chevelrier. Sone eftir, he commandit 25
 generall edictis & proclamacioun to be maid in all partis, to
 aduertis⁶ his nychtbouris þareof. The romanis dressit furth
 þis play In the maist solempne⁵ maner þai culd or mycht, to
 mak It þe more sichty and gloriou to the pepill. Mony vncouth
 and strange pepill assemblit to þis conuencioun, Na les desirus⁷ 30
 to vesy þis new toun þan to se þis play, especialie þe pepill
 quhilkis war nerrest nychtbouris, as Cenynanis custumanis &

¹ only.²⁻³ *Strangely transposed in B., thus, "quhilkis wer fled to þe said refuge | mycht þairfor þe women als weill as to men thankand | be sufficient aneuch."*² purpois.⁴ satisfy.⁵ solempne.⁶ aduertice.⁷ desiris.

antempnatis; And beside þir convenit ane huge now|mer of p. 20.
 Sabinis with þare wyiffis, barnis, & *servandis*, quhilkis war all
 plesandlie lugit and Intertenit within þe said toвне. Thir
 pepill, eftir þai had vesyit the situacioun, wallis, and policyis¹
 5 of this new toun, had grete admiracioun þat þe romanis war
cummyn sa haistelie to grete pussance. At last, quhen þe
 heure of play was *cummyn*, and þe pepil maist ernstlie gevand
 þare ene to þe contemplacioun thareof, raiffis ane suddane effray
 be slicht & crafty Industry. Incontinent, be sound of trumpet
 10 (as was devisit), all þe 3ounge men of þe toun, armit in fere of
 were, Ran throw þe stretis, Revisand the virginis and madynnys
 þat come to þis play. The maist parte of þame be chance
 fell in pray to þare takaris; Ilk man reiosit² hir þat he gatt;
 vtheris of maist excellent and passing bewtie war deliverit to
 15 þe maist nobil and principal faderis of þe ciete. It is said
 þat þare was ane lusty virgine³ (quhais bewtie was superlative
 abone all þe laif) revest at þis tyme be þe garde of ane capitane
 namyt Thalasso, And quhen þis gard was demandit be sindri
 persouns, quhom to þai wold haue þis virgine,⁴ þai ansuerit
 20 ay, "to Thalasso." And þarefore It come in vse mony 3eris
 eftir, þat þe pepill cryit ay, "Thalasso" at euery feist and
 solempnite of new mariage. quhen þe play was⁵ Interruppit
 be þis vncouth effray, all þe parentis of þir revist virginis⁶ fled
 with drery contenance out of *Rome, Sum tymes accusand (19).
 25 þe romanis for breking of þare alliance and violacioun of þare
 hospitalite, And sum tymes makand þare Invocatioun to þe
 goddis, to quhais solempne feistis and playis þai, *cummand*
 vnder assurance and faith, war tressonably⁷ dissaut. Attoure,
 þir revist virginis had na leß Indignacioun in þare myndis
 30 for þe offence *committit* aganis þame þan had þare sorou-
 full parentis, | for þai war all disparit but ony esperance of p. 21.
 relefe. Nochtpeles, Romulus vesyit þame with consolacioun,
 Saying þe offence maid aganis þame procedit only be proude
 arrogance of þare parentis, Sen þai denyit to haue ony societe

¹ p[o]lecijs.² virgen.⁵ wes, B.; war, A.⁷ tresonabillie.² reiosing.⁴ wirgyne.⁶ wirgynis.

p. 24

7 pvnice.

brym haterent (as þe Cenijnanis had) to revenge this offence,
 And þarefore þe foresaidis Cenijnanis, Impacient of more delay,
 come but ony supporte of þare *nychtbouris* with suddane In-
 cursioun in þe romane landis. *Nocht*þeles, Romulus met þame
 5 quhare þai war skatterit at þare spuleȝe and direptioun of þe
 cuntre, And be small skarmussing¹ gart þame haue knaulage,
 þat Ire is vane but strenth. In þis conflict þe Cenynanis war
 vincust, and þare king Acron chasit and put to flicht, On
 quham Romulus followit sa fereslie, þat he spuleȝit him baith
 10 of his riche armoure and life attanis, And within þe effray of
 his slauchter come *witȝ* suddane Irruptioun on his toun,² and
 tuke þe samyȝ with small contradictioun; Syne with his victorius
 armye returnit to rome, Na leß vailȝeant and magnificent prince³
 than gloriuſ schewar⁴ of his dedis. Romulus eftir þis Victorie
 15 colleckit the riche armour⁵ and spuleȝe of King Acron in ane
 courtlie veschell namyt feretrum, and ascendit *witȝ* þe said
 spuleȝe in the toure of capitoll, And quhen he had hung vp
 þe said spuleȝe⁶ and armoure apoun ane auld aik, quhilk was
 haldin in thay dayis in grete veneracioun amang þe hirdis of
 20 þat regioun, he compasit ane certane boundis, In þe quhilk he
 prōmittit to edifie ane tempil In þe honoure of Jupiter, and
 decorit þis god *witȝ* new surname, Saying "O Jupiter feretri,
 I King | Romulus, triumphand here with victorie abone myne p. 23.
 Inemyis, offeris now þir solempne spuleȝeis & armour to þi
 25 honoure and loving, And dedicatis here ane tempill to þe, in
 þe samyn boundis quhilkis I haue latelie compasit in my
 mynde, To þat fyne þat all my posterite and kingis eftir me
 succeeding, in exampill and Imitacioun of me, sall offer per-
 petualie in þis tempill þe riche spuleȝeis of kingis and dukis
 30 vincust be þame in bataill." This was þe begynnyng of þe
 first tempill þat was dedicate in Rome. sa plesit þe goddis
 þat nouthur was the behecht of Romulus, þe first⁷ beginnare
 of þis tempill, in vane, be quhilkis his pos*terite was thrillit (21).
 to offer⁸ in It þe spuleȝeis of þare vincust Innemyis; Nor ȝit

¹ scarmusching.³ prence.⁵ army, *A.*⁷ frist.² ton.⁴ schawar.⁶ saidis spulȝeis.⁸ offare.

was þe renoun þareof oure coæmoun or Vulgare, Howbeit his
 vote succedit to þe pepill; as he desirȳt, ffor amang sa mony
 ȝeris and batellis following (sa seildin¹ was þe gloure of þat
 honoure) twa spulȝeis of vincust pepill eftir Romulus alanerlie
 war offerit in þe said tempill. (XI) quhill sic thingis was done 5
 be romanis, þe antempnatis rasiȝt þare army in maist werelie
 ordinance, and made ane suddane Incursioun in þe romane landis,
 specially in sic partis quhare maist desertis and wildernes
 occurrit. Aganis quham was send haistelie out of Rome ane
 legioun of feirs pepill, and opprest þame with small difficulte, 10
 quhare þai war cassin but array at þare spuleȝe, and tuke þare
 toun. Than Hirsilia, þe spous of Romulus, at þe request of
 þir revist ladyis, past to hir said husband (þan reiosing with
 doubill² victoryis abone his Inemyis), and prayit him to perdoun
 & forgeif þare parentis, and ressaue þame within his ciȝete; ffor 15
 be concorde his pepill mycht sone Incresß in grete pussance.
 Thir desiris war plesandlie grantit. Romulus eftir þis victorie
 displayit his baner aganis þe Crustumanis, quhilkis on þe samyȝ
 maner war Invading þe Romane landis; And becauß þare curage
 was dei[e]ckit be recent discomfitoure fallin to þare freyndis 20
 p. 24. afore rehersit, ³ þai war the | sonar vincust. quhen thir thre
 pepill war dantit in þis maner,³ Romulus send new colonyis
 out of rome to Inhabit the townis of thir vincust pepil. Mony
 men war fund at þis tyme in rome quhilkis gaif þare names in
 writt, and war content to be transportit to þe townis of Crustu- 25
 manis for þe grete fertilite of þare landis. Than mony of þe
 parentis and freyndis of þir revist virginis left þare native landis
 and townis, and come to remane & duell in Rome.

¹ seyndill.² duble.³—³ om.

How þe sabynis Invadit þe romanis with grete (22).
 slichtis, and how þai tuke the toure of Capitoll,
 & slew Tarpea, the dochter of spureus Tarpeyus
 capitane þareof. Off þe scharpe weris con-
 5 tinewiŋg betuix Romanis & Sabinis, & how þai
 war aggreit finalie be Interventioun of sabyne
 wemen. Ca. v°.

The last bataill þat Romulus had aganis his nychtbouris,
 for revessing of þir virginis afore rehersit, was aganis þe
 10 Sabinis, quhilk batall was in sa fer mare cruell þan ony of
 þe batellis precedent, þat It was nocht led be avarice and
 haterent, bot with sic Ingyne and craft of chevelrie, þat þai
 denuncit na were to romanis quhil þai war cummyn with
 arrayit bataill in þare landis. Attoure, þai supportit þare
 15 prudence be subtell & tressonabil slichtis, In þis maner.
 Spureus tarpeyus was capitane of þe Capitoll, quhais dochter
 tarpea¹ was corruppit be Tacijs king of Sabinis with ane
 sovme of gold to ressaue ane buschment of Sabinis armit in
 þare best awise within þe said toure of Capitoll. This
 20 tarpea happynnyt be aventure to pas furth of þe toure² fore-
 said in ane solempne day, to bring wattir to ane sacrifice,
 And in þe menetye þe Sabinis (as scho promittit) gat
 entreß in þe said toure, and slew hir cruelly to hir rewarde, p. 25.
 that þis castell suld appere tane erare be violence þan ony
 25 tressoun; Or ellis to gif ane notabil exempill in tymes cum-
 yng þat nowthir faith band nor promiss³ suld be observate
 to ane tratoure. Vtheris allegis þat þe Sabinis had goldin
 brochis of grete wecht apoun þare left arme, with mony
 goldin ringis sett with precius stanis, and promittit to gif to
 30 þis madin Tarpea all þe riches on þare left armes, gif scho
 wald rander to þame þe castell; And quhen þai war ressauit
 in þe samyn, to fulfil þare promiss³ þai kest at hir al þare

¹ torpea, A.² towr of capitoll.³ promess.

targis quhilkis þai bure on þare left armes, and smorit hir
 (23) þarewith. Vtheris allegis þat quhen * scho promittit to rander
 to þame þe said toun,¹ Scho desirit be hir condicioun to
 haue nocht bot þare targis, to þat purpois þat þai mycht
 haue bene þe more facill pray to romanis, And becaus þai 5
 fand hir fraudefull þai slew hir be hir awne tressoun. (XII)
 All wayis þe sabynis kepit þe toure of capitoll, And on þe
 nixt day the Oist of romanis stude arrayit betuix mont palen-
 tyne and mont Capitolyne; and na sonare war þir sabinis
 cummyn with arrayit batall to þe planis, bot alsone war þe 10
 romanis arrayit on þe hill fornence þame, rageand in maist
 haterent be desire to recouer þare toure fra handis of sabinis.
 Baith þe princis² of þare armyis war richt desirus to haue
 bataill. Metius Cursius was gouernoure of þe sabinis, and
 hostius hostilius gouernoure of romanis. This hostilius be 15
 feirþ curage of³ singulare manhede debatit þe romane armye
 in ane maist doutsum & dangerus place, and was finalie
 slane; throw quhais slauchter þe romanis began to fle & war
 drevin with continuall chace, quhil þai come to þe anciant
 portis of þe palice. Romulus, drevin abak on þis maner be 20
 preiþ of discomfist and fleand pepill, rasit vp his armoure to
 p. 26. þe hevin, & said; "O Iupiter,⁴ þow | knawis how I, be augurie
 and divinacioun of þi foulis, began here in mont palantyne
 the first foundament of Rome. The Sabinis has tane my
 castell be tressoun, And Intendis (quhen þai haue conquest 25
 þis vale) to procede forthir on ws in oure maist Inwart
 boundis. Bot, O þow Iupiter, the fader of goddis and men,
 repreß þe furye of our Inemyis, and remove þis schameful
 terroure of fleing fra my pepill. And here I avow to dedi-
 cate ane tempill to þe, Iupiter Stator, to remane in memorie 30
 to oure posterite þat my citee was sauffit⁵ be þi helpe."
 quhen he had said thir wourdis (as his prayeris had bene
 weil herde with Iupiter) he cryit with schil voce, "O
 Romanis, þe maist hie, maist riche and pussant Iupiter com-
 mandis þow to resist þoure Inemyis, and to renewe batall." 35

¹ toure.² prences.³ and.⁴ Iubiter.⁵ saiffit.

Incontinent all þe army of romanis stude but ony fleing, as þai had bene commandit be sum hevinlie voce, And Romulus went haistelie to þe formest bront¹ of the army to bring þame to new arraye. In þe menetye, metius cursius, quhilk
 5 had² latelie Ischit * fra þe capitoll, eftir þat he had³ drevin (24). and put þe romanis ane⁴ grete space abak, come cryand nocht fer fra þe portis of þe palice: "Now we haue vincust þe fals and tressonabil lugearis, and ourethrawin oure effemynate Inemyis. now may oure febil⁵ Invasouris vnderstand,
 10 how brade defference is betuix fechting with⁶ forcy campious and reuissing of febill⁵ virginis." quhil metius was pransand throw þe feild with þir and siclike glorius wourdis, Romulus come on him haistelie with ane knott of feirß knichtis. This metius facht⁶ þis tyme in ane plane & evin place, throw
 15 quhilk þir feirß knichtis þan being with⁶ Romulus mycht Invaid him þe bettir on euery side, And þarefore he was put þe more haistelie to flicht. On quham the ro[manis followit in grete hatrent, and tuke sic curage be audicite and hortatioun of romulus þat þai put mony in þe sabynis to discomfitour.
 20 Metius, abasit be noyß of þe romane hoist fast following on his bak, wes brocht out of þe feild on ane astonist⁷ horß to ane marreß. The residew of sabynis, traisting þair prince slane, gaif bakkis, bot metius be haisty cuming of freindis to his support wes sauffit; & nochtwithstanding þis victorie, þe
 25 sabynis & romanis invadit vþir with⁶ new battall in þe vaill afore rehersit⁸ betuix mont capitolyne and mont palentyne, bot þe romanis apperit to haue þe advantage. (XIII) Incontinent all the sabyne ladyis (quhais revising wes þe onlie occasioun | of þis weris) come in dolorus array, soupit in
 30 sorrow, with þair hare fallin oure þair eyne, and but ony feir of deith ruschit in betuix baith þe armyis, nochtwithstanding þe arrowis and dartis⁹ fleand in maner of hail on euery side; & be preiß of þair thortwart cuming devidit & put sindry þe armit¹⁰ oistis, severing þair husbandis fra þair faderis, &

Boyndlie
MS., p.
26.

Boyndlie
MS., p.
27.

¹ brount.

² was, *A.*

³ fabill.

⁴ astorist, *MS.*

⁵ daritis, *MS.*

⁶ wes.

⁷ a.

⁸ faucht.

⁹ rechersit, *MS.*

¹⁰ arrowit, *MS.*

prayit þaim (sen þai wer alliat be mariage & commixtioun of blude)¹ . . and slauchter, for þai wer faderis & maichis, sonis & nevois. "gif 3e be penitent & forthinkis þe affinite new contrakkit amang 3ow" (said þir sabynis) "turne all 3our Ire & Indignatioun on ws. we ar þe onlie cauß of 3our 5 battall. we are þe onlie occasioun of þis lamentabill slauchter & woundis continewing betuix 3ow, our husbandis & faderis. It wer better to ws to de now heir amang 3our handis þan to leif wedois, or be desolate of athir of 3ow." þis wncouth sic[ht] movit noch allanerlie þe commonis bot als þe nobillis 10 of baitis þe armes with sa petuus commiseratioun, þat baitis þe hostis wer strikin² dvm, but ony noyß or quhispering efter following. þan þe capitanis of athir side began to treit concord, & noch allanerlie maid gud peace, bot als maid ane ciete of two, that is to say, baitis þe sabynis and romanis 15 sall leif in tymes cuning in rome vnder ane empire and kingdome. be þis concord þe ciete of rome wes dowblit baitis in power and pepill; 3it þe romanis, to mak þaim sum part different fra þe sabynis, namit þaim self quiritis, þat is to say, beraris of dartis. in remembrece of þe battall, þe 20 marreß (quhare metius cursius eschapit with his horß, eschewing þe fure of romanis) wes callit þe loch of Cursius.

How Romulus diuidit his realme in courtis and centuris; how taciüs king of sabynis wes slane be laurentinis³ for denying of Iustice; how romu- 25 lus be craft of chevelry discomfist þe fydenntis, & wan þair toun fidenä be suddand Irruption.
Ca. vj.

Boyndlie
MS., p.
28.

| Eftir this sorowfull battall followit haistelie maist plesand concord, throw quhilk þe sabyne ladyis wer mair tenderlie 30

¹ No break in MS.

² stirkin, MS.

³ laurentius, MS.

tretit *with* þair husbandis and parentis þan afore, and
 specialie be romulus. sone eftir romulus dividit his pepill
 in sindry courtis & tribus, & namit Ilk court *with* þe sur-
 name¹ of ane of þir sabyne ladyis, specialie of sic wemen as
 5 wer of maist nobill lynage and blud; and ȝit it is [nocht]
 schawin of quhat surname¹ þir ladyis war quhilkis gaif names
 to þair courtis, nor ȝit schawin gif þair wes mair nowmer of
 þame þan thretty, or gif þai wer chosyn for þe reuerence of
 þair age or dignite, or gif þai wer chosin allanerlie be cavell
 10 to gif names to þe said thretty courtis. þe samyn tyme wes
 ordanit þe centuries of horsmen in rome. þe] first centurie p. 27.
 of þir horßmen war namyt Ramnenses fra Romulus; The
 secund Ticienses fra tacijs; and þe thrid war namyt luceres,
 of quhilk þe cauß and resoun is vncertane. The kingdome
 15 of rome stude mony ȝeris eftir nocht onelie commoun to
 romanis and sabinis, bot als stude vndir þe sikkir pece &
 concorde of two kingis, þat is to say the king of romanis and
 þe king of sabyinis. (XIV) It happynnyt þat *within* schort
 tyme eftir, certane freyndis and kynnysmen of king Tacijs
 20 hurte and straik cruelly þe legatis of laurentinis, and quhen
 þe laurentinis complenit to Tacijs of þir² Iniuris done to þir
 oratouris & legatis in violacioun of þe law of pepill, The said
 Tacijs, blyndit *with* favoure and requeist³ of * his freindis (25).
 denyit Iustice to þe laurentinis; throw quhilk he gaif occa-
 25 sioun to þir laurentinis to Invaide him with þe samyn
 punycioun þat his freyndis Iustlie deseruit. Schort dayis
 following king Tacijs past to lavyne to haue maid ane
 solempne sacrifice in þe⁴ honoure of his goddis, quhare he
 be suddane effray devisit for þe nanys was slane. It is said
 30 þat Romulus was nocht sa commovit (as þe cryme requirit)
 at þis slauchter, owthir becaus the empire of kingdomes is
 nocht sociabil nor pacient of fallowschip, Or ellis he thoȝt
 king Tacijs for þe repulß of Iustice deseruit weil his deith.
 In quhatsumuir way It was, treuth Is þat Romulus persewit
 35 nocht þe slaaris of Tacijs with displeßer,⁵ ȝit þat þe

¹ surance, *MS.*² he.³ request.⁴ his, *A.*⁵ displeseir.

- slauchter of tacijs, & þe offence maid to þir legatis, mycht
 be purgit be dew sacrifice, he renewit pece betuix lavyne &
 Rome, quhilk mony ȝeris eftir continewit, how beit the samyn
 was nochȝt traistit. Eftir þis followit ane vthir batall be nere
 nychtbouris almaist within þe portis of rome. The fydenatis, 5
 seand þe romanis Increß beside þame with oure grete domin-
 ioun & richeß, thocht na thing sa gude as to Invaid þame
 afore þai come to sic felicite as haistelie apperit to þame,
 p. 28. and send ane army of ferß & rank weremen | with haisty
 Incursioun in þe romane landis; and be þe samyn waistit 10
 and heryit all þe boundis of romanis betuix fidena and
 Rome. And becaus þe Rivere of tyber severit þame fra þe
 romane landis on þare richt handis, þai turnit þame on þare
 wrang¹ handis, and ran with feirß Incursiouns throw þe
 samyn, to þe huge terroure and spuleȝe of þe pepill þareof. 15
 The noyis² & rumoure of þir Incursiouns was brocht haistelie
 to rome. Romulus seing þis outrage mycht suffir na delatioun
 (sen It was sa nere approcheand to þe wallis and portis of
 þe town) Rasit his army and sat doun with his tentis within
 j^m paß to fidena. and first he left be craft of chevelrie ane 20
 buschment of weremen to kepe þe saidis tentis. he went
 fordwart with þe residew of his armye, and in þe mene tyme
 he hid ane vthir buschment of his weremen, in ane myrk
 and obscure place amang þe scroggis of thik rammell of þe
 wod approcheand, þat þai mycht ly in wate to Invaid þare 25
 (26). Inemyis quhen þai saw occasioun. *Sic thingis done with
 maist prudence, Romulus went fordwart with þe remanent
 army, baith on fute & horß, and come with sic fere and
 mynassing to þe portis of fidena, þat he gaif occasioun to þe
 cietezanis þareof to Ische out of þe toun. Nochȝtpeles, þe 30
 cumpany of horßmen þat come with romulus was Impedi-
 ment, þat he mycht nochȝt dissimill his fleing sa weil as he
 desirit. At last quhen Romulus apperit doutsum in his
 mynde quhiddor he wald fle or persevere in obstinate bar-
 gane,³ he happynnyt to paß sum part bakwart with his 35

¹ warng.² noyß.³ bergan.

astonist cumpany of horßmen, and in þe mene tyme þe
 cietezanis Ischit all atanis out of þare portis, and followit
 with grete furie on þe romanis, quhil þai war drevin to þe
 samyn place quhare þe buschement was laid in wate, hid
 5 amang þe ram mell as said Is. Incontinent þe buschment |
 foresaid come thortoure þare gate to gif þame batall And in p. 29.
 þe sam¹ tyme þe buschement of romanis, quhilkis war left
 with þe tentis and paljouns,² began to mustour and display
 þare banaris, Throw quhilk þe fidenatis war sa astonist, þat or
 10 romulus & his folkis mycht turn þare facis [fra þair fleing] al
 þe fidenatis war fleand with maist diligence to þe toun: bot
 3it þai mycht nocht deliver þame self fra þe danger of þare
 Inemyis, for Romulus followit sa fast with ythand slauchter on
 þare bakkis, þat he come with suddane Irruption within þe
 15 tovn or þe citezanis þareof mycht cloiß þe portis.

* How þe Veanis war discomfist, & tuke þareftir (27).
 j^e³ 3eris pece with romanis; Of þe deith &
 louing of romulus; how Iulius proculius mesit
 þe Indignacioun of þe commouns anentis⁴ þe
 20 faderis & senatouris of rome, And how euery
 ane of þe said faderis rang þare courß about.

Ca. vij.

(XV) The Veanis, provokit to hie displeßer⁵ for þe harmes
 and grete infelicitieis latelie fallin to þe fidenatis, þare tendir
 freyndis and nyctbouris, (for baith þe Veanis & fidenatis war
 25 discendit of the lynnage of þe Ethruschis) come with terribil
 and suddane Incursioun in þe romane landis, Invading þe samyn
 mare be rubbery þan ony ordoure of chevelrie, becaus þai
 thocht þe romanis war Invasouris of þare nyctbouris but ony

¹ meyne.

² palæonis.

³ ane hundreth.

⁴ fornice.

⁵ displetere.

ressoun or richt of armes. And sa þir Veanis, but ony stenting
of palzouns in the campis, and *nocht* abiding þe *cuming* of þare
Inemyis, Returnyt *with* ane huge pray of men and gudis to
þare toun of Veos. On þe tothir side Romulus come with ane
haisty armye (out of þe toun) and becaus he fand *nocht* his 5
Inemyis afore him in þe campis, he determit to seik þame
with extreme *Ieperdy*¹ and chance of armes; Syne past oure
tyber. The Veanis, aduertist of his ordinance afore he war
campit or *cummyn* to þare toun, Ischit out of all partis, *with*
purpois to debate þare actioun and mater erare be chance 10
p. 30. of batell þan to be Inclusit, havand na | *esperance* of debate
bot onlie in þe *mvnicioun* of þare wallis. Romulus ȝit havand
na supporte, bot alanerly of þe agit and maist exercit campiouns
of Rome, put þame to flicht and persewit þame eftir þis dis-
comfitoure, quhil þai war ressett within the portis and wallis of 15
þare toun. And becaus þare toun was strang, als weill be wallis
(28). as situacion þareof, he persewit þe samyn na * forther. Syne
in his returnyng in ² rome, he waistit and spuleȝeit all the landis
of Veanis, mare to revenge the haitrent of his mynde þan
ony desire of pray. The Veanis, brokin na les with þir harmes 20
þan greter³ afflictioun had fallin⁴ to þame, send þare oratouris
to rome desiring pece for ane hundreth ȝeris. Romulus, to
repreß þare Insolence in tymes *cuming*, confiskit⁵ ane large
parte of þare landis, & gaif þame pece for ane hundreth ȝeris.
Thir war þe nobill and Illustir dedis of Romulus during his 25
empire baith in were & pece, Off quhilkis þare may na
things be found vnsemand to his divyne lynnage nor to his
Immortalite eftir deith. Was *nocht* his curage gevin to recovir
his realme, and to restore his *gudeschir* Munitor to his kyndelie
heretage? Was *nocht* his mynde gevin to found and big ane 30
nobill ciete, & to stabil the samyn als wele in pece as were?
ffor certane þis town was⁶ garnist with sic pussance be him
þat It rang in sikkir pece fourty ȝeris efter his deith; howbeid
he was mare pleasand and gracious to þe *commouns* þan to þe

¹ Ieperdy.² to.³ gretare.⁴ succedit.⁵ confiscate.⁶ war, *A.*; wes, *B.*

nobillis of þe tovrne, And abone all vtheris he was maist
 acceptabill and belouit¹ with his weremen. He had daly²
 four hundreth men of armes to þe defence of his body, als
 weill in tyme of were as pece. (XVI) Romulus, eftir þir and
 5 mony vthir his Immortale dedis, Come to the pule of Caprea
 to make ane orisoun | to þe faderis, and to haue sene quhat p. 31.
 nowmer of pepill was þan present in his new toun; quhen
 suddanlie raiß ane horribill tempest with huge flambis³ and
 noyis of thunder, and made this nobil prince sa Invisibill
 10 with thik schoure of wete and myst, that he was haistelie
 revist out of sicht & nevir efter sene in to þis erde. The
 pepill was astonist be þis vncouth affray;⁴ At last quhen þare
 dredowr was in sum parte mesit, and þe day turnit to maist
 serenite, Thay fand the king absent; and howbeit þai gaif
 15 credence to the faderis (quhilkis stude nerrest him for þe
 tyme) saying that he was Revist to þe hevin be ane tempes-
 tuous⁵ cloude, zit þai war strikkin with sic dredoure of deso-
 lacioun for wanting of þare nobill prince, þat þai stude with
 grete silence certane houris eftir but ony motion or noyis;
 20 quhil at last ane certane of þame began to adore þe said
 Romulus as ane god & *son of ane god. And Incontinent (29).
 all þe remanent pepil salust him as king and fader of þe
 romane ciete, Besekand him to stand sa propitiant, þat þai his
 posterite and lynage mycht regnne in gude felicite and pece.
 25 Sum men sais quietlie þat Romulus was revin sindri be þe
 faderis in þis tempestuos⁵ heure. This opinioun is obscure,
 bot þe first be present dredoure⁶ of þe pepill and vncouth
 aventure falling to þe said Romulus Is mare authorist, And
 be counsell of ane prudent man namyt proculus It gat þe
 30 mare creditt. ffor þis proculus, seand þe pepill full of maist
 drery sollicitude for the lufe⁷ and affeccioun þat þai⁸ had to
 Romulus, And richt commovit with extreme haterent againis
 the faderis for þe suspicioun of his deith, past to þe said
 pepill with maist grauite and said In þis maner, "Undirstand,

¹ luffit.³ flammis.⁵ tempestuous.⁷ luffe.² daylie.⁴ effray.⁶ dreiddoure.⁸ he, MSS.

- maist prudent faderis and pepill, þat Romulus þe fader of this nobill ciete, sliding haistellie from þe hevin met me arely¹ on
p. 32. þis morow. at last, seand me astonist throw | fere of his divyne maieste, and humelie praying him þat It mycht be lefull to me to contempil and behald him, 'paß' (said he) 'and schaw 5 to romanis, The goddis will þat Rome my ciete be þe hede of þe warld. Command² þame to hant and lere chevelry, þat þare posterite may persevere and continewe in þe samyn be þare Imitacioun, For na pussance in erde may resist þe romane weris.' and als sone as he had said þir wourdis, he evanist 10 hie out of my sicht." It is na litill wounder quhat haisty credence and faith was gevin to þe wourdis of þis man, for þe grete desire þat baith the small pepill and army had towart þe said Romulus was suddanlie mesit, fra þai belevit him deifcate in þis wise. (XVII) quhil sic thingis war done, þe 15 faderis began to contend amang þame self be avarice for desire of þe crowne, and ȝit þir contenciouns raisß nocht fra euery ane of þame elike; for þare was bot few persouns havand ony prerogative to be preferrit to vthir amang sa new pepill. The contenciouns war onelie betuix þe twa ordouris, that is to 20 say, betuix þe Sabynis and þe romanis. þai (quhilkis war cumyn of þe Sabynis) desirit ane king to be create of þare blude, þat þai suld nocht tyne þare possessioun to regnne *wit* equale (30). *empire *wit* romanis; for sen þe deith of Tatius þare last king þare was nocht ane king chosin of þare lynage. On þe 25 tothir side, þe agit Romanis mycht nocht suffer ane king of vncouth blude to regnne abone þame. Thus was þe communite³ baith of sabynis and romanis dividit in sindri opiniouns, how beit þai war all concordant⁴ to haue ane king; for þai knewe nocht as ȝit quhat hevinlie swetenes⁵ was in liberte. The 30 faderis began to haue grete fere & dredoure in þare myndis, traisting sum extern and vncouth violence of diuers cieteis liand
p. 33. þareabout, quhilkis | war boldin with grete haterent agains þame, to rise haistellie and baith Invaid þare toun þan desolate but ane hede and þare army but ane capitane atanis. Thus þai 35

¹ airtie.² commandand, *A.*³ coite.⁴ concordand.⁵ sueitnes.

war all concluding vnder ane mynde to haue ane king, bot
 3it na man wald dedenȝe to gif consent to ane vthir, And
 þarefore þe faderis (quhilk war ane hundreth in nowmer)
 deidit þame self in ten decuris, Ilk decure contenyng ten
 5 men in nowmer, And þir ten decuris to haue the equale
 regiment and moderacioun of public empire, In sic maner
 þat ane of Ilkane¹ decure sal begyn first and regnne as king
 his court² about, with the samyn³ diademe, rob riall, orna-
 mentis and axis as Romulus bure in his tyme. And þe empire
 10 of þis king alanerlie to endure⁴ bot five dayis, and quhen þe⁵
 five dayis war outrvn,⁶ the nixt of þare decurie⁷ sal succede,
 and sa ay furth in ordoure. This gouernance continewit ane
 ȝere eftir þe deith of romulus, and was callit the Interregne,
 That is to say, þe vacance betuix the deith of ane king to þe
 15 electioun of ane vthir.

How Numa pompilius was chosin for his singulare (31)
 Vertew to be king of Romanis ; Of his sindri
 religiouns brocht amang the Romanis, to preserve
 þame fra sleuth and ydilnes ; how he stabillit his
 20 empire in gude pece with his nychtbouris, and of
 his loving and deith. Ca. viij.

The romanis beand gouernit in þis maner began to murmur,⁸
 saying þai war thirllit to more servitude þan afore, ane hundreth
 kingis rignand⁹ abone þame quhare þai suld haue bot ane ;
 25 and þarefore apperit þai wald suffir nane in tymes cuming to
 regnne abone þame bot ane king, and þis king to be create
 be þare onelie electioun. The faderis, herand þame mouit
 in¹⁰ sic purpois, thocht best to offer þe thing plesandlie to
 þe pepill, quhilk þai beleuit to tyne, & made con|corde with p. 34.

¹ Ilk.³ same.⁵ þir.⁷ þat decure.⁹ ringand.² curß.⁴ indure.⁶ outroun.⁸ murmour.¹⁰ to.

pame in this wise. The electioun of romane kingis sall be gevin to þe pepill, so þat þe faderis haue als mekill power remanand *witʰ* þame self in his election as þai gaif. ffor þai concludit, quham þe pepill made king suld be king gif þe faderis war doaris þarʒof, þat Is to say, þe electioun of þe 5 king made be þe pepill suld be of nane effect bot gif þe faderis him ratifyt and confermyt. This consuetude is obseruate to thir dayis; Quhen ony officis or digniteis ar desirit on þe commyciall¹ dayis, The suffragis and votis of þe pepill ar vncertane and of na effect quhil þe faderis afferme þe samyn 10 be þare auctorite. Sic thingis done, þe senaturis, quhilkis war cled with dignite ryall for þe tyme, made ane orisoun afore þe pepill (and said) "That honoure, heill & felice may succede to ʒow, O romanis, create ane king, for þat is plesand to þe faderis; & gif ʒe create ony man þat is wourthy to 15 regne eftir Romulus, þe faderis will assist to ʒow and conferme him." Thir offeris of þe faderis war plesand to þe small pepill, and to þat fyne þat þai suld nocht appere vn-
 (32). thankfull nor vincust be *þare humanite, Thay be gude avise-ment comandit þe senaturis to decerne him to regne quham 20 þai thocht maist expedient. (XVIII) The Iustice and relligioun of nvma pompilius was of singulare renovne in þir dayis. This maist resolute & prudent man duelt in ane place callit þe curis of Sabinis, & had, sa fer as ony creature mycht haue in to þai dayis, full cognossance baith of divyne & humane lawis. 25 sindri belevit þat pithagoras was *preceptour* & auctor² of his doctrine, for þai coult³ nocht ymagin þat ony vþir man mycht haue sic⁴ erudicioun in þai dayis. Bot þare opinioun⁵ Is vane, ffor It was clerelie knawin þat pithagoras was mare þan j^o 30 ʒeris eftir þe empire of Nvma, þat is to say in þe tyme of Servius tullius, & held ane scule of ʒoung children⁷ in þe remote & last boundis of Italie, beside þe landis of metapont, heraclea, & crotona. Attour, howbeit the said pithagoras had
 p. 35. bene equale of age *witʰ* Nvma, | quhat fame suld haue drawin

¹ commital.³ culd.⁵ apocioun (l).⁷ childerne.² actor (l).⁴ sec.⁶ ane hundreth.

him out of sa remote and fer cuntre to haue cummyn among
 þe sabynis? be quhat langage mycht he haue drawin sa mony
 young childerne¹ to desire of letteris? be quhat way or supple
 mycht ane² man haue travellit throw sa mony vncouth pepill,
 5 different fra vthir in maneris and langage? Be thir ressouns
 I can nocht afferme þat Numa was lerned³ ony maner of
 way be pithagoras, bot erare þat Numa of his awne Ingeine
 temperate his liffe in Vertewe, and nocht alanerly was instruckit
 in strange and vncouth science, bot als in þe tetric and
 10 soroufull science Vsit among þe sabynis, Of quhilkis na kynde
 of science was mare corruppit in þis erde. The romanis, herand
 þe name of Numa pompilius rehersit afore þame, howbeit It
 apperit that all þare riches suld cum in the Sabynis handis
 gif he war king, ȝit becaus þare was nane among þe pepill nor
 15 faderis nor citejanis of þe toun þat mycht prefer þame self or
 ony vthir of þare opinioun to þe said Numa, þai condiscendit
 to mak him king. Attius nauius devinoure (becaus romulus
 succedit to þe crowne of Romanis be Augurie & divinacioun
 of foulis) consellit Numa to explore þe myndis of þe goddis
 20 towart him in þe samyn maner. Sone eftir Numa was brocht
 in þe toure of capitoll be þe divinour, quhilk to mak him þe
 more honorabil was maid perpetuall and public preist of sic
 honouris in tymes cummyng. And eftir that Numa was brocht
 in þe said toure, he was sett down be þis preist * on ane (33).
 25 stane fornens⁴ þe south. than þis divinoure sat down beside
 him on his left hand with his hede coverit, havand in his
 richt hand ane crukit club but ony knott, quhilk in þai dayis
 was callit Lituus, Than quhen he had made his orisoun to
 þe goddis, castand his sight to þe toun and feildis þare
 30 about, he dividit and cumpasit in his mynde all þe regiouns
 fra þe est to þe west, and assignit the gude & happy signis
 to þe south and þe evil signis to the north, And þan tuke
 ane signne or meith in his mynde als fer as his ene mycht
 suffice to behald. | Thir cerymonis beand done, this preist p. 36.
 35 transportit or ellis changit þe crukit staff to his left hand,

¹ childrene.² a.³ lernit.⁴ fornence.

And laid his richt hand on Numais hede, saying on this wise, "O fader Iupiter, gif It be lefull this Numa (quhais hede I twich¹ now) to regnne abone the romanis, declare þe samyn be sum evident and clere signis within þe boundis quhilkis I haue made and now compasit² in my mynde." Eftir 5 þis the preist [schew] be certane devote wourdis quhare þir signis suld be quhilkis he desirit to be schawin. And als sone as þe signis apperit, Numa was brocht doun fra þe tempill and declarit king. (XIX) Numa, succeding to þe crowne of Romanis in this maner, Set him halely be prudent 10 industrie (Sen his new ciete was onelie foundit be force and rigoure of armes) to strenth the samyn in tymes cummyng be lawis, relligioun, and gude maneris. And becaus he saw þe myndis of his pepill (sa lang as þai war hantit in rage and fury of weris) mycht noch be soffit nor temperat, Tharefore, 15 to draw þame fra exercicioun and vse of chevelrie, he biggit þe tempil of Ianus at þe fute of mont Argelet, to signify the tyme of were and pece; þat is to say, quhen þis tempill stude opin, þe ciete suld þan mak þame reddy for batell, and quhen It was closit, to signify al nychtbouris liand þame about war 20 mesit and pecifyit but ony haterent to þe romanis. This tempil eftir the tyme of Numa was neuer closit bot twyfs.³ The first was efter þe end of þe first punyk batall, quhen Titus ma[n]lius was consul. the tothir is happynt be favoure of goddis in oure dayis, þat we mycht se þe samyn closit eftir 25 þe actiak batall, quhen Cesar Augustus emprioure brocht al (34). seyis and landis vnder maist ferme tranquillite & peace. * And þocht Numa, this civil and Illustar prince, closit þe portis of the tempill, and was confederate in societe and freyndschip with all his nychtbouris, 3it þat his pepill (quhilk afore levit 30 chaist throw fere of Inemyis and ordoure militare) suld noch p. 37. | haue occasioun to lust and Insolence be ociosite & sleuth, quhen euery trubill and fere of extern⁴ and vncouth Inemyis war sett aside, he thocht maist proffittabil to Induce þe rude & sempill pepill in þai dayis to relligioun and dredoure of 35

¹ tuiche.² new cumpasit.³ twiſ.⁴ extreme, A.

goddis. And becaus nowthir þe veneracioun of relligioun nor
 3it þe dredoure of goddis mycht synk nor be Imprentit ony
 wayis in þe hartis of his pepill but sum new Inuencioun of
 vncouth mirakill,¹ or but sic thingis (quhilkis war abone þe
 5 comoun and naturall operacioun of man) he fenezeit² þat he
 had familiare cumpany on þe nycht with þe goddes Egeria,
 and be hir avise he wald institute certane divine sacrifice
³quhilkis suld be maist acceptabil to þe goddis, and wald
 found and lymyt diuerß preistis to bere speciall charge and
 10 cure of þir sacrifices.³ 3it afore þe Institucioun of þir sacrificis
 he set him to ordoure þe zere; And first he dividit þe zere in
 xij monethis be courß of þe mone. And becaus þe mone
 completis hir courß euery moneth in leß þan xxx dayis,
 Tharefore Inlakit xi⁴ dayis and vj houris to complete þe hail
 15 zere and courß of þe son⁵ in þe zodiak. Nochtþeles be his
 singulare wisdome he colleckit all þir od dayis togidder and
 Interponit þame with monethis Intercalaris, Ilk xxiiij zenis
 anys, þat þe son⁵ come to þe samyn dayis, houris, mynutis,
 greis, and signis at þe zenis end as It began. Attoure, Numa
 20 schewe in his Calendar⁶ sic dayis as wer happy and sic dayis
 as war unhappy, be superstitioun þat certane dayis mycht occur
 in quhilkis the pepill mycht gett þare erandis happely sped,⁷
 And vtheris sa mailhouris þat na felicite mycht follow be þare
 operacioun. (XX) Sic thingis done, he gaif his besines to
 25 Institute preistis to relligioun of goddis; And þocht he institute
 mony haly sacrifices at þis tyme, 3it he institute þe sacrifice
 þat per|tenit to þe flamyn diall⁸ with maist solemne cerymonis. p. 38.
 And þocht mony persouns in his werely ciete apperit erare
 like to þe maneris of Romulus þan Numa, and reddy to
 30 chance of batall, 3it þat þe sacrifice and solemne cerymonis
 institute be kingis suld nocht dekey⁹ nor failze, * he foundit (35).
 ane preist, vthir ways namyt ane flamyn, to remane with
 continuall residence in þe sacrifice of Iupiter; and to mak
 him in mare reuerence to þe pepill he cled him with riche &

¹ mirakle.² om.⁵ sone.⁷ speid.⁹ decay.² fenzeit.⁴ al þir od (*from below*).⁶ Kalender.⁸ diale.

riall abulzementis,¹ þat he was wourthy to sett² in þe sadill
 curall.³ Attoure, he ekit vthir⁴ twa flamynis, þat ane dedicate
 to mars and þis vthir⁴ to Romulus quirinus, þe god and fader
 of romanis. He chesit als certane virginis to be profest to
 Vesta, goddes of chaistite.⁵ This ordour of preisthede was 5
 first begvn⁶ in þe ciete of Alba, nocht vncouth to þe pepill
 of albane nor to þare begynnaris. Attoure, to mak þir virginis
 þe mare contemplative with devote and continuall sacrifice in
 þare templis, he assignit to þame certane yerelie rentis to be
 payit to þame of the commoun purß, And causit þame for 10
 þare gude life, virginite, and devote maneris to be haldin in
 grete veneracioun amang þe pepill. Attoure, he dedicate xij
 preistis namyt Salis to þe honoure of mars gradius, and gaif⁷
 to þame abulzementis payntit in maner of cote armouris, Com-
 manding⁸ þame to bere abone þare cote armouris certane targis 15
 of braß namyt Ancilia, that is to say, þe hevinlie armoure;
 and als commandit þat þir preistis sall pas throw þe stretis
 of þe toun singand melodius sangis with solemne dansing and
 leping. Sic thingis done, he create ane grete bischop namyt
 marcius, þe son of marcus, ane of þe faderis of Rome; and 20
 gaif him þe keeping of þe bukis In quhilkis war contenit þe
 cerymonis and ordoring of all þir foresaidis sacrificis, That is
 p. 39. to say, In quhat | tempillis, In quhat dayis, and with quhat
 kynde of sacrifice þare goddis suld be honorit; schawing⁹ als
 quhare the money¹⁰ suld be tane to sustene thir preistis and 25
 divyne service. All þe remanent chargis, baith public and
 private, he submittit to þe discrecioun and wisdom of þare
 bischop, And commandit this bischop to be chosin of sic
 preeminence and wisdom, þat he mycht support þe pepill be
 his consultacioun quhen ony doutsum mater occurrit; and to 30
 provide sic ways þat nowþir þe religious maneris quhilkis war
 Inducit be him suld¹¹ be troublit be negligence, nor 3it new
 superstitioun brocht in abone þe samyn. And nocht alanerlie

¹ abulzementis.² sit.³ curill.⁴ om.⁵ goddis of chestite.⁶ begoun.⁷ gafe.⁸ commandand.⁹ schewing.¹⁰ mony.¹¹ sud.

- sall þis bischop lere þe pepil to do þir and sic like divine
seruice, bot sall lere þame als how all funerall obsequies sall
 be done, to meiss and pecify þe offence of saulis toward þar
 goddis. And als þis bischop sall schaw to the pepill *for (36).
- 5 quhat causis þe thounder and vncouth mervellis ar send
 doun¹ in the erde, þat þe pepill þarethrow may accept þe
 gude werdis following be þe samyn, and eschew þe evill. And
 to draw the consatis of thingis to cum fra þe myndis of
 goddis, he dedicate ane tempil in mont Aventyne to Iupiter
- 10 Eliseus, to explore the mynde of þe said Iupiter be augurie
 and divinacioun of foulis. (XXI) Thus war the haill pepil
 drawin fra cruelte and violence of armes to sum morall exer-
 cicioun, throw quhilk þare continuall exercitioun of divine
seruice (be quhilkis þe favoure of goddis apperit to þame sa
- 15 supportabill and helpie in all thare besines) fillit all þare
 myndis with sic religioun & piete, þat faith and swering
 gouernit þe ciete be onelie dredoure of the lawis and puny-
 cioun following þareapoun. And quhen the cietejanis of þis
 new ciete had cassin þame to counterfet² and follow þe maneris
- 20 of þis maist haly prince, All þe pepill liand about þame, quhilkis
 before belevit þis ciete rising in þe myddis of þame *nocht* to
 seik pece of al pepill but onely to Invaid þare nychtbouris
wit | continuall armeis,³ war brocht to sic reuerence and dred- p. 40.
 doure of þe goddis, þat þai thocht nathing mare vnlesum þan to
- 25 troubil sa haly & religious pepill, perseuerant (as apperit) in
 continual veneracioun of þe goddis. In þis ciete was ane
 wod, and throw þe myddis of It ran ane burne *wit* continuall
 streme of wattir, quhilk descendit⁴ fra ane myrk and obscure
 fountane⁵ within ane den. And becaus Numa frequentit oft
- 30 tymes in þis wod, solitare and but ony cumpany, to haue
 commonyng *wit* Egera þe goddes afore namyt, he dedicate
 þis wode and fontane to þe musis, to signify that þe secrete
 counsel of þe goddis was haldin in þe samyn place *wit*
 Egera his spous & wyfe. And þocht he consecrate þis wod
- 35 to þe musis, zit he commandit þat þe sacrifice þareof suld be

¹ done.² counterfute.³ armyes.⁴ desendit.⁵ fontane.

made alanerly to þe goddes faith; and to do þis sacrifice he
 ordanit twa preistis to be caryit¹ in ane chariot² maid in
 maner of ane pend abone þare hede, and þare handis to be
 cled oure all partis except þe poynt of þare fingeris, be
 quhilkis þai suld do þare sacrifice, To signifie þat howbeit 5
 faith be hid and bot ony evident demonstracions, ȝit It suld
 be defendit. he cowmandit als þat ane sate suld be dedicate
 to þe goddes faith on þe richt side of þis wod. Attoure, he
 (37). dedicate mony vthir sacrificis *wit* templis and placis con*venient
 quhare þe samyn suld be done, quhilkis are callit be þe 10
 bischoppis Argeos. ȝit amang all his memoriall werkis, ane
 thing was maist apprisit, þat in all þe dayis and ȝeris of his
 empire he was sett na les to defend pece þan to defend his
 realme. Thus we hane sene þe liue³ & maneris of twa kingis,
 Ilkane of sindri governance; That ane ekit his realme and 15
 commounweill be force and rigoure of armes, and þis vthir be
 wisdome and pece; þat ane rang xxxvij ȝeris, & þis vthir
 xliij ȝeris abone þe romanis.⁴

p. 41. How tullus hostilius was made king | of romanis;
 of þe occasioun of weris betuix þe romanis and 20
 Albanis; how þe albanis eftir þe deith of þare
 king Cayus Civilius chesit metius fufficius to be
 dictatour, and of þe commonyng and contract
 made betuix him and tullius. Ca. ix.

(XXII) Be deith of Numa the croun returnit as afore to þe 25
 Inter-Regne. Efter þis the pepill chesit tullius hostilius to
 be king. he was nevo to þe samyn hostilius þat led þe
 battall sa vailȝeantlie in þe law vail vnder mont Capotoll

¹ careit.² cheriot.³ life.⁴ *A later hand has added,* Than the ciete was strengthened and skilled baith
 in the arts of pece & weir. (*not in B.*)

againis þe sabinis, & quhen þe pepill had chesit him king
the faderis confermit him, as It was accustomyt.¹ This prince
was *nocht* alanerlie repugnant² to þe religious maneris of Numa
his antecessoure, bot was als of mare feirß curage þan romulus.

5 Attoure, his flurisant 3outh, his mychty strenth of body, the glore
of his vailzeant antecessouris, enforcit him to wirk sum notabil
and marciall vassalege. This nobil prince, beleving his pepill to
Increß dull and vnweildy be lang eiß and sleuth, serchit occa-
sioun mony wayis to Invaid his *nicht*bouris with batall. It fel be

10 aventure þat sindri landwart pepill vnder romane sen3eory tuke
pray and gudis out of Albane landis, and siclike sindri *landwart (38).
pepil vnder þe empire of Albanis tuke pray and gudis out of þe
romane landis. In this tyme was regnand³ abone þe Albanis
Cayus Ciuius. throw taking of þir prayis and spulzeis foresaidis,

15 Legatis war send on athir side vnder ane tyme desiring redreß of
all displeseris. Tullus gaif sic chargis to his legatis, þat þai suld
attempt na thing by his command, and þarefore gaif þame power
to desire *nocht* bot redreß, and to returne *wit* haisty ansuere;
And becaus he knew þe albanis wald deny redreß in þat sort, he

20 *thocht* þe samyn *mycht* be sufficient motive to Invaid þame with
batall. The legatis of albanis did þare message *wit* mare sleuth
þan diligence, | for in þe samyn⁴ tyme (quhen þai war makand p. 42.
solemne feist and banket with Tullus in his maist magnificence)
The legatis of Tullus desirit þe first redreß, and becaus þe king

25 of Albanis denyit þe samyn, Thay denuuncit were and assignit þe
xxx day nixt following to Invaid him with batall. Tullus (as
sone as þir legatis war returnit and schawin þare doingis) com-
mandit þir legatis of Albanis to propone þare message, and to
schaw to quhat fyne þai war cummyn. Thir legatis, na thing

30 aduertist of all maters done be þe legatis of Tullus, began be
lang proceß to excuse þame, saying It was contrare þare will to
schaw ony thing displeasand to tullus; *Nocht*þeles þai war thirllit
to *seruitude*, and behuffit to execute þare credit. Schortlie þai
schew þame cummyn to desire redreß of þe gudis tane be

35 romanis, and gif the samyn war *nocht* done to gif vp trewis.

¹ accustomitt.² repugnand.³ rignand.⁴ same.

To þir wourdis answert Tullus: "schaw to ȝoure king þat þe king of romanis takkis þe goddis in witnes, and prayis þame to turne all þe harmes & slauchtir, þat is to follow¹ be þir weris, on þat pepill þat first denyit redreß, or first send hame athir legatis *witȝ* repulß." (XXIII) Als sone as thir legatis war returnit to 5 þe albanis *witȝ* þis ansuere, Ilk ane of þir pepill began to mak provisioun in the maist riche and substancius maner þat þai mycht to Invaid vthir, quharethrow þare batal apperit *nocht* vnlike to ane civil batall betuix faderis and sonnys. Baith þir pepill war troianis; for lavyne was *cummyn* fra troy and Alba fra 10 lavyne, and all þe romanis discending of the lynage and blude of albanis. *Nocht*þeß, þe aventure þat eftir followit made þe end of þis batall þe leß miserabill, þat It was *nocht* fochtin be (39). vniuersal meting of baith þe *armyis; for at last baith þir pepill war brocht vnder ane *communitie* to leif in Rome, And þe ciete 15 p. 43. [of] Alba equate (as ȝe sal eftir here) to þe ground. | The Albanis come first *witȝ* grete violence in þe Romane landis, and sat doun campit with þare tentis within V^m paiß to Rome; Syne beltit þare armye with ane strang fowsye on euery side, quhilk was callit certane ȝeris eftir "civilius fowsye," quhil at last þe memorye 20 þareof perist be roust of ȝeris. quhen þe albanis war liand on þis maner in þare garnist campe, deceissit þare king Civilius, and þan þai create Mecius² fufficius to be dictator. Tullus be deith of Civilius become more feirß than afore, and traistit fermelie sic favoure of goddis apperand to him be þis werde (sen þe hede of 25 his Inemyis was sa haistelie tane away) þat he mycht Iustlie tak punycioun of all þe Albane pepill for þe batall movit be þame in ane wrangwus³ actioun. In þat samyn nycht he past by þe camp of albanis, and enterit with haisty & terribil Incursioun in þare landis; quhilk thing movit fufficius to departe fra his garnist 30 fowsyis,⁴ and to cum fordwart *witȝ* all his armye als ner as he mycht, to Invaid þe romanis. *Nocht*þeles he send ane legate afore to Tullus, desiring to *commoun* with him, afore þe batallis Ionit, of certane hie materis (gif It war his pleßer) Na les plesand and proffittabil to romanis þan to Albanis. Tullus 35

¹ fallow.² Metius.³ wranguis.⁴ fouseyis.

refusit *nocht* þis *commonyng*, howbeit he brocht his army arrayit in his best awise,¹ þat he suld *nocht* be frustrate gif þir desiris of fufficius war vane & but effect. On the tothir side, the albanis come fordwart arrayit fornens þe army of romanis. Thir armyis
 5 standing arrayit in þis wise,² baith þe princes convenit in the myddis of þame, And fufficius prince of Albanis spak first in this maner. "I here say þat Ciullius oure last king was ane grete occasioun of þis batall now³ appering betuix þir two pepill, becaus þe Iniuris done to his lieg^{is} war *nocht* redressit as he
 10 desirit. | I dout *nocht* bot þow Tullus Is occasioun of thir weris p. 44.
 be þe samyn ressoun; ȝit gif It be leful to me erare to schaw þe verite þan to schaw ony dissimilit or eloquent wourdis, I say na thing has Inducit þir twa⁴ pepill, alliat togiddir be proximate of blude and rowmes, to Invaid vthir w^{it}h batell, bot alanerlie
 15 avarice and desire of senȝeorie. And quhiddir þis batall be Iust*lie or Iniustlie begvn⁵ I wil *nocht* Interpret at þis tyme; (40).
 lat him decerne þe samyn þat first denuȝcit batall. The Albanis has create me to be þare gouernoure; Ane thing þarefore is w^{it}h quhilke I wald haue the ripelie avisit. behald first w^{it}h quhat
 20 richeß, grete dominion, and pussance, the hethruschis lyis circulit about ws baith on euery side. Attoure þow knawis, in sa fer⁶ as þi pepill ar mare approcheand⁷ to þe Wolschis þan we ar, In sa fer⁶ mare dangere apperis to thy pepill than to ouris. They ar mekil pussand⁸ be land, and mekil mare be þe seyis.
 25 Remember, als sone as we be thoundrand preiß of trumpett Ionys togiddir, baith þe pepill afore rehersit (eftir þat we ar brokin w^{it}h athir slauchter) sal stand arrayit in oure sicht, reddy to destroy baith þe vincust and victorius partie with þare fresch ordinance. Tharefore gif þe goddis favouris ws, and gif we be
 30 *nocht* content to leif in sikkir⁹ liberte, bot wil sett oure empire and *seruitude* apoun sum doutsum chance, lat ws mak sic way þat It may be plesandlie discussit quhilke of þir two pepill sall haue perpetuall senȝeory abone vthir, but ony grete slauchter or effusioun of blude." Thir desiris war *nocht* displeasand to Tullus,

¹ avyse.² new.³ begoun.⁷ approachant.⁹ sicker.² vyil.⁴ tway.⁶ far.⁸ pussant.

howbeit Mecius *sufficius* was at þis tyme more fers þan he was,
 baith in curage and hope of victorie. At last, quhen þai had
 socht on all sidis how þis mater mycht be dressit, ane resonabill
 way was found (to quhilk fortoun gaif sufficient occasioun) to
 p. 45. | discuß þis pley; (XXIV) ffor in Ilkane of þir armyis war thre 5
 brethir, nocht vnlike to vtheris in ȝeris and strenth. þai quhilkis
 war in þe romane army war namyt horacianis, And thir vthir
 quhilkis war in þe Albane cumpany namyt curacianis. Thare Is
 nane vthir opinioun þat is authorist amang oure anciant faderis
 mare Illustir and nobill þan Is þis opinioun; and þocht þe said 10
 historie be notabil ȝit [in] It is sum erreure, nocht knowing
 quhilk of þir twa pepill war callit Horacianis ¹ and quhilk Cura-
 cianis. Ilk opinioun has sufficient auctoriteis ¹; Nochtþeles, I
 find monyest auctoriteis saying þe romane brethir war horacianis,
 and þarefore I applaude to þare opinioun. The twa princes 15
 afore namyt tretis *witʰ* þir sex brethir to fecht aganis vthir
witʰ scharpe & grundin swerdis to þe deith, for defence of þare
 naciounis and pepill, with sic condicioun þat þe empire & liberte
 (41). sall stand perpetually ² *witʰ* þe samyn pepill quhare *victorie
 war presentlie fallin.³ Thir sex brethir refusit nocht þir con- 20
 diciouns, & sone eftir þai war aggreit baith of day and place
 for batell. Ȝit afore þe batall ane band was maid betuix romanis
 and Albanis vnder þir ferme condiciouns: Of quhilkis pepil þe
 cietezanis war victorius, þat samyn pepill sall regnne *witʰ* perpetual
 empire abone þat vthir but ony eftir rebelloun. Mony vthir 25
 bandis war roborate betuix þe two pepill with vthir condiciouns,
 howbeit þe samyn war made all to þe samyn effect. We find
 all thingis done in þis wise as we haue schewin, ffor of ony
 vthir mare anciant band of confederacioun is na memorie. In
 þe mene tyme the feciall demandit king Tullus on þis maner: 30
 "Commandis þow me to fens ⁴ ane band *witʰ* þe fader patrat of
 Albane pepill." And becaus þe king commandit him to pas to
 execucioun þareof, "deliuer to me," said þe ffeciall, "The herbe
 namyt verbene." Than said þe king "ressaue It clene and |
 p. 46. purifijt." Incontinent the feciall past to þe tour of capitoll, and 35

¹ om.² perpetuall.³ falling.⁴ fence.

pullit vp þe said herbe ; Syne demandit þe king, saying : “makis
 þow me messenger Ryall of þe queritis and romane pepill, &
 ratifjs all thingis done be me, my vessell,¹ & collegis.² The
 king said, “I consent and dois It, sa³ It be *nocht* to fraude of me
 5 or romane pepill.” This fecial had to name marcus Valerius,
 and he maid Spurius fusius fader patrat, and twichit baith his
 hede and his hare with þe herbe verbene. The fader patrat
 was ordanit to strenth & corroborat bandis and contractis *wit*
 maist solempne faith, & did þe samyn *wit* mony devote cery-
 10 monis & coniuracions, quhilkis for prolixite ar *nocht* necessare to
 reherß at þis tyme ; and quhen he had repetit þe samyn eftir þe
 ritis and customes þareof he said in þis wise : “here me, O
 Iupiter ; here me, O fader patrat of Albane pepill ; and here me,
 O þow albane pepill, þat all and sindri þai artikillis⁴ first and
 15 last rehersit concernyng oure promys⁵ and band be *observate*,
 but ony dissate or fraude eftir following, be romanis, als richtuislie
 as þai ar here Ingravin in þir tabillis or walx.⁶ And gif þe romanis
 failþe first be þare public counsell and fraudfull slichtis, Than, O
 Iupiter, strike þame þe samyn day *wit* na leß cruelete þan I sall
 20 strik þis pork ; and þe mare þow art vailzeant and pussant, strike
 * þame ay þe mare cruele.” And incontinent fra þe feciall had (42).
 said þir wourdis, he slew þe pork with ane hevy stane. Attoure
 þe albanis hallowit þare fretis & terribill coniuraciouns for obser-
 uacioun of þir poyntis afore repetit, be avise of þare dictatour and
 25 vthir preistis, on þe samyn maner.

¹ verschell.² colleigis.³ sat.⁴ articulis.⁵ promes.⁶ waux.

p. 47. How the thre curacianis faucht aganis the thre
 horacianis; and how two of the horacianis war
 slane; And how | the thrid horaciane slew all
 the thre curacianis, and eftir slew his sister, and
 was adiugit to þe deith, and how he eschapit. 5
 Ca. x.

(XXV) The forme of aith maist faithfully corroborate in
 maner afore rehersit betuix þe two pepill, Thir sex brethir as
 was conuenit tuke þare armoure and wapynnys. Than ilk side
 began to exhorte þare cietezanis and campiouns to schaw þare 10
 manhede & vassalege, saying þare goddis, þare landis, þare
 liberte, & euery vthir thingis pertenyng to þame baith at
 hame and of field, dependit on þe chance of þare batall, And
 beheld¹ þare fechtung þat day. Thir brethir, feirß and ful of
 curage, rasit to extreme leoperdie of armes be hortacioun of 15
 þare native & kyndelie nacioun, come pertlie to þe campe
 betuix baith þe Oistis, qu^hilkis stude campit about þame on
 euery side, and richt pensive in þare myndis; for þocht þai
 war exonerate of all present dangere, þai war ȝit ful of grete
 sollicitude and thocht, for þare empire was sett on þe fortoun 20
 and vertewe of þir few campiouns. baith þe pepil, ereckit
 sum tyme in esperance of victorie, and sum tyme suspendit
 betuix hope and drede, beheld þis vnthankful sicht. At last
 quhen þe signe be blast of trumpet was given to Ione, Thir
 sex brethir, inflamyt² w^{it}h sprete and curage of baith þe oistis, 25
 ruschit with maist penetrive and awful wapynnys like þe bront
 of twa armyis togiddir; ffor nowthir þis nor þat side regardit
 (43). þare * propir damage³ or slauchtir, bot alanerlie tuke sicht to
 þe public empire, to þe public liberte, and public seruitude
 following be þe chance of þare batall, knowing⁴ weill sic fortoun 30
 suld stand perpetualie to þare pepill as þai wan þat day. als
 sone as þare bricht armoure be feirß concursioun resoundit in þe

¹ behald.² inflammit.³ damage.⁴ knawin.

are, and þare schynand swerdis begouth to glance, Incontinent
 ane huge trymling¹ Invadit all þe pepill þat beheld² þis batall.
 And becauþ nouthir þis nor þat oist saw (as ȝit) ony signe of
 victorie appere, baith þare voce was rauk³ and þare sprete
 5 solist and dull. quhen þir brethir war fechtand togiddir hand p. 48.
 for hand, Nocht alanerlie apperit þe ythand mocion of þare
 bodyis, and weilding of þare doutsum and dangerus suerdis
 and dartis, bot als þare rude and wide⁴ woundis, springand
 with rede stremes of blude, apperit to the sight of þe⁵ pepill.
 10 In þe mene tyme, twa of þe romane brethir woundit and slane
 fell down Ilkane abone vthir, All þe thre Albane brethir beand
 for þe tyme woundit cruelly and hurte. þe fall and slauchter
 of þir twa Romane brethir maid þe Albanis to reiose with
 vehement noyis and clamoure; ȝit þe romane legiouns war
 15 nocht halelie destitute of curage, howbeit þai war pensive in
 þare myndis, havand (as þan) na esperance bot in þe thrid
 broder namit horiciane, quhilk was inclusit amang the thre
 albane brethir namyt Curacianis. This horiciane happynyt
 (as þan) to be haill, but ony streß or hurte of body, and was
 20 of sic strenth þat (howbeit he mycht nocht be equale partie to
 fecht aganis all þe thre curacianis at anis) ȝit he mycht haue
 fochtin aganis þame all Ilk ane eftir vthir; And þarefore to
 skail þame in sindry partis he began to fle, traisting Ilkane of

¹ termeling.² behald.³ raule.⁴ vyde.

⁵ Here (on p. 49) the third scribe in the *Boyndlie MS.*
 begins his work, as follows:—

Pepill. In þe mene tyme twa of þe Romane breþer wondit . . . cruelle
 & hurt. þe fall & slauchter of þir twa romane breþer maid þe albanis
 to reiose with vehement noyis & clamour; ȝit þe Romane legyonis
 var nocht halyle destytute of curage, howbeit þai var pensyve in
 þair myndis, hawand as þan na esperance bot in þe thrid bruþer
 Namyt horryciane, quhilk ves Inclusit amang þe thre albane breþer
 Namit Curatianis. This horatiane happinitt as þan to be haill, but
 ony stres or hurt of body, and was of . . . strenth þat howbeit he
 mycht nocht be equalie party to fecht aganis all þe thre curacianis
 at anis, ȝit he mycht haue fouchtin aganis þame all Ilkane efter vthir;
 & þairfoir to skaill þaim in syndry partis he began to fle, traisting
 Ilkane of þaim be þis way ay to follow on him, as þe hurt or vondis

þame be þis way ay to follow on him, as þe hurt or woundis
of þare bodyis mycht suffir for þe tyme. Now was þe horaciane
fled fra þe place quhare he faucht afore, and lukand behind
him saw all þir thre curacianis following on him als fast as þai
mycht, Ilkane severat ane large space fra vthir, and ane of 5
þame nocht fer fra him. Incontinent he returnit with grete
force on þis nerrest curaciane. quhil þe albanis war cryand with
schil noyis on þe remanent curacianis to support þare brothir,
This horaciane had slane his fallow and enterand with new
(44) victorie * on þe secund curaciane. Than þe oist of Romanis 10
began to help þare campoun with sic clamoure as effrait
pepill has, quhen ony gude fortoun fallis abone þare esperance.
This forcy campoun maid him with grete diligence to end
p. 49. þis bataill afore þe thrid brothir (quhilk was nocht | fer distant)
mycht cum to his supporte; and finalie slew þe secund brothir. 15
Now was nocht bot man for man on athir side with equale
chance of battall, howbeit þai war nouthir equale in strenth of
body nor esperance of victorie; for þis ane, deliuer and but
ony wound of body, havand doubil victorie of Inemyis, come
more teirsly to fecht in the thrid bataill þat he had sa recent 20
victorie. That vthir, ouresett with bleding of his woundis and

of þair bodyis mycht suffer for þe tyme. Now was þe horaciane fled
fra þe place quhair he faucht atoir, & lukand behind him saw all thir
thre curatians following on him als fast as þai mycht, Ilkane siverit
fra vthir ane large space, & ane of þaim nocht fer fra him. Inconty-
nent he turnit with grit force on þir nerrest curatians. quhill þe
albanis war cryand with schill woce on þe remanent curatians to sup-
port þair breþer. þis horaciane had slane his fallow & enterand with
. . . victory on þe secund curaciane. þus þe oist of romanis began
to help þair campoun with sic clamour as afferit pepill has, quhen
ony gud fortoun fallis abone þair esperance. þis forcy campoun
maid him with grit diligence to end þis bataill atoir þe þrid breþer.
quhilk was nocht fer distant, mycht cum to his support; & finalie
slew þe secund breþer. now was nocht bot man for man on athir
sid with equale chance of bataill, howbeit þai war nocht equale in
strenth of body nor esperance of victorie; for þis ane, deliuer and
But ony wound of body, havand doubil victorie of enemyis, come
moir teirsly to fecht in the thrid bataill þat he had sa recent victory.

fast rink to haue supportit his brother, and nere discomfist
 for þare slauchter afore his ene, enterit in þe batell aganis his
 victorius Inemye, and maid but smal debait. This horaciane
 reiosing in his mynde said, "I haue send twa brethir to hell,
 5 and I sal send þe thrid (quhilk is occasioun of *oure* debate)
 þe samyn gate, To þat fyne þat þe romanis in tymes *cummyng*
 may regne with perpetual Impire abone þe albanis." And
 Incontinent he straik this thrid brothir (quhilk *mycht* skarslie
 bere vp his wapynnys) in þe throppil, and spulezete him baith
 10 of his life and armoure attanis. The romanis, reiosing of þis
 gude fortoun, resaut horaciane þare campioune *with* þe more
 tryumphe and glaidnes, þat þare *commoun* weil was anys sa
 nere approcheand to vter rewyne. Than baith þe oistis (how-
 beit þai war in diuers myndis) went to þe berying of þare
 15 cietezanis; ffor þat ane has ekit þare *commoun* weil be
 Impire, & þis vthir thirlit to *seruitude* of þat vthir pepil.
 The sepulturis remanis in þat samyn places quhare þai wer
 slane. The two horacianis war beryit togiddir in ane place
nocht fer fra Alba. The thre curacianis war beryit beside
 20 Rome in sindri placis as þai fell. (XXVI) The batell endit
 in þis maner, Mecius fufficius, dictatour of albanis, demandit
 king Tullus afore þe seuering¹ of þare armyis, quhat chargis
 he wald desire of þe saidis albanis, be ressoun of þe band
 afore rehersit. Than tullus commandit him to hald the p. 50.
 25 Albanis in continual exercicioun of chevelrie, þat he mycht

That *vþer*, ourset *with* bleding of his vonds and fast reink to haue
 supportit his bruder, and neir discomfist for þair slauchter afoir his
 Ene, enterit in þe batell aganis his wictoryous *ennymy*, and maid
 bot small debait. This horatiane Reiosing in his mynd said, 'I
 haue send twa breþer to hell, & I sall send þe thrid, quhilk is occatioun
 of *oure* debait, þe samyn gait, To þat fyne þat þe romanis in tymis
cuming may regne *with* *perpetuall* empyre abone þe albanis.' and
 Incontynent he straik þis thrid bruder, quhilk *mycht* skairslie heir vp
 his wappiznis, in þe thropill, & spulzeit him baith of his lyf & armour
 attanis.

¹ syvering.

- (45). haue * supporte þareof gif he had ony weris aganis þe Veanis. Sone eftir, baith þe armyis siverit and returnit hame; amang quham horaciane, þe Invincibil campioun afore rehersit, was returnyng to Rome with þe thre spulejeis of curacianis, and afore his entreß in þe toun met him his sister horacia, ane 5 virgine of grete bewtie quhilk was handfast and promittit in mariage to ane of þir thre curacianis. Als sone as scho saw hir husbandis cloik¹ (quhilk scho had² wovin afore), liand with vtheris spulejeis on hir brutheris schulderis, scho raif hir hare and with sorowfull countenance and teris lamentit þe deith of 10 hir husband. horaciane, þis feirß campioun, was movit in sa grete haterent for þe lamentation of his sister within his tryumphe of victorie and public glaidnes, þat he pullit out his swerd; and quhen he had spokin maist Iniurius wourdis to his sister, he peirsit hir throw þe body with his swerd, and 15 said, "pas now³ with þi Inoportune lufe to þi husband, sen þow has na sicht to þi cuntre nor ȝit to þi brethir quyk or dede; & I pray þe goddis þat Ilk creature þat deploris þe deith of Innemyis to rome be slane in þe samyn maner." This wikkit and outrageous deid was sar aggregit bayt⁴ afore 20 þe faderis⁴ and pepill of Rome, howbeit his recent and honorabil meritis sum parte excusit þe offence þareof; Nochtþeles he was brocht haistelie In Iugment⁵ afore þe king. þan king tullus (þat he suld nocht be auctor⁶ of sa trist and vnthankful Iugement aganis þis nobill man) callit þe pepill afore him, and 25 said, "I create here twa men to be Iugis in þis mater, þat þai may gif þe sentence of perduellion on horaciane eftir þe tenoure⁷ of þe lawis." This law of perduellioun was of maist horribil cryme, and for þat causß quhat euer he was þat was
- p. 51. gilty þareof was ay adiugit to þe deith; for þe two | Iugis 30 (to quham þe causß was committit) behufit to pronunce þe sentence of perduellioun. gif þis horaciane happynnyt be sentence of þir twa Iugis to be convickit, he sall appele to þe pepil, and þan behuffis þir twa Iugis to follow him for his

¹ klok.² þow.⁵ Iugement.⁷ tennour.² has, A.⁴ faderis.⁶ autour.

cryme afore þe pepill. And gif þis Iugis frivole his apellacioun
 and convict him, Than sall his hede be coverit, his body
 skurgit, * owithr vtouth or Inwith þe pomerie, and eftir all (46).
 hingit on ane vnhappy tre. Thir twa men, create Iugis¹ be
 5 þis law, seing þat þai mycht na wayis absolze þis horaciane
 as Innocent of þe cryme foresaid, condampnit him to þe deith.
 Than said ane of þe Iugis,¹ "I gif þe sentence of perduellioun
 on þe, horaciane. Cum hiddir,² þow burreo,³ and bynd þis
 horacianes handis." In þe mene tyme þe burreo come with
 10 þe corde, and faldit þe samyn about his handis. Than said
 horaciane, be autorite of king Tullus Interpretoure of þir
 lawis, "I appeill⁴." And þus was his appellacioun devolutit
 afore þe pepill. The commoun pepill war movit to grete
 miseracioun in þare Iugement, specially be pietuous⁵ lamenta-
 15 cioun of þe auld man horacius, fader to þis horaciane þat
 slew his sister; ffor he allegit þat his dochter⁶ was Iustlie
 slane for hir demeritis,⁷ vthirwayis he suld haue punyst his
 son be þe law paternale In maist cruell maner þat mycht be
 devisit. Attoure þis agit man besocht⁸ þe pepill to suffir him
 20 nocht to be nakit and destitute of all his barnis, quhilk was
 þe samyn morrow sa proudly reiosing wth þe swetenes þareof.
 And in þe menetye he enbrasit his son, and began to
 schaw the spulejeis of þe thre Curaciane brethir, hingand in
 þe samyn place quhilk Is zit callit þe horaciane pillaris. "O
 25 Romanis" (said he) "haue 3e sa feirß & Innative cruelte in
 3oure hartis, þat 3e may se him bound vnder þe gallouß⁹
 wth grete torment & punycioun, quhom 3e saw laitlie decorit
 & triumphand wth hie victorie of 3our Inemyis. I beleif þe
 | albanis, his vnmerciful fais, mycht nocht behald sa terribil p. 52.
 30 sicht and cruelte done to¹⁰ him. Pas, þow burreo,¹¹ and bynd
 þai handis quhilkis latelie, quhen þai war armit, conquest sa
 hie empire to romane pepill. Pas, þow burreo, and covir þe
 hede of þat campioun quhilk is þe deliuerare of þis ciete fra

¹ Iugeis.⁴ appell.⁷ demeryteis.¹⁰ on.² hether.⁵ petewis.⁸ besoucht.¹¹ bureo.³ bureo.⁶ douchter.⁹ gallowis.

thirldome¹; hing vp his body in ane vnchancy tre; Skurge him
 now within þe pomerie amang þe horaciane pillaris & spulezeis
 conquest be him of Inemyis; or ellis skurge him vtouth² þe
 pomerie amang þe sepulturis of curacianis. 3e can haue him
 to na maner of placis³ within 3oure senzeorie, bot his grete 5
 (47). meritis and glore of * victorie sall ay deliuer him fra sic
 schamefull and vile punycioun." The pepill mycht nowthir
 suffir pacientlie the teris of þe fader nor 3it his curage (quhilk
 was of sic excellent constance in euey dangere) to periß;
 And þarefore assole3eit him fra þe deith, mare for admiracion 10
 and loving of vertew⁴ þan ony Iust merit of þe cauß. And
 3it þat þe said offence and slauchter sa manifestlie committit
 mycht be purgit be sum sacrifice & satisfaccioun, It was com-
 mandit be þe pepil þat the fader sal purge the son be ane
 parte of þe commoun and public money of þe toun. In þe 15
 mene tyme þe fader purgit his son with certane sacrificis
 namyt piaculis, quhilk remanit in vse mony 3eris [efter] with
 þe lynage of horacianis, for purgacioun of siclike offensis gif
 ony occurrit. The fader, to purge þe sone, dang ane staik
 in þe erde thortoure þe gate, nocht fer fra þe samyn places⁵ 20
 quhare his sone suld haue bene Iustifijt; And quhen he suld
 haue coverit his hede, as þe dome requirit, he set him down
 vnder þe said staik, to signifie þat he was vnder 3oik of
 subieccioun. this stayk is reparit all tymes quhen It fail3eis,
 and callit to our dayis þe staik of þe sister. This virgine 25
 horacia was buryit in þe samyn place⁵ quhare scho was slane
 p. 53. be hir | bruthir, in ane sepulture of quernell⁶ stanis.

¹ thirldome.² outof.³ place.

wertu.

⁵ plais.

quarnell.

How mecius dictator of Albanis causit the Veanis (48).
 and fidenatis to Invade þe romanis be promys¹
 of his supporte; Of þe grete prudence and crafty
 industrie of king Tullus aganis his Inemyis; how
 5 þe Veanis and fidenatis war discomfist, & mecius
 dictator drawin sindri for his demeritis.²

Ca. xi.

(XXVII) The pece continewit nocht lang betuix þe Albanis
 and romanis; ffor þe Albane pepill, be þare Invy & haterent
 10 (becaus þare public liberte was committit on þe chance of sa
 few knichtis), corruppit sa þe Ingyne of mecius þare dictator,
 þat quhen he saw his prudent devise succede nocht with sic
 felicite as he belevit, he kest³ him to recounsell⁴ him agane
 to the favoure of his pepill be wikkit and tressonabill wayis. And
 15 as he afore in tyme of were made pece,⁵ sa now in tyme of
 pece⁵ he kest³ him to fynd occasioun of were. This mecius,
 seing the pepill of his ciete of mare curage þan strenth, per-
 suadit sundri pepill liand about him on euery side to Invaid
 þe romanis *wit* opin weris, and reservit sic tressoun to his
 20 pepill (Becaus þai war confederate⁶ with romanis) þat his
 pepill vnder schaddow of þis allyance mycht mare eselie Invade
 the romanis quhen þai saw occasioun. The fidenatis, quhilkis
 war afore ane Colonye of romanis & confederate with the
 Veanis þare nychtbouris vnder ane opinion,⁷ made þame
 25 haistely for batall aganis þe romanis, be condition & promiss
 of þe Albanis to concur to þare supporte. Als sone as Tullus
 was aduertist þat þe fidenatis be opin rebellioun had denuȳcit
 were, he rasit⁸ ane strang army of romanis, togiddir *wit*
 mecius & þe Albanis, quhilkis he belevit to haue stand surelie
 30 at his opinioun aganis his Inemyis. And quhen he was cumin
 oure þe river of Anyen, he campit his army on þe brayis &

¹ to (!) promiseis.

³ keist.

⁵ pax.

⁷ appinzoun.

² demeryteis.

⁴ recounsaill.

⁶ confidarit.

⁸ raissit.

- p. 54. bordouris | *pair*of; And betuix þe place¹ quhare he was campit and the toune of fidenā, the Veanis *wit*h all þare army was
 (49). *cumin* *oure tyber. Thir Veanis, campit in þis place¹ afore rehersit, had þe sade river of tyber on þare richt wyng, and sa the fidenatis on thare left wyng (quhare þai war campit) had 5
 þe montanis. Tullus þan come fordwart *wit*h his army [of romanis] aganis þe Veanis, and arrayit þe Albanis with mecius þare dictator, to have fochtyn aganis þe fidenatis. Nochtþeles Mecius þe governour of Albanis was als nakit of manhede and curage as he was of faith, ffor he was sa fals and febil þat he 10
 durst nother remane *wit*h þe romanis nor 3it durst pertly² pas fra þame, And þarefore fled *wit*h slaw passage to þe montanis; and quhen he saw him selfe ane lairge space severit fra baith þe armyis, he gart display his ansen3e³ on hicht. And becaus he was flowand in his mynde & vncertane to quhat 15
 parte he wald assist, he began to array his batallis to cutt & drive oʊr þe tyme, ffor his purpois was (quhare euer þe victorie Inclynit) to concur *wit*h al his armye to þe samyn parte. The romanis, *quhilkis* stude nerrest him for þe tyme, had first grete admiracion quhat þis mecius Intendit, quhen 20
 þai saw þare sidis nakit of þare fallowis. In þe mene tyme ane knycht come to tullus on ane spedy horß, & schew how þe Albanis war fled. Tullus astonist be þis effray avowit xij⁴ preistis (*quhilkis* war namyt Salis) to be perpetually dedicate⁵ to mars god of batall; And attoure avowit⁶ to big twa tempillis 25
 in þe honour of twa goddis namyt palnes & dredoure, And in þe mene tyme he reprevit dispiteusly⁷ þis knicht þat schew þir [ty]thingis. Syne *wit*h schil voce (þat his Inemyis mycht here) he commandit his pepill to return *wit*h grete curage in batell aganis þare Inemyis, Saying þai aucht nocht to be astonist, for 30
 þe Albanis war nocht past to þe montanis bot alanerlie be his avise, And war commandit be him to pas about þe fidenatis & to Invade þare sidis quhare þai war maist nakit. And in-
 p. 55. continent | he commandit all his horsmen to erect and bere vp

¹ plais.³ ansyn3e.⁵ didycate.⁷ dispitewislie.² peirtlie.⁴ wowit twelf.⁶ wow[it].

þare speris and dartis in þare handis, quhilks doingis war sa
 crafty þat þe samyn hid þe fleing of Albanis fra sicht of his
 futemen. Attoure, þe horßmen of romanis (quhilks saw clerelie
 þe fleing of þe saidis Albanis) belevit euery thing to be as
 5 þai herd tullus say, And facht¹ sa cruelly þat þe fidenatis þare
 Inemyis with huge dredoure war astonist; for mony of þame
 vnderstude *the latyne² tounge as colonys of romanis, And (50).
 belevit (as þai herd þe king say) þat þe Albanis suld cum
 haistelie on þare sidis quhare þai war maist nakit of pepill.
 10 And þarefore dredand (quhen þe albanis war discendit fra þe
 montanis) to be inclusit on euery side fra þare toun of fidenā,
 þai gaif bakkis. On quhom tullus followit *witʰ* grete furie, &
 brocht þame to vtir discomfitoure, And Incontinent *witʰ* recent
 victorie come more feirsleie on þe veanis, quhilks war abasit³
 15 and brokin be discomfitoure of þare marrowis, throw quhilk
 þai mycht *nocht* sustene þe dynt of romanis. And þocht þe
 river of tyber was Impediment to þame to fle abak, ȝit þai
 wer constrenit to haue þare vtir reskourß to þe samyn. And
 quhen þai wer cummyn to þe said Rivere, ane parte þareof
 20 schamefully nakit þame self of þare wapynnys, and throw fere
 of þare Inemyis ran as blynd and rammyst pepill in þe wattir.
 Vtheris, vncertane quhidir⁴ þai suld fle or fecht, abaid sa
 lang on þe Rivere side, quhil þai war oppresit⁵ and slane be
 romanis. Treuth is, afore þai dayis na batall of romanis was
 25 sarare on þare Inemyis þan was þis last new rehersit.⁶
 (XXVIII) Mecius dictator, seing þis gloriuis victorie inclynand
 to Romanis, discendit haistelie fra þe montanis, As he wald
 haue made haisty support to Romanis be his army; and schew
 to king Tullus þat he was hertlie⁷ reiosit of þe victory fallin
 30 to him. On þe tothir side tullus, dissimiland⁸ his mynde,
 resaut Mecius *witʰ* benyng & | tendir contenance; And þat p. 56.
 Ilk thing mycht be done with more felicity he commandit
 mecius to conione all his folkis togiddir with romanis, ffor
 the nixt morow he wald mak ane sacrifice lustrale, als sone

¹ faucht.³ abaissit.⁵ opprest.⁷ hairtly.² lating.⁴ quhidar.⁶ now reheirssit.⁸ dissimbland.

as licht apperit. On þe nixt morow, quhen euery thingis war
reddy for þe sacrifice, he *commandit* baith þe pepill to compere¹
to his concioun; and quhen þe seriandis had with þare noyið
and hohas warnit in speciall þe albanis to here þe kingis
concioun, Mony of þame war sa movit be desire of novellis 5
and to here þe king of romanis mak his concioun, þat þai
thristit in on euery side, and made þame self nerrest to the
king. Incontinent ane romane legioun, devisit² be crafty
Industry of king Tullus, stude armit *witʰ* wapynnys on euery
side about þir Albanis; for þe charge was gevin sa straitlie³ 10
(51). *to þe centuriouns⁴ þat þai behufit to execute þe *sammyn* but
ony dilacioun.⁵ Than Tullus said in þis maner: "O romanis,
gif euer afore þis houre succedit ony felicite in batall, for þe
quhilk ʒe aucht first to gif þe loving and gløre þareof to
Immortale goddis, And secundlie to ʒoure onelie manhede and 15
curatione, The samyn apperit in þe last batall recentlie strekin⁶
be ws aganis oure cruel Inemyis. ffor in þis last batall we
faucht *nocht* alanerlie *witʰ* oure Inemyis, bot als *witʰ* maist
tressonabil slicht and falset of oure *nychtbouris*⁷ & freyndis,
& in sa fer oure batall was þe mare dangerus. herefore, þat 20
na fals nor vane opinioun dissaue ʒow, ʒe sall vnderstand þat
þe Albanis left my array and fled to þe montanis but ony
command of me, ffor sic tressonabill fleing come neuer be my
Industry. And howbeit I dissimillit, schewing⁸ sic thingis
done be my counsale, ʒit þe samyn was done to þat fyne þat 25
baith ʒoure curage suld *nocht* be drawin fra batall, quhen ʒe
knewe *nocht* þe fleing of ʒoure freyndis fra ʒoure supporte,
And þat ʒoure Inemyis mycht haue extreme fere & dredoure
p. 57. in þare myndis, | herand þe albanis (as I schew) to cum
haistely on þare sidis. Attoure the albanis ar *nocht* accusit 30
be me for þis tressoun sa manifestlie⁹ *committit* in perdicoun
of my pepil, ffor þai did *nocht* bot followit (as ʒe wald haue
done) þare capitane. gif I wald haue drawin ʒow to ony

¹ conpeir.² devyssit.³ craftely.⁴ sentoryonis.⁵ delatioun.⁶ strykin.⁷ nebouris.⁸ schawing.⁹ manefeistlie.

place, 3e wald sone haue obtemperat and obeyit my chargis. Mecius is *nocht* onely þe fals and tressonabil dissaver of me and 3ow in to oure Iorney,¹ Bot is als þe hale dissaver of þis soroufful and maist dangerus batal latelie strikkin. he is þe
 5 onelie brekare of alliance and confederacioun betuix þe romanis and Albanis. Attoure, vthir tratouris sal attempt siclike besines, gif I punyß² him *nocht* sa Iustlie þat he may be ane notabill exempil³ to all pepill to do sic treson⁴ in tymes cummyng.” The centuriouns, armyt in þare best awise, stude about mecius
 10 on euery side, & tullus spak furth þe remanent of his orisoun on þis maner as he began afore. “That gude chance, felicite, and welth may succede als wele to 3ow Romanis and Albanis as to me, It is now my determit⁵ purpois to transport all þe Albane pepill to rome, And to gif *nocht* onelie þe ciete of Rome
 15 to þare * Inhabitacioun, bot als to decore the nobillis and (32). principall men þareof *wit* auctorite amang oure faderis and senaturis, to þat fyne þat baith þir pepill sall be in tymes cuming allanerlie ane ciete and ane commoun weil; ffor as sum tyme þe empire of Albanis was dividit in two pepill, sa
 20 now be þe samyn maner baith þir pepill sall returne agane vnder ane empire and body.” The albanis, inclusit but armoure on þis wise within þe garnist oist of romanis, was pensive and drawin in sindri desire and myndis. *Nocht*þeles Ilkman had sic dredoure þat þai kepit silence but ony wourdis. Than
 25 said king Tullus in þis wise. “Gif þow, mecius fufficius, dictatour of Albanis, *mycht* ony maner of way haue leirned to obserue thy faith and promiß, I suld erare haue correckit þi maneris, *reservand* þi liffe, þan to haue put þe to deith. Bot now sen þi Ingyne & falset | ar Incurabil, þow sall lere p. 58.
 30 all pepill be þi notabil punycioun to obserue þe band of faith and promiß quhilkis ar violate be þe; and as þow was euer doubill and variant⁶ in þi werkis, & be þe samyn drew þe veanis and fidenatis in displeßer of Romanis, sa sall now þi body be drawin in diuerß partis. Incontinent he gart twa

¹ Iurny.² pvnis.³ mortall (!) exampill.⁴ tressoun.⁵ deteirmyt.⁶ waryant.

cheriotis¹ be brocht afore him, and band þis Mecius speldit betuix þe twa cheriottis,¹ and quhen þe horß was chasit in sindri partis, Ilk cheriott² reft and dysmembrit³ sa mekil of him as was bund to þe cheriot.⁴ All þe pepill drew away þare ene fra þis schamefull sicht. This was þe first and last 5 cruell pvnicioun þat euer þe romanis tuke on þare transgressouris, but ony exempil or consideracioun of humane lawis; for þe romanis may haue all vthir tymes þat glore, þat na pepill was sa gracijs and soft in pvnissing of þare transgressouris or subdittis as þai wer.

10

- (53). how the ciete of Alba was distroyit, & all þe pepill þareof transportit to rome; how grete nowmer of sabyenis war discomfist and slane be romanis; Of vncouth meruellis; of þe sacrifice Nouem^ddial and of þe deith of Tullus. Ca. xij. 15

(XXIX) Quhill sic thingis war done be tullus, ane large nowmer of horsmen war send to þe ciete of Alba to transport þe pepill þareof to rome. And eftir þame war send certane legiouns of futemen to euert and cast down þe foresaid ciete to þe ground. fra⁵ thir legiouns war enterit within þe portis⁶ of 20 Alba, þar was noch sic dyn and dredoure amang þe Albanis as vsis to be amang captiue pepill, quhen noyis and clamoure of armit men rynnys in maist fury distroying euery thing be fire and swerde, þare ciete tane be men of armes, þare portis brokin, thare wallis deieckit be force of rammys⁷ to the grund, and 25 finalie all þare castellis and strenthis tane be force. Bot erare was amang þe albanis ane sorowfull and drery silence, quhill p. 59. w^{it} sic stil | sadnes depressit all þare myndis and curage, þat all þare wisdome decayit in þat extreme aduersite, And throw þare

¹ cheryotis.³ demembrit.⁵ ffor, *A.*⁷ Ramis.² cheryete.⁴ cheryote.⁶ partis, *A.*

dredoure forjett quhat þai suld leif behind þame, or quhat þai suld turf with þame. And þan began euery ane of þame to demand vthir, gif þai suld stand in þare dur¹ threschaldis, or gif þai suld pas as vagaboundis² and vncertane pepill throw þare
 5 howsis³ & tak þare leif, as neuer to se þe samyn agane. At last, fra þe noyis of horsmen began to rise, commanding þe albanis to Ische out of þe ciete, þan was herd þe huge rummylling⁴ and sound of brokin housis⁵ & wallis in all partis þareof. Than rais þe dust of powder⁶ fra diuers partis of þe ciete, & ourecoverit þe
 10 samyn with maist vile & terribil cloud. Incontinent Ilk persoun tuke þe thing þat he mycht bere, and left his natue goddis and housis⁵ quhare he was bred and nurist. * The albanis, departing (54). on þis wise in grete cumpanyis to pas to Rome, fillit þe gatis sa full of pepill þat skarslie mycht ane of þame pas beside ane vthir.
 15 Than the pietuous⁷ sicht and commiseracioun of Ilkane of þame to ane vthir maid þame to fall in lamentabil & continuall teris; mony miserabil cryis war herd, specially⁸ of wemen; for quhen þai war passand by þare tempillis, quhilkis war þan occupyit, or ellis segeit be men of armes, Apperit þat þai left behynd þame
 20 þare goddis (as presoneris) In þare Inemyis handis. Als sone as þe Albanis war halely Ischit out of þis ciete, The romanis kest⁹ doun all þe public and private houfis⁵ of þis ciete, and equate þe wallis þareof to þe ground. Thus was þe ciete of Alba (quhilk stude iij^e¹⁰ 3eris in grete magnificence and policy¹¹) brocht be
 25 ane¹² houris lauboure to vtir eversioun, and na thing sauffit in It sauf onelie the houfis⁵ and tempillis of þe goddis; for it was commandit to desist þarefra be generall¹³ edict and proclama- cioun of tullus. (XXX) Rome began þus Ilk day to rise¹⁴ mare and mare in policy¹¹ and richeß be rewyne of Alba, and þe pepill
 30 þareof augmentit | with doubil nowmer; And for þe samyn cauß p. 60. king Tullus sett out his ciete with mare boundis & tuke in mont Celius. And to mak þe pepill to resorte with mare frequent

¹ durre.² wagaboundis.³ housis.⁴ rummeling.⁵ houssis.⁶ & pulder.⁷ petewis.⁸ spetiall.⁹ keist.¹⁰ four hunder.¹¹ polecy.¹² a.¹³ gem Ryall (!).¹⁴ ryß.

habitacioun on þe said montane, he biggit his palice riall on þe
said montane, quhare he duelt þe residew of his dayis. Eftir
þis he chesit¹ out þe princes and maist nobill men of Alba,
as Iulianis,² Seruilianis, quintianis, geganianis, Curacianis, and
chelianis; and made þame faderis and Senaturis of his ciete, þat 5
[þe] commoun weill suld rise als weill be sic besynes as be
vtheris. And in þe honoure of þir senaturis, quhilkis war now
ekit be his auctorite, he maid ane counselhouß in maner of ane
tempill, quhare thir Senatouris suld dreß all materis concernyng³
the public weill in tymes cummyn.⁴ This houß Is callit ȝit to 10
oure dayis hostiliane. And þat sum thing be cummyn of þir new
pepill mycht be ekit to þe strenth & Roboracioun of all religioun
and ordoure afore divisit, he chesit out ten turmys of horßmen,
Ilk turme contenyng xxx^{ti} men in nowmer, and supportit þe auld
legiouns of Romanis be þe said nowmer, and wrate new nowmer 15
(55). in þe samyn gyse. *Tullus, confiding in þis new strenth of
pepill brocht to his ciete, denuȝcit were to the sabinis, quhilkis
war ane pepill in þai dayis maist pussant in erde, nixt þe
Ethruschis, baith in men riches and armoure. Sone eftir, baith
þir pepil Invadit vthir with Iniuris, and þocht þe reddreß⁵ þareof 20
was askit, ȝit nane was made on athir side. Tullus complenit⁶
þat his merchandis war oftymes tane and spuleȝete be sabinis,
doing þare erandis beside þe tempill of þe goddes namyt feronia.
On þe tothir side, þe Sabinis complanit þat þare rebellis and
transgressouris fled to Asile, the refuge of rome, and war þare 25
Intertenyt⁷ but ony reclame or punycioun eftir following. This
was þe occasioun of weris betuix þe romanis and sabinis. The
p. 61. sabinis, remembring wele | ane large parte of þare pepill brocht
be tacijs to rome, And als how þe romanis be transportacioun
of Albanis war doublit in new power of pepill, Sett þare 30
besines to conqueß support of all vthir pepill baith strangearis
& nyctbouris aganis þe romanis. The land of Ethruria was
liand nere þe saidis sabinis, bot þe Veanis war nerrer and mare
aprocheand to þame. All wayis þe sabinis persuadit mony of þe

¹ cheissit.² Julyens.³ conservyng (!).⁴ cumyng.⁵ redres.⁶ complanit.⁷ enterit (!).

said pepill with small lauboure to assist to þare opinioun, throw
roust and auld¹ haterent of weris (quhilk's þai bure wíth boldin
hart's aganis þe romanis); and mony of þir pepill vagabound and
ouresett wíth pouerte tuke wagis of þe sabynis. ² Nochtþeles þir
5 foresaid pepil wald nocht send opinlie supporte to þe sabynis,²
for þe faith and band of trewis (as It was condicionate afore be
romulus) was Inviolately obseruit be þe Veanis; and howbeit þe
faith of vthir vile and Indigent pepill was brokin, It was þe leß
admiracioun. quhen þe romanis & sabinis war makand þare
10 provisioun wíth maist diligence (quhilk of þame suld Invaíd vthir
sonest with batell) Tullus rasiť³ haistelie his army & come first
in þe sabyne landis. followit ane richt sare and terribill bargane⁴
beside ane place callit þe malicius & vnhappy wod, quhare þe
romanis, ekit be huge nowmer of futemen & horsemen cumin (as
15 said is) to þare ciete, war richt pussant and strang abone þare
Inemyis. Incontinent, be haisty Irrupcioun of þe horßmen, all
þe array & ordoure of Sabynis was sa brokin, þat þai mycht
nowþir fecht nor fle but Innouerabill⁵ slauchter following on
þame. (XXXI) * quhen þe sabinis war dantit in þis maner, and (56).
20 maist tryumphe apperand to Tullus & þe commoun weill of his
realme and pepill, It was schawin to him and þe faderis, þat It
ranyt stanis continually in mont Albane; & becaus þir tithingis |
mycht skarsly be trowit, sindri persounis war send furth to p. 62.
explore gif þe samyn was trewe; In quhais sicht þe stanis fell
25 als ythandlie out of þe lift as dois þe round hailstanis, quhen þai
ar drevin be violence of wyndis in þe erde. Attoure, apperit
to þir persounis send furth in þis behalf⁶ þat þai herd huge
vocis amang þe hie woddis of þe said montane, commanding þe
Albanis to mak sacrifice to þare goddis on þe manere as þare
30 eldaris and faderis did afore; ffor þe Albanis forzett all þe
sacrifice of þare native goddis als sone as þai war departit fra
þare native toun & cuntre, and had owþir ressaut þe sacrifice
of romane goddis, or ellis war sa commouit aganis fortoun for
euersioun of þare ciete, þat þai left þe service of þare goddis

¹ hald.²⁻³ om.³ raissit.⁴ bergane.⁵ Innouerabill.⁶ behaf.

vndone. The Romanis (becaus þir vncouth prodigies¹ apperit)
 Institute² ane new sacrifice, callit in þai dais þe sacrifice nouen-
 diall. The ressoun quhy³ þai Institute⁴ þis sacrifice was owthir
 throw þis celestiall and heuinlie voce þat was herd in mont
 albane (for þat opinioun is haldin), or ellis þai Institute⁴ þis 5
 sacrifice be command of þe divinouris namyt Auruspices. This
 sacrifice was haldin in sic sole^mnite, þat ay (quhen ony prodigios
 or vncouth wounder apperit)⁵ þe feries war þar eftir nyne dayis.⁵
 Nocht lang eftir, ane terribil pestilence rang abone þe romanis,
 And ȝit þis marciall & maist werelie prince mycht nocht suffir his 10
 pepill to rest or dull in sleuth; bot throw his active life sustenit
 þame in continual exercioun⁶ of cheuelry;⁷ ffor he traistit þat
 his pepill suld haue bettir heill in þare bodyis quhen þai
 war travellit in þare werelie campis þan quhen þai war solpit⁸
 at hame in sleuth and Idilnes; quhil at last he was trublit 15
 with vncouth & difficil infirmite, throw þe quhilk his feirþ & |
 p. 63. mychty curage was sa brokin, That quhare he held afore na
 thing sa degrading to Imperiall dignite as to leif in religious and
 contemplative life, he become suddanly alterit and thrall to
 euery supersticioun grete and small; And finalie began to 20
 subdew his pepill to sic devote maneris þat þai belevit halely
 (57). þare realme to returne to þe samyn estate and gover*nance as It
 was afore in þe tyme of Numa pompilius, And als traistit na
 succourþ nor medicyne to cum to þare infirme and wery bodyis,
 without sum pece⁹ war grantit be commiseracioun of þe goddis 25
 to perdoun þare tressonable and wikkit offenþ. It is said finalie
 þat þis nobil prince was reding þe commentaris of Numa pom-
 pilius, and be aventure fand certain occult & solemne sacrifice
 in þe saidis commentaris, maid in þe honour of Iupiter Eliseus.
 And becaus he nowthir began nor ȝit endit þe said sacrifice with 30
 sic Reuerence and divyne cerymonis as war expedient, he tynt
 nocht alanerlie his lauboure, but ony thankis or merit^{is} of þe

¹ prodegiis.² Iustlie (!).³ for quhilk.⁴ Iustice (!).⁵—⁵ þe feryis war com-
mandit Nyne dayis

þair efter.

⁶ exercitioun.⁷ cheuilre.⁸ sopit.⁹ peax.

goddis, bot was als strikkin *wit* thunder¹ and flambis² within þe tempill (quhare he made þe sacrifice) to nocht, becaus he did nocht his divyne ³*seruice* as he suld haue done. Tullus rang xxxij *3eris* In grete glore abone þe romanis.

- 5 How Ancus marcius was made king of romanis; how
 þe latynis contrare þare band of confederacioun
 Invadit þe romanis; Of þare proude ansuere made
 to romanis desiring reddres of þir Iniuris, and of þe
 forme and maner to denunze were. Ca. xijj.
- 10 (XXXII) Tullus beand deceissit⁴ in þis maner, the kingdome
 of Romanis was devoluit (as þe vse was fra þe begynnyng) to þe
 faderis; and sone eftir þai chesit ane regent to governe þe ciete
 quhill þe pepill war degestlie resolut, quha suld be king. quhen
 þis regent had made his comites (as was accustomyt⁵), þe pepill
 15 chesit Ancus marcius to be king, and þe faderis confermit him.
 This Ancus was nepote to Numa pompilius, gottin on his
 dochter. Als sone as he began | to regnne, he considerit in his p. 64.
 memorie the renovne and glore of his gudeschir, and how þe
 empire of þis last king tullus was governit in maist felicite
 20 allwayis, sauf onelie þe rite and cerymonis of divine religioun
 was neclectit,⁶ or ellis nocht * done in dew maner as þai war (58).
 institute; and for þis cauß he thocht na besines sa gude as to
 mak þe divyne sacrifice to þe goddis, of⁷ þe samyn gise as þai
 war institute be Numa. And þat sic thingis mycht be done mare
 25 eselie be þe pepill, he commandit þe grete bischop to publice
 and schaw furth þe bukis of Numa his gudeschir; In quhilkis
 war contenit þe proceß and maner of euery religioun be him
 devisit; And the samyn to be drawin out of his bukis to be

¹ thonder.² *Second scribe in B.*⁴ decessit.⁶ neclekit.² flammys.*resumes here (p. 65).*⁵ accustomit.⁷ on.

Inserit in public tabillis, quhare all þe pepill mycht behald þe samyn. Ancus, throw thir and siclike doingis, was traistit be his cietezanis richt desirus¹ of pece, And be sindry cieteis approcheand to his empire, to cum to þe maneris and religious Institucioun of Numa his gudeschir. for þir causis þe latynis 5 (quhilkis war confederate afore with romanis In tyme of tullus) began to erect þare curage, and be suddane Incursioun tuke ane² large pray of gudis out of þe romane landis; And quhen þe romanis had send þare legatis desiring redreis of þir Iniuris, Thay ansuerit with proude wourdis, saying, þai held þe king of 10 Romanis for ane slaw and effemynate prince, and belevit nocht bot he suld pas his dayis but ony glore of armes amang templis and altaris of goddis. Ancus had Ingyne indifferen³ baith to were & peace, havand in remembrance baith þe religious life of Numa & þe marciall empire of Romulus; And howbeit he 15 consyderit þat pece was maist necessare to þe empire of Numa his gudeschir, becaus þe said Numa had as þan mony ferß and young pepill, zit he thocht he mycht nocht obtene pece sa lichtlie as Numa did, quhilk⁴ purchest pece but Iniure of nychtbouris liand about him for þe tyme. At last, seing his pacience mokit 20 and contempnit⁵ be þe latyns, he thocht best (as þe sessoun⁶ occurrit) erare to follow þe maneris of tullus þan Numa. here-
p. 65. fore as Numa in tyme | of peace made mony religious ritis, sa he thocht in þe tyme of were to be author of marciall cerymonis; And nocht alanerlie to lere þe pepill how batellis suld be led 25 aganis þare Inemyis, Bot als be quhat ordour and werely proceß þare batellis sal be denuncit. And first he declarit þe maneris and custume,⁷ how redreis suld be desirit of al Iniuris. This rite of chevelry and repeticioun of gudis began first be ane
(59). anciant pepil namyt equicoli, quhilk re*manis now with þe 30 preistis namyt fecialis. The legate, als sone as he is cumin to þe marchis and vtir boundis of þat pepil (quhare he desiris redres), sal first covir his hede with certane thredis maid of woll, & say in þis maner: "here me, O Iupiter; here me,

¹ desyris.³ indifferent.⁵ cont[e]mnit.⁷ custome.² a.⁴ quhilkis, A.⁶ sesoñ.

O 3e Induellaris and Inhabitantis of þis land to quhilk I am direckit." In þe mene tyme he namys þe land. "here me, O 3e resoun and Iustice, for I am public messinger of Romane pepill. I come here as legate, send baith meiklie¹ and
 5 Iustlie. Tharefore gif faith and credence² to my wordis." Thir wourdis beand said, he desiris redres of sic Iniuris as war to him committit, and takis Iupiter in witnes, saying þir wourdis: "gif I desire þir men or þir gudis Iniustlie or wikkittie to be randerit to romane pepil or to me, Than, O Iupiter, suffir me neuer to
 10 returne hame in my cuntre wth my life or my hele." Thir wordis beand said, The legate³ sall enter within þe cuntre⁴ to quhilk⁴ he Is direckit, and sall repete þe wordis⁵ afore rehersit to þe first man þat he metis, owthir be þe gate or in þe entres of þe toun; and siclike sal repete þir wourdis⁵ wth changinge of
 15 vthir letill⁶ cerymonis quhen he Interis⁷ in þe courte or merket⁸ within þe said toun. And gif þe men and gudis quhilkis he desiris be nocht randerit⁹ and restorit agane within xxx⁴ dais (ffor þat nowmer was ay accustomyt for þe more solempnite), þan sall he denunce batall in þis maner: "here me, O Iupiter; here
 20 me, O Iuno; here me, O quyryne; and here me, O celestiall terrestriall & Infernale goddis; I tak 3ow in witnes þat þe pepill"⁸ (quhilk he namys for þe tyme) "be Iniust, quhilk wil nocht mak satisfaccioun nor redress for þe offencis¹⁰ done, according to richt. And protestis here þarefore quhen we ar | returnit in p. 66.
 25 oure cuntre, þat we may prudentlie avise with oure nobillis how and be quhat maner we may best recovir þai gudis quhilkis richtwisly pertenis to ws." Als sone as þis legate is returnit to rome, and takis avisement of þe senatouris quhat thingis ar to be done, Than sal þe king tak consultacioun of þe said Senate
 30 and faderis; And be his wourdis [sall] schaw for quhat occasioun, for quhat accioun and debate, þe fader patrat of þe quirites and romane pepill has denuñcit were to þe fader patrat of prisk latynis and to all þe latyne pepill. And sall express quhat þir gudis or Iniuris war quhilkis suld haue bene re*storit (60).

¹ mekle.³ legatis, *both*.⁵⁻⁵ *om.*⁷ entres.⁹ randrit.² creditt.⁴⁻⁴ quhair.⁶ litill.⁸ marcat.¹⁰ offens.

or reparit be þe latynis to romanis, and how þe samyn ar on
na maner of way done. And quhen þe king has said þir wourdis,
þan sall he say to þe fader or senatouris of quhilkis he first askis
counsale: "O fader, quhat thinkis thow to be done in þis
mater?" þan sal þe senatoure or fader þat is demandit be þe 5
king say in þis wise: "I decerne and Iugis all þir gudis or
Iniuris afore rehersit to be recouerit with Iust & lauchfull batall.
I consent hereto,¹ and decernis þe samyn to be done." Quhen
þis senatoure has gevin this sentence in þis maner, þan sal þe
remanent faderis & senaturis be demandit in þe samyn wise, 10
Ilkane in ordoure eftir vthir; And quhen þe maist parte &
nowmer of senaturis war foundin of þe samyn votis as þe first
has schewin, and þe batall declarit Iust be generall consent of
all þe ordoure of senaturis, Than It is accustomyt² þat þe feciall
sall pass to þe out marchis of þe pepill quhilk Is to be Invadit be 15
þis batall, and bere in hand ane lance³ or ane darte, with þe
poynt of þe samyn brynt and scharpe, Or ellis hedit with
Irne; And in presence of thre young children⁴ say þir wourdis:
"Becaus þe prisk latyne pepill, Or ellis þe prisk latyne men,
has⁵ falejit⁶ or done Iniuris aganis þe quirites & romane pepil, 20
Tharefore þe said quirites & romane pepil has commandit batal
to be denuncit aganis þe prisk latyne pepill, Or ellis þe quiritis
p. 67. and senate of Rome | has consentit decretit and adiugit batall to
be led aganis þe prisk latyne pepill. And for þir causis and
ressouns⁷ I, þe preist feciall, with advise of romane pepill, makis 25
and denuncis batall to þe prisk latyne pepill and to þe prisk
latyne men." And als sone as he had said þir wourdis he flang⁸
his lance or darte within þe landis of latyne pepill; And be this
and siclike maner of way þe redreß was desirit fra þe latynis, and
batall denuncit to thame. The samen maner of denunciacioun 30
of weris and desire of redreß was obseruate mony ȝeris eftir be
þe posterite of romanis.

¹ pairto.³ lence.⁵ hale, *A.*; hes, *B.*⁷ resonis.² accustomit.⁴ childerne.⁶ failzeit.⁸ slang.

How Ancus wan sindri townis of Sabynis, and (61).
 transportit þe pepil þareof to rome; how latumo
 the riche citezane of terquyne come with his wiffe
 and gudis in rome and was namyt terquyne; Of
 5 þe vncouth mervel þat apperit in his viage¹ and
 how he was [left] tutoure testamentare to² ancus
 sonnys. Ca. xiiij.

(XXXIII) Efter þat king Ancus had committit þe charge of
 all dyvyne and religious ritis to þe flamynis and vthir preistis of
 10 his realme, he rasit his oist and be preið of armes tuke ane riche
 and strang ciete of latynis namyt politore; Syne be exempil and
 Imitacioun of vthir prudent kingis his antecessouris (quhilkis ekit
 þe romane empire be ressaving of þare vincust Inemyis within þe
 toun of Rome)³ he transportit all þe pepill of politore to þe said
 15 toun.³ And becaus he persaut þat þe auld romanis had biggit
 sa mony houff⁴ rising in grete nowmer about þe palice ryall, þat
 þai mycht nocht haue sufficient and pleasand lugeing with in þe
 toun; Attoure þe Sabynis and latynis be fouth and multitude of
 pepill had fillit all rowmes with þare houff⁵ beside þe toure of
 20 capitoll & mont Celius; ffor þis causis Ancus dilatit⁶ his ciete to
 mont Aventyne, þat his new pepill þe cietezanis of politore mycht
 Inhabit þe samyn. And to caus þe said mont Aventyne to be
 ekit with more frequent nowmer of pepill, he ekit to it new
 cietezanis of þe townes namyt | tellenes and ficana, eftir þat þe p. 68.
 25 samyn was subdewit to his empire. [and] eftir þis he returnit
 with his recent and victorius army to þe said toun [of] politore,
 becaus þe latynis began to garnis⁷ þe samyn with new municion
 and pepill, eftir þat It was left be him in his last Iournay,⁸ and
 finalie brocht þe samyn to vter euersioun, The wallis and houff⁹
 30 þareof equate to þe ground, to þat fyne þat it suld nocht be in

¹ wayage.² of.³—³ om.⁴ housis.⁵ houff.⁶ delatate.⁷ granis.⁸ Iornay.⁹ housis.

tymes cummyng ane generall resset¹ to his Inemyis. At last þis
marciall & maist werely prince transportit all his ordinance &
(62). army to medulla, ane strang toun of latynis, quhare * It was
fochtin lang tyme wíth variant & doutsum victorie; ffor þe fore-
said toun was strang be municions and weil garnist wíth men of 5
armes. And becaus þe romane campis stude opinlie afore þe
said toun, followit frequent skarmussing² betuix þe romanis and
latynis. At last Ancus come with þe hale power of his army
aganis þe latynis, and put þame to vtir discomfitoure; Syne
returnit wíth huge pray of men & gudis to rome. Throw þis 10
victorie mony thousandis of latyne pepill war transportit fra þare
native ciete to rome, to quhais habitacioun war gevin certane
mansions beside the tempil of þe goddes murthea, to þat fyne
þat mont³ aventyne suld be cōziunyt to þe palace. Attoure,
mont³ Ianikle⁴ was ekit and drawin at þis tyme within þe 15
boundis of þis toun, Nocht for þat cauß þat the pepill had
penurite of rowmes to þare habitacioun within þe toun, bot to
þat fyne þat þe said montane suld nocht be ane mvnicioun to
ressait of Inemyis sum vthir tymes agane þe toun. It was þare-
fore found expedient þat þe said mont Ianikil⁵ sall nocht onelie 20
be drawin within þe wallis of þe ciete, bot als for commodite of
passage, þat ane brig mycht be more esely drawin oure tiber fra
þe said mont Ianikil⁵ to þe toun. This was þe first brig þat evir
was made oure tiber, and was callit sublicius, þat is to say, ane
brig of tre. Sic thingis done, king Ancus inclusit his toun in⁶ 25
p. 69. euery parte wíth ane fowsy,⁷ quhilk | was callit quiritiū in þai
dayis. This fowsy⁷ was þe mare strang defence to þe toun, þat
It was drawin on plane ground on euery side. quhen Ancus
had ekit his empire with sic fouth of pepill, began to rise⁸ Ilk day
⁹ occult slauchteris and cruelteis in his ciete be confusit⁹ defference 30
of gude and evil werkis; And þarefore to repreß sic Iniquiteis, ane
presoun was edifyit in myddis of þe toun beside þe merket.¹⁰
thus was þe ciete of Rome nocht onelie dilatit with mare ampill
boundis þan afore during þe empire of þis prince, bot als war

¹ resait.²⁻³ om.⁵ Ianicle.⁷ fousey.⁹⁻⁹ om.² scarmusching.⁴ Ianicule.⁶ on.⁸ riß.¹⁰ marcat.

ekit to þe senȝeorie þareof mony vthir landis and prouincis liand
 about þe samyn. þe grete wod¹ [of] Mesea was tane fra þe
 empire of Veanis, throw quhilk þe empire of Romanis was dilatit
 with ampil boundis to þe seyis. he biggit als In þe mouth of
 5 tyber þe ciete callit hostia, And mony Salynis² war edifyt³ about
 þe samyn. * And becaus his marciall dedis succedit with thir (63).
 and siclike feliciteis, he reparit þe tempil of Iupiter feretrius with
 mare ampil rowmes & magnificence þan afore. (XXXIV) quhill
 king Ancus was regnand thus in⁴ Rome, latumo, ane man of
 10 Industry and grete riches, left þe ciete of Tarquyne and come
 to rome, be esperance alanerlie & desire of honouris. This
 latumo had na hope to conques honouris or riches in þe ciete of
 tarquyne, becaus he was cummyn of vncouth and strange blude,
 for he was son to Daramathus citezane of þe toun of corinthy,
 15 quhilk was banist fra þe sammyne be sedicioun and duelt with his
 wiffe in þe ciete of terquyne; On quham he had two sonnys, þat
 ane namyt latumo and þis vthir Aruns. latumo levit behind his
 fader, and was hale heretoure to his faderis heretage and gudis.
 Aruns deceissit⁵ afore his fader, and left his wife grete with
 20 childe; and sone eftir þe deith of Aruns deceissit daramathus his
 fader, quhilk havand⁶ na cognissance⁷ þat his sonnys wife was
 with chylde, left nane of his gudis be his testament to his nepote
 afore his deith. ⁸This childe, quhilk was borne eftir his | gude- p. 70.
 schirris deceið and succeding to⁸ na portion of his gudis, was
 25 namyt for his Indigence and pouerte Egerius. On the tothir
 side, þe grete riches þat latumo gat be his faderis deith rasit his
 mynde with gude curage. At last throw his gudeli behavingis
 and fame of his riches, he maryit ane lady borne of Illuster &
 gentil lynage and blude, namyt Tanaquill. This woman was of
 30 sa hie sprete, þat scho mycht noch suffir hir husband to be
 estymeit⁹ with leß honouris þan efferit to his estate; and þare-
 fore seing þe hethruschis (quhilkis war cietazanis of þe said

¹ god (!).⁵ decessit.⁸—⁸ And succed-

ris deith þis child

² sabynis (!). ⁶ avand (!).

ing to wes borne

quhilk (!).

³ edifyit.⁷ cognossance.

eftir his gudeschir-

⁹ estemit.⁴ in to.

toun of terquyne) Vylepend hir husband becaus he was ane
 strangeare¹ and cummyn of vncouth blude, scho mycht nocht
 suffir þare vnkyndenes, bot sett aside all lufe and kyndenes [and
 fervent cherite] þat scho bure to hir natiue cuntre; And to bring
 hir husband to more renoun and honouris, determit² to change 5
 hir habitacioun out of terquyne, And to leif þe residew of hir³
 dayis in Rome; ffor rome apperit moist ganand to vertwus⁴ &
 vailþeand campiouns, becaus þe samyn was ful of vncouth and
 new pepill, and euery vertew sa apprisit in þe samyn þat ane
 man mycht cum þarethrow haistelie to hie nobilite and honouris, 10
 as weill apperit be Tacius, ffor þocht he was ane Sabyne ȝet he
 (64). was king of romanis. Siclike Numa pompilius was *brocht fra
 Cures his habitacioun, and maid king of romanis. And Ancus
 Marcius (quhais moder was ane Sabyne), Nocht vnlike to þe
 maneris of Numa, was þan regnand in rome. Thir and siclike 15
 ressouns & desire of honouris persuadit lichtlie latumo (howbeit
 he and his moder war borne in þe ciete of terquyne) to leif þe
 samyn and to pas to rome. At last þis latumo and his wiffe
 Tanaquill war passand in ane chariot,⁵ with þar gudis tursit⁶ with
 p. 71. þame in þare viage,⁷ and nere ap|procheand to mont Ianicle, 20
 quhare suddanelie betid him ane vncouth aventure; ffor ane
 erne⁸ descendit suddanly out of þe are and tuke his hat⁹ of his
 hed, and with displayit wingis flew abone þe cheriot, berand þe
 hat in to hir clukis with grete noyis and clamoure; syne returnit
 (as scho had bene with¹⁰ celestiall purviance send¹¹) & put þe hat 25
 softlie on his hede agane; syne evanist without ony vthir dis-
 pleßer. It is said þat Tanaquill, richt expert in divynacioun
 of vncouth prodiges¹² (as vthir pepill of hethruschis ar) acceptit
 þis myrakil with grete Ioy, and embrasit hir husband, command-
 ing him to beleif gude fortoun appering; for þis wounder apperit 30
 be þe Erne,⁸ þe foule of maist honoure, And descending fra þe
 maist sonsy parte of [þe] hevin, on þe left hand, and messinger
 to Iupiter þe god of maist renoun and prowes; & þe wounder

¹ strangeir.² determit.³ his, A.⁴ vertews.⁵ cheriot.⁶ turst.⁷ vayage.⁸ herne.⁹ hair (!).¹⁰ send be.¹¹ om.¹² prodigies.

done to þe hiest¹ parte of his body, þat is to say, þe hede; Syne rasing þe ornament þat was thareon hie in þe air, and reponyng² It *witʰ* ³pleſſer, In ſigne þat he ſuld haue diuſyne and hie honoure with favoure of þe pepill. ffinaly³ latumo & his wiffe,
 5 *witʰ* þir and ſic interpretaciouns of þis mirakil, enterit in rome and bocht ane houſ and lugeing in þe ſamyn; And was callit be þe pepill tarquynus priscus, becaus he was cummyn fra þe anciant ciete of tarquyne; And throw his wiſdome and riches he was haldin in reuerence and grete veneracioun among þe
 10 Romanis. Attoure, he ſupportit the gude werde and fortoun (quhilk was prenoſticate to him) be his gude behavingiſ⁴ and benyng ſpeche, and conquest be his liberalite and bankettis ſa mony tendir freyndiſ *witʰin* þe ciete of Rome, þat the fame and renovne of his governance and vertew was brocht in þe kingiſ
 15 palice; and finalie made him ſa familiar to þe king þat he was *put baith on his private and public counsell, And did all (65). chargis quhilkiſ wer committit to him *witʰ* grete prudence, baith in tyme of were and pece. And laſt of all (becaus he was found of ſa hie experience in euery materis) he was left be þe king
 20 tutoure testamentare to his barnis. (XXXV) Ancus rang xxiiij ʒeris abone þe romanis, equale baith in were & peace to ony his antecessouriſ in glorie & crafty policy.

¹ hieaſt.² roponyng.³—³ favour of þe pepill fynalie haue devyne and hie honour *witʰ* pleſſer in ſigne þat he ſuld (!).⁴ havingiſ.

1. The first step in the process is to identify the problem or issue that needs to be addressed. This involves gathering information and understanding the context of the problem.

2. Once the problem is identified, the next step is to define the objectives and goals of the project. This helps to clarify what needs to be achieved and provides a clear direction for the team.

3. The third step is to develop a plan or strategy to address the problem. This involves breaking down the problem into smaller, manageable tasks and determining the resources needed to complete each task.

4. The fourth step is to implement the plan. This involves putting the strategy into action and monitoring progress to ensure that the project is on track.

5. The final step is to evaluate the results of the project. This involves assessing the outcomes against the objectives and goals and identifying any areas for improvement.

116

ane gude maister Ancus, ane prince of na litill estimacioun ; and
 has gevin his hale Ingine and besynes *nocht* onelie to obey the
 said prince | with faith amyte and *observance*, with all vthir p. 73.
 dewiteis possibill, bot als to be pleßer of be pepill in þat samyn
 5 maner. The romanis herand him reherß the thingis (quhilkis
 þai knew of verite) chesit him king with all þare consentis ; zit
*nochtwith*standing mony his excellent vertwis the samyn ambi-
 cioun þat he had in sercheing be crowne followit him during his
 empire. This tarquyne, havand na les remembrance to stabil
 10 his empire *with* sikkir fermance þan to augment be commoun
 weill, ekit be seit¹ *with* ane hundreth senatouris, quhilkis war
 callit be faderis of small pepill. This was done but dout be be
 king to cauß thir faderis (sen þai war ekit to be ordour of sena-
 touris be his Industrie) to stand his freyndis in tymes cummyn.
 15 The first weris þat he made was aganis be latynis, and sone eftir
 he tuke be forcy violence ane toun vnder þare senjeorie namyt
 Apiola ; Syne returnit to rome with mare riche pray of men and
 gudis þan was presumyt, and þarefore he institute and made
 plais with more magnificence riches and pompe þan ony his
 20 antecessouris did afore. he was be first king þat assignit grete
 boundis within Rome to be playing places, quhilk placis war
 namyt Circus. Thir playing placis war dividit with sic ordinance
 amang be faderis, horßmen, and vtheris nobillis of rome, þat
 euery ane of þame eftir þare estate had þare sete¹ edifyit for
 25 contemplacioun of þir playis. Thir seittis war namyt fori, and
 war rasit on certane stakis xij fute of hicht fra be erde, þat thir
 foresaidis nobillis mycht be more esely behald & vesy be playis
 quhen þai occurrit. Thir playis war sa Ioyus² and sa full of
 euery plesour, þat sindri valejeant³ campiouns and horsmen,
 30 specially of Ethruria, come to vesy be samyn quhen þai occurrit.
 Thir sportis and Ioyus merynes continewit zerelie amang *be (67).
 romanis, and war callit sum tyme the romane playis and sum
 tymes be grete playis. Attoure, sindri placis liand fornens be
 commoun merkett⁴ war dividit be þis terquyne amang certane
 35 obscure and private persounis, to be | edifyit be þame with p. 74.

¹ sait.² Ioyis.³ wailjeant.⁴ marcat.

tavernis and galeryis¹ to sauf þame fra somer schouris or fra fervent hetis of þe son. (XXXVI) Tarquyne, gevand his Ingyne to eik þe commoun weill with þir and siclike policyis,² began to big ane wall of stane about his toun, and in þe mene tyme was Impeschit be þe weris of Sabynis; quhilk mater was sa suddanely 5 attemtate,³ þat þe Sabynis war cummyn oure þe ryver of anieyn afore þe romanis mycht be reddy to resist þare Incursioun, throw quhilk the romanis war astonist with grete dredoure. Nochþeles þai met þe Sabynis, and faucht aganis þame, first with vncertane victorie and huge slauchter on all sydis. At last quhen baith þir 10 armyis war returnit to þare campis, and dressand þame wíth maist properant diligence to Invaíd vthir wíth new bataill, king terquyne considerit and saw perfitelie the power of horsmen decay maist in his armye; And for þat cauß he tuke purpoiß to eik new centuries to þai centuries quhilkis war devisit afore be 15 Romulus, namyt Ramnenses tacienses and luceres, þat þe doing þareof mycht remane in perpetuall memorie of his renovne and fame. In the menetyme Actius Navius, þe maist excellent divinoure þat was in þai dayis, allegit (becaus Romulus did al his notabill actis be augurie and divinacioun of foulis) þat na 20 thing suld be changeit⁴ nor alterit but Iugement of þe foulis. Tarquyne tuke ane hie Indignacioun in his mynde þat þis divinoure Impeschit⁵ him of honorabill purpois, And þarefore in derision of his science and divinacioun said to him in þis maner: "Schaw me now be divinacioun of þi foulis, gif þe thing⁶ 25 be possibill to be þat I think now in to my mynde." And quhen þe said Actius Navius had fund⁷ be experience and augurie of þe foulis þat þe samyn thing (quhilk þe king thocht) was possibill and mycht sikkirly⁸ be done, Than said terquyne: "I thocht in my mynde þat þow suld cut þat quhitstane in þi hand with ane 30 rasoure. Tharefore tak þat quhitstane, and do now the thing þat p. 75. þi foullis sa manifestlie schawis." It is said þat þis divinour cuttit haistelie the stane with his rasoure but ony obstakill.

(68). The ymage of actius Navius was sett with hede couerit, *risand

¹ galreis.² polecijs.³ attemptate.⁴ chengit.⁵ empeschit.⁶ think.⁷ found.⁸ sickerlye.

on certane stagis towart þe left hand of þe counsel houß, in þe
 samyⁿ parte of generall convencioun quhare It was done, and þe
 quhitstane hounge vp on þe samyⁿ maner to be ane memoriall of
 sa vncouth and prodigious wounder to oure posterite. throw
 5 þis wounderful mervell sic honoure and reuerence was gevin to
 auguries and to preistis and divinouris þareof, þat nathing was
 done mony ȝeris eftir concernyng grete materis owthir in tyme
 of were or pece but consultacioun of foulis. Attoure þe counsalis
 of pepil, þe rasing of armyis, and all hie chargis suld be scalit &
 10 repute of na effect, without þe foulis had schawin ane notabill
 pronosticacioun for þe sickir felicite þareeftir following. And ȝit
 terquyne made na alteracioun nor change concernyng þe centuris
 of horsmen; howbeit he ekit þe samyn ordoure w^{it}h mare
 nowmer, on sic maner þat j^m and iij^o horßmen war dividit amang
 15 three centuries. Thus war þe last centuries (quhilkis war now
 ekit) coniunit to þe first, but ony change or defference of name;
 And ȝit becaus þe nowmer þareof was doublit þe pepill callit
 þame þe new sex centuries. (XXXVII) king terquyne (eftir þat
 his army was ekit w^{it}h þis ordinance and new power) faucht þe
 20 secund tyme aganis þe Sabynis; And howbeit þe romane army
 was more strang and pussant þan afore be þis new power of
 centuries, ȝit to support þe samyⁿ was fundin¹ ane subtil slicht
 and craft of cheuelrie to distroy þare Inemyis. certane persouns
 war send out of þe romane Oist to þe rivere of Aniene, quhilkis
 25 fand ane huge nowmer of treis liand on þe brais þareof; and
 quhen þir persouns had bound thir treis togidder on þare maner,
 þai harlit þe samyn in þe streme of þe foresaid ryvere & kendillit
 ane huge fire abone þame. Thir treis finalie cummyn doun the
 ryvere of aniene war inflammyt cruelly be þe violent wyndis, and
 30 styntit never quhil þai come rageand in maist terribil blesis throw
 þe toun of Sabynis to þe pillaris of þe brig; and becaus þe
 stoupis | and pillaris þareof war all of tre, they war haistelie brynt p. 76.
 and resoluit in powder; ffor þe wyndis war grete, and maid þe
 fire sa bald þat It mycht neuer be slokynnyt. This slicht and
 35 crafty devise was na litill discomfytour to þe Oist of Sabynis,

¹ found.

quhilk's with haisty Irrupcioun war Ischit out of þe toun; ffor
 eftir þat þai war discomfist, þai mycht nocht fle as þai did afore
 oure þe ryvere, throw quhilk Incridibil nowmer of þame (quhen
 (69). þai had eschapit þare Inemyis) *perist in þe said ryvere. mony
 of þare wapynnys and targis come fletand down þe ryvere of 5
 tyber, and made þis huge victorie patent to þe pepill of rome
 afore ony sikkir tithing's come fra þare Oist to schaw þe maner
 þareof. The souerane glore of victorie succeding be þis batell
 was gevin to þe horsmen, ffor þai war arrayit in two wyngis,¹
 baith on þe richt and left hand fornere þe sabynis. ffor quhen 10
 þai saw þe band of þare futemen clerelie discomfist, þai come sa
 fast to þare supporte on euery side, þat þai nocht alanerlie dang
 and sloppit þe Sabynis legiouns, bot als put þame to flicht. The
 sabynis, discomfist on þis wise, fled with few nowmer to þe
 montanis; for þe maist parte of þame (as said Is) was drevin be 15
 þe horsmen in þe flude, quhare þai perist. king tarquyne, think-
 and na thing sa gude as to follow feirslie on þir sabynis, quhil
 þai war astonist be þis effray & troubill, send all þe pray and
 spulezeis gottin be þis victorie wíth þe presoneris to rome. And
 becaus he votit to consecrate þe harnes² and armoure of his 20
 Inemyis to þe god vulcane, he collectit³ þe samyn togiddir and
 made ane sacrifice þareof eftir his promys.⁴ Sone eftir he rasit
 his baner, and wíth suddand Irrupcioun enterit in þe Sabyne
 landis; And nochtwíthstanding þat þe Sabynis faucht vnhappely
 in þis last battall, and had na esperance of bettir fortoun to 25
 follow, 3it (becaus þai had na⁵ sufficient laser⁶ to tak avisement)
 þai come aganis þe romanis with ane haisty skarmusch. nocht-
 þeles þai war vincust as afore, & eftir þat þai war brocht to
 extreme desolacioun, þai send þare legatis to king tarquyne
 p. 77. desiring | pece, quhilk was grantit to þame vndir thir con- 30
 dicious: (XXXVIII) That þare principall ciete, namyt collacia,
 wíth all þe landis liand to þe senzeorie þareof, sal be tane fra þare
 dominioun, and ekit to þe perpetual dominioun of rome. To
 kepe þis ciete was send Egerius, quhilk was brother⁷ to terquyne,

¹ weyngis.² armes.³ collekkit.⁴ promes.⁵ nocht.⁶ lasare.⁷ bruper.

as afore Is rehersit, with ane garisoun and band of soudiouris.¹
 The maner how þe collatynis war randerit to tarquyne followis.
 first war send certane oratouris fra þe collatynis, quhom king
 terquyne demandit in þis wise: "Ar ȝe send (as oratouris) be þe
 5 collatynis to rander baith ȝow and þame to þe empire of Rome?"
 "We ar," said þe oratouris. Than king terquyne said: "ar þe
 collatynis vnder þare awne power, but ony servitude of vthir
 pepill?" "þai ar," said þe oratouris. "Wil ȝe rander ȝow and *
 þe collatynis with þare ciete, þare landis, þare marchis, ² watteris, (70).
 10 tempillis & gudis, with al vthir dewiteis pertenyng ony maner of
 way to þame owthir ² be law of god or man?" "We rander
 all," said þe oratouris. "and I ressaue all," said king terquyne.

How tarquyne dantit þe latynis, & gaif þare landis
 and cieteis to þe empire of rome; Of his magni-
 15 ficient werkis; Of þe vncouth fire þat apperit on
 seruius tullus hede, and of þe interpretacioun þareof
 be tanaquill; how þe sonnys of Ancus war banist
 for þe slauchter of terquyne; And how seruius
 tullus be slicht of tanaquil was made king of
 20 romanis. Ca. xvi.

The batall of Sabynis endit in maner afore rehersit, king
 terquyne returnit with grete tryumphe & glore of victorie to
 rome, And sone eftir he rasit his army with fresch ³ ordinance
 aganis þe latynis; and becaus he culd nocht persuade þame to
 25 gif him batall, he tuke be sindri incursiouns mony of all þare
 cieteis & landis, sic as war namyt cornikill, auld ficulnea,⁴
 cameria,⁵ Crustumerie, ameriola, medulla,⁶ Nomentum. all thir

¹ sodiouris.²—² pertenyng ony
maner of way
to þaim oþervthir dewitis, wat-
teris, templis and
guddis with all (!).
³ fersche.⁴ ficulnea, A.⁵ chawmeria, A.⁶ medillia.

townis war owthir tane fra þe prisk ¹latynis, Or ellis fra sic
 pepill as war ²rebellit aganis romanis and applauding to þe
 p. 78. opinioun of latynis. quhen tarquyne ³| had dantit the latynis
 In þis maner, he began to do werkis of policy ⁴in Rome, with
 mare coist ⁵& magnificence than euer he did ony werkis of 5
 chevelrie afore; and to þat fyne þat his pepill suld be in na les
 quiet but sedicioun within þe tyme of pece than þai war afore
 during þe tyme of were, he began to belt his ciete with ane
 strang wall of stane on euery side; for he had as þit noch ⁶suffi-
 cientlie garnist þe samyn, becaus he was Impeschit (as said Is) 10
 be þe weris of sabinis. sic thingis done, he drewe mony
 Closettis, ⁶Condittis, & synkis fra þe hicht ⁷of þe toun to þe
 merkett and vthir law partis þareof, to purge þe sammyn of all
 corruptioun and filth; for on þe plane and evin ground mycht na
 (71). discensis ⁸be maid for purgacioun thareof. And *quhen he had 15
 done thir thingis with grete magnificence, he began to compes
 the foundment of ane tempill beside þe capitoll with large
 boundis; for he was votit in þis vthir batall led be him aganis
 the Sabynis to dedicate ane new tempill to Iupiter. (XXXIX)
 The samyn tyme within the kingis palice happynnyt ⁹ane 20
 vncouth wounder: ane childe namyt Seruius Tullius was
 slepand, & in sight of all þe pepill his hede apperit (as It war
 blesand) in ane ¹⁰rede low. throw clamoure & dyn of pepill
 gadding on all sidis to se þis wounder the king comperit, And
 quhen ane of his seruitouris had brocht wattir ¹¹to slokkin þe fire 25
 þat apperit on Seruius hede, The quene maid Impediment &
 wald noch suffir him to slokin þe fire. At last quhen þe noyis
 was mesit, scho Inhibit þat þis child war trublit quhill he war
 awalkynnyt of ¹²his awne will; & als sone as he was walkynnyt
 þe low evanist. Incontinent Tanaquill tuke hir husband in ane 30
 secrete chawmer, ¹³and said: "Consideris þow þis childe, quhilk
 we haue nurist with sa vile habit? This childe sall noch fail to

¹ *Third hand in
B. resumes here
(p. 81).*

² now.

³ terquinius.

⁴ polesy.

⁵ cost.

⁶ closaittis.

⁷ heicht.

⁸ desentis.

⁹ hapnit.

¹⁰ a.

¹¹ vaitir.

¹² vakiwnit on.

¹³ chalmer.

be ane grete releif and helpe to ws, quhen we ar trublit w^{it}h
 doutsum chance or ony aduersite; herefore lat ws nuriß¹ baith
 privatelie and opinlie the mater of sa grete honoure appering."
 It is said þai tuke þis childe eftir þis and held him in þe place of
 5 þare awne barnis, and maid him to | be nurist with sic vertew p. 79.
 and moral doctryne as wald raiß his sprete to attempt grete
 materis. It come al wayis (as þe goddis ordanit) this childe
 grewe w^{it}h sa hie Ingyne and princely maneris, That quhen king
 terquyne had socht² in sindri partis quhare ony Illuster and
 10 excellent persoun mycht be wourthy³ to haue his dochter in
 mariage, Thare was nane fund sa wourthy to be his maich as þe
 said Seruius, And sa þe king gaif him finalie his dochter in
 mariage. ffor quhatsumeuir cauß sa grete honoure was gevin⁴
 to him, I can noch^t beleif þat he was borne on ane *servand* or
 15 was evir thirlit to ony *seruice*; ffor I am erare of þare opinioun
 þat haldis quhen þe toвне of Cornikill was tane be romanis,
 The king of þe said toun namyt Servius tullius was slane; And
 amang mony sindri spulzeis and presoneris tane in þe said
 toun the kingis wiffe namyt Corniculana was captive, and saiffit
 20 (becaus scho was with childe) and send to rome. Tanaquil,
 herand⁵ þat scho was of þe lynage riall, wald noch^t suffir hir to
 remane in *seruitude* amang þe remanent presoneris, bot held her
 w^{it}hin þe⁶ palice *quhil sho was deliuer of ane childe, quhilk (72).
 was namyt eftir his fader Seruius Tullius; And þocht he was
 25 nurist in þe said palice in familiarite of þe quene, 3it becaus his
 moder was presoner be chance of fortoun, hir cuntre captive, and
 him self *cummyn* in his Inemyis handis, The pepill held him as
 borne of ane *servand*. (XL) This seruius (eftir þat terquyne had
 roun⁷ xxxviiij 3eris) was noch^t onelie haldin in grete honoure &
 30 reuerence with king terquyne, bot als was haldin on þe samyn
 maner w^{it}h all pepill and faderis of þe ciete. In þe mene tyme
 þe two sonnys of Ancus had na litill Indignacioun in þare myndis,
 þat þai war noch^t allanerlie eieckit fra þare ryall and kyndelie
 heretage be dissate of þare curatoure, bot als war gretumlie

¹ nurice.³ vorthē.⁵ hering.⁷ rong.² soucht.⁴ giffin.⁶ hir.

last quhen þe king was behaldin¹ þis man maist ernistfull,² þat
vthir lymmare³ rasit his ax and straik þe king on⁴ þe hede,⁵ &
for ferßnes to | fle left þe ax stikkand in þe kingis hede;⁶ and p. 81.
Incontinent þai gat baith out at þe dur. (XLI) Als sone as þir
5 apparatouris⁶ (quhilkis war standand⁷ by) had tane vp the king
swownand⁸ in þe dede-thraw, þe servandis followit sa feirslic on
þir lymmaris, quhil þai war baith apprehendit. grete confluence
of pepill ruschit haistely to þe palice, desiring to here þe cauß of
þis effray; And in þe mene tyme tanaquil gart cloiß þe zettis of
10 þe palice, and quhen scho had Ischit þe chalmer of al persouns
þat na man suld Iuge quhiddir he wald⁹ leif or de, Scho went
with maist diligence to gaddir sic herbis as scho knew proffittabill
to cure woundis, as sum esperance had bene ȝit of his liffe. At
last, seing [þat] hir husband was dede, scho began to sail on
15 ane¹⁰ vthir burde, and callit servius hir gude-son haistelic afore
hir; And eftir scho had schewin hir husband liand cauld and
dede afore him, scho tuke þe said seruius be þe hand, and prayit
him to suffer nowthir þe deith of his gude-fader to be vnþunyst,
nor ȝit to suffir his gude-moder to leif in derisioun of Inemys;
20 & said: "O son, gif þow be now ane¹⁰ man, the kingdome and
croun of romanis Is thyne, ffor þe sonnys of Ancus (quhilkis has
subornate þir lymmaris to sla þe king) may na wayis succede
þareto. Now raiß þi curage, & follow þe goddis as þi gouver-
nouris, quhilkis has schawin þat þi hede, sum tyme schynand
25 with divine bemys, suld cum to maist dignite & honouris afore
þi deith. lat þir hevinlie & prodigius flammes raiß now þi curage.
Now is þe tyme to be awalkynnyt¹¹ fra þi slepe, for we (quhilkis
war of mare vncouth and strange blude þan þow ar) has rounȝ
lang tyme in rome. And þarefore regarde nocht of quhat lynage
30 and blude þow art born, Bot consider quhat presentlie þow art;
* And gif þi witt dekeyis¹² be this suddane effray, þan follow my (74).
Ingyne and counsale." At last tanaquill, becauß scho mycht
nocht sustene þe noyis and clamoure of þe pepill desiring to

¹ behaldand.⁴ in.⁷ standing.¹⁰ a.² eirnislic.⁵—⁶ om.⁸ swonand.¹¹ avalknit.³ lyman.⁶ apperatoris.⁹ suld.¹² decaye.

here quhiddir þe king was levand or dede, past to ane hie wyndo
 p. 82. of þe palice fornens þe new | gate (ffor the king duelt beside the
 tempil of Iupiter stator) and commandit the pepil to be of gude
 comforte, ffor þocht þe king was hurt be suddand aventure, zit
 þe wound was nocht Ingravin depe & now latelie vesyit and 5
 dicht, throw quhilk þe king was returnit to him self with gude
 rest; traisting þarethrow all thingis to fall with sic felicite, þat þe
 king sall be sene within few dayis on þe samyn maner & estate¹
 as he was afore; and þarefore desirit þame, quhil he war con-
 valescit, to obtampir² þe command and chargis of Seruius his gude- 10
 son; ffor he suld execute all besynes pertenyng to þe king with
 gude Iustice. Sone eftir, Seruius come furth amang þe faderis
 clothit with þe Rob riall, and þe servandis of armes passand afore
 him, and sat doun pertly in þe sate ryall, gevand Iugement now of 15
 thir now of þai materis; and sum tyme schew him self as king to
 tak consultacion of vther greter materis. And howbeit tarquyne
 was deceissit, zit he causit his deith be hid certane dais, quhill
 he mycht vnder his name stabill þe kingdome of romanis to him
 with mare sikkir fermance. At last raiff ane lamentacioun with
 grete murnyng and teris in þe palice, throw quhilk apperit clerely 20
 þat tarquyne was deceissit. And in þe mene tyme Seruius was
 sa garnist be sindri buschementis of his freyndis and gude-willaris,
 þat he was þe first king þat rang abone þe romanis be consent of
 þe faderis without [ony] electioun of þe pepill. The sonnys of 25
 Ancus, herand (as þe quene shew) þat þe king was levand, and
 þe hirdis quhilkis war Instruckit to his slauchter apprehendit, and
 als seruius cumin to gret honoure & richeß, þai become disparit
 of ony releve,³ And to saif þare livis⁴ fled in strange and
 vncouth landis, namyt Pomesia and suessa, quhare þare eldit⁵ in
 miserye.⁶

30

¹ astait.² atampir.³ beleve, *A.*⁴ lyffis.⁵ endit.⁶ mysserre.

how king seruius maryit his dochteris ¹ with þe sonnys (75).
 of terquyne, and di|vidit his pepill in sindri classis p. 83.
 and centuris, and institute þe sacrifice lustrale; how
 he dilatit þe toun of rome with grete boundis, And
 5 inclusit þe samyn with wallis and fowseis.

Ca. xvij.

(XLII) Quhill the sonnys of Ancus war banist in þis wise,
 king Seruius began als wele w^{it}h public as private counsale to
 mak him self strang be affluence of riches. Attoure, þat þe
 10 sonnys of tarquyne his gude-fader suld nocht haue sic Invy &
 haterent aganis him for þe croun of romanis, as þe sonnys of
 Ancus had aganis tarquyne, he maryit his two dochteris ¹ on ² þe
 two sonnys of terquyne, namyt lucius terquyne and aruncius
 terquyne; 3it he could nocht brek be witt and engyne ³ of man
 15 þe necessite and violence of fortoun; ffor þe Invy & Impacience
 of kingdome armyt thir persouns, quhilkis war alliate ⁴ togiddir
 with familiare and domestik tendirnes, to Invaid vthir with maist
 tressonabill slauchter and troubil. It happynnyt weill for þe
 sikkir quiet and tranquillite of þe tyme present, þat Seruius was
 20 constrenit to raiß ane army aganis the Veanis and Ethruschis, for
 þe trewis war outrvn. In þis batall apperit weil þe singulare
 vertew and gude fortoun of seruius, ffor be þe sammyn he gat
 ane glorius victorie of his Inemyis. At last, knowing ⁵ sum
 danger apperand to him, owthir be Inuie of þe pepill or þe
 25 faderis, he returnit to rome and tuke purpois to mak ane maist
 excellent werk of lang peace, to þat fyne That as Numa pom-
 pilius was þe first authoure ⁶ of all divyne religioun and lawis
 within rome, sa suld he be authoure ⁷ and begynnare of all
 deference and divisoun of estatis within ⁸ þe samyn eftir þare
 30 faculteis, that þe posterite and pepill eftir following mycht vnder-
 stand, be generall renoun and fame, in quhat sorte, In quhat

¹ douchteris.

² Ingyn.

³ knawyng.

⁷ autore.

² apoz.

⁴ alyait.

⁶ author.

⁸ with, A.; wt, B.

digniteis and greis of fortoun, Ilk state was different fra vtheris.
 (76). And for þis cauß he Insti*tute the cenß,¹ ane thing richt
 p. 84. proffittabil in tymes cummyn for þe empire of rome, That | the
 public chargis baith in tyme of were and pece² suld noch be
 done be euery man elike as afore, bot alanerlie be þare faculteis 5
 and gudis. Than Seruius dividit his pepill in Classies³ and
 centuries,⁴ and discrivit þis ordoure be cenß, ane richt honorabill
 thing baith in tyme of were and pece. (XLIII) The first claß
 was made of sic persouns as had ane hundreth thousand brasin
 pennyns or mare of þare awne gudis, and of þir persouns he 10
 gaderit & made Lxxx centuries, Of quhilkis þare was xl
 centuries of 30ung and als mony of agit men, al participant
 togiddir wih þis foresaid nowmer of gudis and riches. Thir
 agit men war ordanit to remane at hame ay reddy to defend
 the toun, And þir 30ung men war ordanit to be reddy to paß in 15
 werefare⁵ aganis þare Inemyis. Thir centuries war commandit to
 bere wapynnys⁶ and armoure, sic as hewmontis, targis, butis
 and habirieonis,⁷ al made of braß for defence of þare bodyis.
 Thare wapynnys⁸ to Invaid þare Inemyis war ordanit to be
 lancis, dartis, and swerdis; And to thir centuries of 30ung men 20
 war ekit vthir twa centuries of smythis, nocht to bere armoure
 & wapynnys, bot alanerly to turß þe Munycioun & Ingynis of
 chevelry⁹ with þe centuries afore rehersit. The secund claß was
 gaderit of sic persouns as had Lxxv^m pennyns in poiß, And of
 þir pepill 30ung & auld¹⁰ war found xx^{ij} centuries, and war com- 25
 mandit to bere þe samyn armoure & wapynnys as þe first classe
 bure, Except¹¹ þai bure buklaris in stede of targis, but ony habir-
 Iohns.¹² The thrid classe was made of sic pepill 30ung and auld
 as had fifty thowsand pennyns, wih þe samyn¹³ array as þe secund
 classe had, but ony defference, Sauffing þai mycht noch were 30
 butis. The fourt classe was maid of sic pepill as had xxv^m¹⁴
 pennyns, And of þis classe¹⁵ was made als xx^{ij} centuries; þare

¹ sens.² pax.³ classyis.⁴ senturyis.⁵ veirfair.⁶ vapyns.⁷ haberionys.⁸ vapnis.⁹ chevillrie.¹⁰ ald.¹¹ excep.¹² haberionis.¹³ sam.¹⁴ xxv tho^usand.¹⁵ clauß.

armoure was changeit, and þarefore þai mycht | bere na wapynnys p. 85.
 bot dartis and speris. The fife classe¹ was made of sic pepill
 as had xj^m pennyis, & of þame was found xxx centuries quhilkis
 war commandit to bere sloungis² and casting stanis; And with
 5 þis last classe past þe cryaris, seriandis, & trumpettis,³ bugil-
 blawaris and menstralis, and war devidit in thre centuries. All
 þe remanent pepil, quhilkis mycht nocht for þare pouerte be
 nowmerit amang þe statis afore rehersit, war callit þe last classe;
 and of *þame war found bot ane centurie, quhilkis for þare (77).
 10 pouerte war exonerate of all chargis of battall. The army of
 futemen ordourit and dividit with digniteis & estatis in maner
 afore rehersit, king Seruius tuke purpois to ordoure þe estate of
 horsmen, and made finaly xij centuries þarof, chosin of þe maist
 nobil and wourthiest persouns of his toun. [attoure] he made vþir
 15 sex centuries, and ekit þame to þe thre centuries quhilkis war
 devisit & institute⁴ afore be romulus, to remane vnder þe samyn
 names as þai war devinit be auguries; and to by hors to þir
 centuries was gevin x^m brasin pennyis⁵ of þe commoun puris,
 and to nuris þe hors war gevin riche wedois, sic as mycht spend
 20 ij^m pennyis⁶ of ȝerely Importance and rentis. All þir chargis
 afore rehersit war surelie translatit fra vexacioun & troubill of
 pure pepil to þe estate of riche and maist potent men; And
 þarefore quhare maist charge war gevin or sustenit for þe com-
 moun proffitt, þare maist honoure and dignite followit. Thus
 25 was nocht þe maner obseruate be þe remanent⁷ kingis twiching
 þe gouernance of þe empire as was obseruate be romulus; ffor þe
 suffrage was gevin be euery man elike in þe samyn gre and in þe
 samyn faculte as he said. howbeit þare was sum defference of
 greis, ȝit It was ordourit⁸ in sic maner, þat Ilk man suld haue his
 30 awne voce & suffrage, and þe grete chargis to remane with þe
 principall and wourthiest men of þe toun. Of þis ordoure of
 horsmen war maist principal Lxxx, quhais wisdomes war first
 consultit quhen ony materis occurrit concernyng owþir public or

¹ clauis.⁴ Instite (!).⁷ Romanis (!).² slongis.⁵ x thousand brasin penneis.⁸ ordanit.³ trampatis.⁶ twa thousand penneis.

private chargis of pepill. And gif þir Lxxx horsmen war *nocht* concurrand vnder ane mynde and wisdome to þe decision of sic
p. 86. materis, þan was þe classe of þe first centurie of | futemen to be
consultit. And gif ony variance¹ (as seildin² happynnyt) was
found in this first classe þan was þe second Classe callit. All 5
wayis na mater occurrit of sic difficulte, bot It was sufficientlie
opynnyt & discussit³ afore it come to þe consultacioun of þe
lawest Classe. Attoure, na persoun suld be movit with admira-
cioun, howbeit þis ordoure þat is in oure dayis be nocht
respondent to þe sovme of centuries made be seruius; becaus 10
sen syne has bene made xxxv tribus,⁴ & ⁵ þe nowmer þareof doublit
with centuries of 30ung and agit pepill: ffor as I beleif þe toun of
rome was dividit be regiouns and montanis in sindri partis, and
(78). euery ane of þir partis war callit tribis, be *thirllage of tribute
þat þai aucht to pay to þe king; ffor the tribute was equally rasis 15
on euery persoun eftir þe proporcioun of his gudis and faculteis.
Attoure, þir tribus⁴ pertenit na thing to þe distribucioun and
nowmer of centuries. (XLIV) At last, quhen seruius had discrivit
þe cens & taxacioun of euery man eftir his faculteis, with sic
properant diligence as he mycht, he ~~com~~mandit vnder maist 20
traist punycioun þat all þe cietezanis and pepil of rome, als weill
horsmen as futemen, suld compere arelie on þe nixt morrow in
þe place of generall ~~conv~~encioun, namyt campus marcius, arrayit
in þe samyn centuries and ordinance as he afore devisit. And
quhen þai war all assemblit togiddir in þis maner, he purgit 25
þame be ane sacrifice namyt lustrale, maid in reuerence of þe
goddis with schepe, swyne and bullis. This sacrifice made be
seruius at þis tyme was namyt lustrale, becaus he 3eid about
þame and nowmerit euery centurie and ordoure be þame self;
ffor at þis tyme war fundin⁶ in gude nowmer within þe wallis of 30
Rome Lxxx^m men. Attoure, It is said be fabius Pictor þe maist
anciant historiciane,⁷ þat þis nowmer was alanerly of sic men as
bure wapynnys⁸ and armour. And þat þis nowmer mycht haue

¹ waryance, *B.*;
vacance, *A.*

² seindill.

³ desensit (!).

⁴ tribis.

⁵ of, *A.*

⁶ found.

⁷ antient historiciane.

⁸ vapnis.

þe bettir lugeing *witʰin* Rome, king Servius dilatit þe boundis
 þareof, and tuke in twa montanis namyt quirinall and mont
 Viminall, throw quhilk þe wallis war schot out *witʰ* mare mag-
 nificent boundis þan afore. And nocht alanerlie ekit he þir
 5 montanis foresaid *witʰin* rome, bot als ekit | the mont Esquillies p. 87.
 on þe samyn maner, and biggit his principall habitacioun on þis
 last montane, to mak þe samyn of mare renoun and honoure in
 tymes cuming. Eftir þis he beltit the ciete with wallis, fousseis
 & trynscheis in all partis. Attoure, he gart leif wide boundis
 10 baith outwith and Inwith þe wallis, callit pomerie. Sum men,
 havand na sicht bot allanerlie to þe latyne resoun of þis worde
 pomerie, belevit It callit postmeneum,¹ þat is to say þe boundis
 behind þe toun; bot þir men ar dissaut, for pomerie is callit ane
 certane boundis passand round about ony toun nixt þe wallis
 15 þareof; quhilkis boundis war consecrate be þe Ethruschis with
 certane marchis be auguryis and divinacioun of foulis,² quhen þai
 tuk purpois to begyn ony tovne, *witʰ* sic ordinance þat nowthir
 þe saidis placis liand Inwith þe toun suld be edifyit nor biggit
 * *witʰ* ony houff, Nor ʒit the boundis liand vtowt³ ⁴ þe toun telit (79).
 20 or brokin to ony produccioun of cornes. Thir boundis, quhilkis
 lay in þis maner Inwith or outwith ⁴ ony toun, war callit pomerie
 but ony vthir ressoun. Attoure, quhen ony toun was dilatit with
 mare ampill boundis þan It had afore, The pomerie was dilatit
 and consecrate in the samyn maner.

¹ *read* -merium.² fullis.³ outouth.⁴ outwt.

Of the tempill of diane made be seruius, and of þe
 fatall kow ; how seruius delt landis amang þe pepil,
 and conquest þare benevolence ; how tullia þe feirð
 slew hir husband to get lucius terquyne in mariage ;
 how scho persuadit him to sla hir fader, and how 5
 scho rade on ane chariot¹ oure his body.

Ca. xvijj.

(XLV) In to thir dayis was ane anciant and Illuster tempill,
 biggit in² þe honoure of Dyane þe goddes in þe ciete of
 Ephesie ; quhilk tempill, as þe fame was in þai dais, was biggit 10
 with generall consent of þe pepill of Asia. It happynnyt³ þat
 seruius was loving gretumly⁴ þe said pepill, becaus þai be
 generall avise⁵ beildit þe said tempill to þe honoure of þare
 goddis. At last, quhen he had repetit oft tymes þe magnificence
 p. 88. þareof amang sindri princis & nobillis of þe latyns, | with quhilkis 15
 he was be prudent Industry makand maist ferme allyance and
 concorde for þe tyme, he brocht þe latynis to sic purpois, þat
 þai wer fully accordit to big ane tempil wth þe romanis in þe
 honoure of þe foresaid dyane ; ffor baith þir pepill with ane mynde
 confessit þat rome was hede of þe warld, ffor quhilk þai haue 20
 oft tymes Invadit vthir. And howbeit þe desire and conquest of
 romane Impire⁶ apperit at þis tyme nocht possibill to succede
 to þe latynis, becaus þai war brokin & oft tymes vnhappely
 discomfist be þe said romanis, ȝit followit sic ane aventure to
 ane⁷ preist of Sabynis, þat he belevit privatlie⁸ to conquest þe 25
 empire of Romanis. Ane husband man amang þe Sabynis had
 ane kow, quhais incredibil bewte & magnitude was to þe grete
 (80). admiracioun of þe pepill. *The hornys of þis kow war affixt
 mony ȝeris eftir in þe porchis afore þe tempill of Diane for
 ane vncouth and prodigius mirakill. The divinouris had ane 30
 prophesy, þat quhatsumeir cietezane offerit þis kow to Dyane,

¹ cherioit.

² to.

³ hapnit.

⁴ grittumlie.

⁵ awið.

⁶ Empyre.

⁷ a.

⁸ prevatlie.

his pepill and nacioun suld haue þe monarchy and perpetuall empire of þe world. This prophecy and divinacioun come finalie to þe eris of ane Sabyne, quhilk was bischop of þe said tempill for þe tyme. þe Sabyne bischop (als sone as ane
 5 solempne and convenient day apperit for þe foresaid sacrifice) brocht þis said kow¹ to rome, and sett hir afore þe altare to haue made ane sacrifice þareof to Dyane. In the mene tyme þe bischop of Rome happynnyt to cum be aventure in þe tempill, and seing þis kow (as þe fame afore had schewin) of sa huge
 10 quantite, come haistely to his mynde þe prophecy concernyng þe Immolacioun and sacrifice of þis fatall kow;¹ And to fruster þe sabyne bischop þareof he said: "quhy Intendis þow to offir ane prophane and pollute sacrifice to Diane, Considering þow suld first haue purgit þi self In þe quyk stremes of ane rynnand
 15 wattr?² pas þarefore to tyber, quhilk rynnys in ane law vail,³ and purge þi⁴ self." The sabyne | bischop, movit with vane p. 89. religioun, and þat þe sacrifice suld haue bene þe mare digne and acceptabill gif all thingis war done with maist ordoure in dew circumstance, And als þat þe werdis suld follow wth⁴ mare
 20 fermance, he left the kow afore þe altar and descendit haistelie to purge him in þe river of tyber. In þe mene tyme þe romane bischop offerit þe kow to diane, quhilk thing was mervellus plesand and thankfull baith to þe king and pepill of rome. (XLVI) And þocht seruius had possessioun of þe crovn of
 25 Romanis be lang vse, zit becaus It come to his eris þat 3ounge terquyne murmurit him, Saying he vsurpit þe croun but ony consent or avise of þe pepill, he sett his Industry to stabill his empire wth⁴ mare fermance. and þarefore, to recovir þare benevolence and favoure, he delt amang þame equally certane
 30 landis quhilkis war conquest afore be his weris. And quhen he was surelie aduertist of þare kyndenes, he demandit þame in þare convencioun gif þai desirit or wald command him to be king. be þis way he was declarit king wth⁴ ma suffrage & votis of pepill þan ony vthir king had afore. And zit þis prudent
 35 Industrie of servius na thing mynist þe esperance þat 3ounge

¹ cow.² water.³ wale.⁴ pine.

(81). terquyne had to þe croun, bot erare gaif him mare *ardent
 Impulsioun to persew þe samyn þan afore; ffor he traistit,
 becaus þe landis afore rehersit war dividit be servius amang þe
 pepill but consultacioun of þe faderis, to fynd sufficient mater to
 bring him þarefore in haterent and displeseris of þe saidis faderis, 5
 quharethrow he mycht haue þe bettir occasioun to obtene his
 purpois in þe courte. Attoure þis, 3oung terquyne, namyt vthir-
 wayis lucius terquyne, was ane man of feirþ and birnyng spreit,
 and had ane¹ wiffe at hame quhilk held him in grete troubil and
 vnquiet. It come fynalie þat þe palice riall of rome was made 10
 ane notabill exempill of maist terribil and tragik cruelte, how beit
 þat þe samyn succedit² to þe grete commodite of romane pepill,
 þat throw þe haterent and vnsufferabil tyrannye of kingis baith
 p. 90. þe commoun liberte mycht be more ripelie recouerit, | And þe
 empire gottin be sic cruelte suld be hyndmest empire abone þe 15
 romanis. And quhiddir this lucius terquyne was son or nevo
 to priscus terquyne, small Is defference,³ And 3it I fynd ma
 authouris saying þat he was his son. allwayis he had ane
 brother, eldare of 3eris þan he was, namyt Aruns terquyne, and
 with þir two brethir (as afore is rehersit) was maryit two dochteris 20
 of Seruius tullus, richt discrepant in þare condiciouns & maneris.
 Peraventure þis was done be purviance of þe goddis, þat two
 feirþ & violent Inginis suld noch be conionit togiddir in
 mariage; Or ellis I beleif It was þe chance of fortoun, þat þe
 empire of Seruius mycht endure þe langare, and þat þe maneris 25
 and condiciounis of romane pepill mycht be þe mare notably
 reformit. 3oung tullia, ane cruell and feirþ woman, was maryit
 on Aruns terquyne, ane meik and Innocent persoun. On þe
 tothir side, tullia þe eldest, ane meik and Innocent woman, was
 marijt on lucius terquyne ane¹ cruell & furius man. 3oung feirþ 30
 tullia was every day in mare anguiþ and sorow, becaus scho saw
 hir husband, Aruns terquyne, noch gevin to maist audacite and
 auarice to attempt⁴ grete chargis. And þarefore scho gaif hir
 hert and hale affeccion to lucius terquyne, saying he was ane
 man discending of lynage and blude ryall; and had hir sister 35

¹ a.² suscepit (!).³ difference.⁴ attempt.

in contempcion, becaus scho had gottin ane¹ man to hir husband of mare effeminate sleuth þan ony woman. We se (as oft occurris) elike cumpanyis drawis to vthir, for ane¹ evill dede is ay ganand for ane vthir; ȝit þe begynnyng of al trubill risis² fra
 5 ane woman. * This feirß Tullia was oft tymes³ accustomyt to (82).
 haue secrete langage wíth þis said lucius terquyne, hir sisteris husband, and sparit nochť to say to him maist Iniurius wordis of his brothir; and on þe samyn maner scho sparit nochť as ane
 10 awne husband, oft tymes⁵ allegiand him bettir to haue had ane chaist life, and hir sister to haue bene ane¹ wedo, þan to be maryit wíth ane þat was vnlike⁶ to him in condicioun. for þir ressouns It was nochť profitabill to him to dul & paß | oure his p. 91.
 dayis, nochť be his awne bot be his wyiffis⁷ sleuth; and⁸ gif þe
 15 goddis had gevin⁹ to hir ane nobil man equale to hir corage¹⁰ and sprete, scho suld haue gart him within few dais reiose þe croun & diademe þat hir fader presentlie reiosit. This feirß and cruell tullia armit haistely ȝoung terquyne to conforme him to hir cruelteis; And within schort tyme eftir, quhen Aruns
 20 terquyne and þe eldest tullia war deceissit, ȝoung¹¹ terquyne and þis feirß tullia war maryit togiddir, howbeit Seruius nowthir assentit nor ȝit disassentit to þare mariage. (XLVII) Than Seruius be damage¹² of lang age was trublit Ilk day [mair] wíth new infirmite, throw quhilk þe realme was patent to mony
 25 Iniuris; ffor quhen þis ȝoung tullia had slane be hir cruelte aruns terquyne hir first husband, eftir þat lucius terquyne [had slane] his wife, be hant of maist vnnaturall cruelteis Scho fel Ilk day in new tressouns & crymes, and nowthir nochť nor day mycht suffir hir husband to haue rest. And þat þe slauchter be hir committit
 30 suld nochť be for nochť, Scho began to reproche hir new husband, Saying þe defalt (þat hir desiris war nocht completit) was nochť for þat caus scho wantit ane¹ husband quhilk mycht suffir hir to leif vnder quiet and seruitude, Bot erare becaus scho had nochť ane

¹ a.⁴ hodyus.⁷ wifis.¹⁰ curaige.² riß.⁵ oftyme.⁸ for.¹¹ desessit, ȝing.³ ofтымis.⁶ wnliklie.⁹ giffin.¹² dampnage.

husband þat thocht him worthy to be ane king, And becaus [þat] he wald *nocht* remember þat he was þe son of priscus terquynus, quhilk had ay mare desire to possede ane realme *presentlie* þan to leif in esperance sum tyme to haue It. "Gif þow be þis man" (said scho) "to quham I am fallin in new mariage, þan I wil call 5 þe baith king and husband. gif It be *vthir* wayis, þan I think my mariage changeit ¹ in to werð,¹ and succeding *wit* þe mare infelicate, þat I haue done þe cruelte *wit* my handis þat continewis þe in sleuth. And gif þi Ingyne is erekit in more curage, þan belt þe *wit* manhede to cum esely to þi purpois. 10

(83). for It Is *nocht* now necessare² to þe (as it was to *þi fader) to serche vncouth and strange realmes or citeis, sic as Corinthy or terquyne, Sen baith þi domestic & freyndlie goddis, the ymage of þi fader, þe palice riall, þi kyndely & native heretage, & þe p. 92. name of þi | fader terquyne, has create the king and callis þe to 15 the empire þareof. And gif þow decayis als wele in thy manhede as curage, þan quhy dissavis þow thy awne ciete? quhy sufferis þow þi self to be estymyt þe kingis son and discending of his lynage riall? Returne erare schamefully to þe landis of Corinthy & terquynis. Returne agane to þi native cuntre, mare like in 20 condiciounis to þi febill³ brother þan to thy vailzeant⁴ and active fader." The feirð tullia, be thir and siclike persuasiouns, armyt young terquyne to vsurpe þe crowne of romanis contrare the empire of hir fader, and *mycht* na wayis suffir him to haue quiet, Saying sen tanaquill (quhilk was ane⁵ strange and vncouth 25 woman) mycht attempt sa wechty⁶ & ponderus ane mater, to mak first hir husband [&] syne hir gudesoun kingis of Romanis, continually Ilkane succeding eftir vthir be hir onely Industry; how and be quhat aventure *mycht* It fall, bot scho, þe kingis dochter, discending of þe blude ryal, suld haue ony Impediment 30 to raið and put doun kingis of Romanis at hir plesere? young⁷ Terquyne, Instrukkit be þir and siclike furyis of ane woman, Began to seirch⁸ þe myndis of þe senatouris and faderis of rome towart him, And specially þe myndes of þe faderis of small

¹ to þe verð.² nesesar.³ fabill.⁴ vailzeand.⁵ quailkis was a.⁶ worthe.⁷ jing.⁸ seirð.

pepill, Remembring þame of þe humanite and kyndenes done to þame be hir fader priscus terquynus; And þarefore desirit þame to schaw þame benevolus to his grete materis quhen þai occurrit. Attoure, he tyistit¹ þe ȝoung² men of his ciete to his purpois
 5 with his liberalite and gudis, Promitting (gif all materis succedit to his desiris) to rewarde þame condingly to þare plesure; And þus he garnist and made himself strang in euery partis, Obieck- and þe vices of seruius. At last, quhen he saw þe tyme respondent to his besynes, he come armyt with ane strang
 10 band of weremen in þe counselhous;³ And þocht þe pepill war suddanly affrayit, he satt | doun in the kingis seit,⁴ as he wald p. 93. haue execute all chargis in þe kingis name. And Incontinent he warnit all þe faderis be ane⁵ officiare to convene in þe counselhous,⁸ to here quhat thingis war to be dressit be king
 15 terquyne. Mony of þe faderis ⁶convenit to þis convencioun. Sum of *þame war subornat and corruppit afore be his crafty (84). Industry to compere; Vtheris dredand sic thingis as mycht follow eftir be his tyranny comperit, And war sa astonist be þis vncouth wonder þat þai traistit seruius to be slane. Alssone as
 20 þe faderis war generalie assemblit, terquyne began to speik maist vile and odious langage of Seruius, & repeting his lynage callit him ane servand borne of ane *servand*, quhilk eftir þe petuouß slauchter of his fader tarquinius priscus had vsurpit þe crowne, by þe auld lawis and cerymonis accustomat, but ony *commites* or
 25 Interregne, but ony suffrage or votis of pepill, and but ony

¹ tistit.² ȝing.³ counsaillhouß.⁴ seit.⁵ a.⁶ Here (p. 97) the fourth hand in B. begins:—

Convenit to his conventioun. Sum of þaim was subornat and corruppit afor be his crafty Industrie to compere; wþairris dredand sik thingis as mycht fallow efter be his tyranny comperit, And war so astonist be wncouth wonder þat þai traistit seruius to be slane. Alsone as þe fadris war generalie assemblit, tarquine began to speik maist wile and odius langage of seruius, and repeting his linage callit him ane *serwand* borne of ane *serwand*, quhilk efter þe peiterus(!) slauchter of his fader tranqus(!) priscus had vsurpit þe croun, by þe auld Lawis and cerimoniis accustomat, but ony *com-mices* or Interregne, but ony sufrage or votis of pepill & but ony

authorite of faderis, intrusit in the samyn allanerlie be dissate
 of ane woman. thus was he borne, þus was he maid king, and
 favorare all his dayis of sic vile and obscure pepill as him self,
 to þe haterent of al vthir honeste. "has he *nocht* latelie reft
 certane landis fra þe maist nobil and honest men of þe ciete, & 5
 dividit þe *sammyn* amang þe maist vile persouns þareof? has he
nocht put all þe hie chargis, quhilkis war afore *commoun* amang
 þe pepill, now allanerly to be rasis on þe nobillis? has he *nocht*
 institute the cens and estimacioun of euery mannis gudis, to
 cauþ þe gudis of riche men to be þe more Invyit *witþ* þe pure 10
 pepill, quharethrow he may dispone þe gudis quhilkis ar con-
 quest be ws amang þe pure and Indigent pepill quhare he list?"
 (XLVIII) Seruius, aduertist be ane astonist messingere of þis
 assemblance and conuencioun of pepill drawin be terquyne,
 comperit haistelie in þe porchis of þe court & cryit *witþ* loud 15
 voce, "O terquyne, quhat Is þis þat þow Intendis to do? quhat
 malapert audacite has movit þe (during my life) to convene þe
 faderis to ony courte or counsell? Or quhat presumpcioun has
 p. 94. armit þe to sitt in my sete?" Tarquyne ansuerit richt | feirsly,
 saying he did *nocht* bot sat in his faderis sete, and had more 20

authorite of fadris, Intrusit in þe *samin* alanerly be dissait of ane
 woman. Thus was he borne, thus was he maid kyng, and fauorar
 all his dayis of sik wile & obscure pepill as him self, to þe hatrent of
 all wthir honeste. "hes he *nocht* laitlie reft *certane* landis fra þe
 maist nobill & honest men of þe ceite, and deuidit þe *samyn* amang
 þe maist wile *personis* þairof? Hes he *nocht* put all þe he chargis
 (quhilkis war afoir comoun amang þe pepill) now alanerly to be rasis
 on þe noblis? heþ he *nocht* Institute þe cens and estimatioun of
 euery mannis gudis, to cauþ þe guddis of ryche men to be þe moir
 Invyit wyth þe pure pepill, quhairthrow he may dispone þe guddis
 quhilkis ar conquest be ws amang pure & Indigent pepill quhare he
 list?" Seruius, aduertyst be ane astonyst messenger of his *assem-*
blance and *conuencioun* of pepill drauin to tarquine, comperit haist-
 tely in þe porchis of þe court and cryit *witþ* loud woce, "O tarquyne,
 quhat is þat þow Intendis to do? quhat malapert audacite hes mouit
 þe (duryng my lyf) to *conuene* þe fadris to ony court or counsale?
 Or quhat presumption hes armit þe to sit in my sait?" Tarquyne
 anserit Rycht ferslye, saying he did *nocht* bot satt in his fadris sait,

resoun sen he was Iust heretoure þareto þan ony servand mycht
 haue to þe samyn; Affirmyng eik þat he was oure lang licent to
 þe said autorite in contempcioun baith of þe faderis & pepill of
 rome. In þe mene tyme raiß ane huge cry & noyiß be þe
 5 favoraris of athir side, throw quhilk sic confluence of pepill come
 haistelie to þe counselhous, þat nane of þir twa partyis apperit to
 regnne bot he þat was maist pussant, Or wan þe victorie be þe
 swerde. Tarquyne, seing þat It was necessare to him owthir de
 Or ellis assaileþe extreme Leo*perdie & chance of armes, gat (85).
 10 Seruius be þe myddill (ffor he was more wicht and lustiar þan þis
 vthir) & eieckit him *witʰ* sic violence out of þe court, þat he fell
 certane stageis to þe ground. Sic thingis done, Tarquinius¹
 returnit as afore to þe counsel to convene þe faderis. Incon-
 tinent king Seruius fled *witʰ* all his garde & *servandis* to þe
 15 palace,² And quhen he was cummyn (as discomfist and hertles
 wicht³) to ane place callit the cypriane rew, he come be aventure
 on ane cumpanye of armyt men quhilkis war send be terquyne,
 & was slane. It was traistit þat Tullia was þe doare of þis
 cruelte, becaus scho abhorrit nocht with vther siclike cruelteis
 20 afore rehersit. All wais It is clerly knawin, þat eftir þe deith of
 hir fader scho come ridand on ane chariot⁴ to þe courte, And
 nocht being⁵ astonist be þe noyiß and fere of pepill þat war
 gaderit in þis terribill effray, scho cryit on hir husband terquyne
 to cum furth, and was þe first þat salust⁶ him king. Als sone as
 25 scho had⁷ gottin hir husband in þe chariot,⁴ scho was *commandit*⁸
 be him to returne hame with maist diligence; And quhen scho

And had mare Resoun sen he was Iust heritour þairto þan ony
servand mycht haue to þe *samin*; Affirmyng eke þat he vas oure
 lang licent to þe said autorite in *contentioun* bayth of þe [98] fadris
 and pepill of Rome. In þe meintyme Raiß ane huge cry and noys
 be þe fau[o]raris of athir syde, throw quhilk sic *confluence* of pepill
 come haistely to þe counsale hous, þat nane of thir two *partiis*
 apperit to þe Renge bot he þat was maist pussant, or wan þe victory
 be þe sueird.

¹ Seruius, *both*.² palace.³ wyth.⁴ chiriot.⁵ And beand.⁶ salute.⁷ has, *A*.⁸ *om*.

was cummyn to þe cipriane rewe, quhare þe tempil of diane was
 latelie beildit, and turnand þe chariot¹ to hir rycht hand to haue
 passit be ane stay discente² callit Virbius³ to mont esquillis
 quhare hir lugeing⁴ was, The man þat led hir bridill stude
 astonist & wald nocht pas fordwart,⁵ quhil he had schawin to hir 5
 p. 95. þe body of hir fader liand dede in þe gate. ffollowis⁶ | ane
 schamefull and vnnaturall cruelte, and in memore⁷ þareof the
 place quhare þe deid was done Is callit zit þe vnhappy and cursit
 rew. This wod & waryit⁸ woman, be Impulsoun baith of þe
 furyis of hir husband and sister, draif þe chariot¹ oure hir faderis 10
 body, with sic violence þat nocht alanerlie þe blude of hir faderis
 body spendit on hir face, bot als fylit⁹ baith hir clathis and þe
 cheriot; and scho beand fylit⁹ wit^h his blude, scho returnit to
 hir lugeing. for quhilk horribill and Inhumane cruelteis &
 slauchteris the goddis war sa commovit¹⁰ and wraith, þat þe 15
 empire of terquyne, conquest with sic waryit and evil begynnyng,
 behuffit to fynyß¹¹ with sic like ending. Seruius tullius rang
 abone þe romanis xliij yeris, In sic maner þat gif ony Iuste or
 temperate prince had succedit efter him, na reproche mycht haue
 bene aganis his empire. Attoure, ane thing succedit to his 20
 (86). souerane glore, þat with him endit baith Iust and resson*abil
 gouernance¹² concernyng þe kingdome of Romanis; And howbeit
 his empire was moderate and meik, zit becaus It was vnder þe
 gouernance¹² of ane allanerly persoun, Sum authouris sais the
 pepill thought to haue deprivit him fra his sete¹³ and dignite 25
 riall, war nocht þir Intestyne cruelteis afore rehersit, rising amang
 sa tendir freyndis, prevenit him þareof to deliuer þe pepill of all
 tyranny, baith of him and all vthir kingis quhilkis war to succede
 eftir him.

¹ chriot.⁵ forduert.⁸ variit.¹¹ finis.² discens.⁶ fallouis.⁹ fyld.¹²⁻¹³ om.³ Werbius.⁷ þe memory.¹⁰ commvuit.¹³ sait.⁴ lugein.

Of King terquyne þe proude, and how he rang with
 grete tyranny and slauchter abone þe romanis ;
 how he was allyate with þe prince of Latynis, and
 gart turnus the senjeoure of arithia be drownit be
 5 ane tressonabil slicht. Ca. xix.

(XLIX) Sic thingis done, Lucyus terquyne began to regne¹
 abone the romanis, and was callit terquyne þe proude, becaus he
 wald *nocht* suffer the body of Servius tullus his gude fader to be
 buriit ; for he allegit þat *servius mycht* ly als weil vnburyit as
 10 Romulus, þe fader & god of romanis. This terquyne slew al þe
 faderis & nobillis of rome quhilkis he traistit to haue ony favour
 to | his gude-fader servius. forthir² þis L.³ Tarquyne, knawing⁴ p. 96.
 þe kingdome of romanis conquest be him in ane evil manere, to
 þat fyne þat vtheris sal *nocht* Invade him *wit* siclike⁵ tyrannye
 15 as he did seruius, he garnist him with strang garde of armyt
 men ; for he had na richt to þe croun, bot vsurpit þe samyn
 allanerly be violence, as he þat rang baith but electioun of pepill
 and confirmatioun of faderis ; throw quhilk he come to sic poynt,
 þat becaus he was odius to þe pepill throw his curst⁶ tyranny
 20 he *mycht*⁷ haue na confidence in þame. Tharefore his empire
 behuivit⁸ to be defendit vnder fere and dredoure. And to caus
 the pepill to haue þe more fere and dredoure in þare myndis, he
 tuke cognitioun⁹ of all capitale crymes alanerlie be him self, but
 ony consultatioun of þe senate or faderis. þus war sindri of his
 25 nobillis, but ony demeritis, be him slane, and vtheris banist ; &
nocht alanerly * he slew þame quhilk war Invyt or suspekkit¹⁰ be (87).
 him, bot als all vther persouns quhare he traistit to gett ony pray
 of gudis. And þocht he had mynyst ane grete nowmer¹¹ of the
 faderis be þis way, he wald cheið nane vtheris to put in þare
 30 placis, To that fyne þat þe ordoure of senatouris for þare few

¹ ring.⁴ knawand.⁷ myth.¹⁰ suspectit.² farthare.⁵ sic.⁸ behuift aye aye.¹¹ grit numer.³ Lucyus.⁶ cursit.⁹ cognitioun.

nowmer¹ suld be þe leß estymyt,² and the leß Indignacioun to follow³ to þe pepill þat na thing was done be þe said senaturis. This tarquyne was þe first amang þe romane kingis (as is writtin) þat put þe senaturis fra consultacioun of public materis; And als was þe first þat gouernit þe empire of Rome be domestic and 5 private counsale. Attoure, he denuñcit weris and maid pece, confederacioun, and alliance with all pepill as he plesit, but ony avise of þe senate and pepill of Rome. he kest him in speciall to conqueß þe favoure of latynis, traisting be supporte of strange and vncouth pepill to be þe more sikkir amang his commouns and cietezanis⁴ of rome. And noch⁵ alanerlie had he familiarite with þe saidis princes of latynis, bot als made affinite with þame; for he gaif his dochter to octavius manilius, prince of latyne pepill. This manilius (as Is traistit) was þe son of vlisses, gottin on Circe p. 97. þe goddes, And be þis mariage he | conquest mony freyndis and 15 couisingis⁵ amangis þe latynis. (L) Now was terquyne of grete renoun & autorite amang þe latynis, quhen he be generall edict commandit þame to mete him beside þe wod of ferentyne aganis ane certane day. At þe said day and place be him assignit⁶ comperit gret nowmer⁷ of latynis richt arly in þe morow. 20 Terquyne kepit þe day bot noch⁸ þe houre of þare convencioun, for he come noch⁹ quhil ane⁸ litil afore þe occasioun of þe sonæ. Mony materis war despute⁹ at þis convencioun amang þe latynis to sindri purpois. Turnus herdomitus, senzeoure of aricia, Invayit¹⁰ feirsly aganis terquyne, and accusit his absence, Saying 25 quietly It was na wounder both¹¹ he was callit terquyne þe proude; for how mycht he schaw him self more proude and arrogant þan to mok þe hale pepill of latynis, sen þe princes þareof war drawin be lang Iourney¹² fra þare cuntre,¹³ And he þat devisit¹⁴ þis convencioun Is now absent. "þis Is done," said turnus, "to 30 assailþe oure pacience,¹⁵ to þat¹⁶ fyne þat gif we resaue plesandlie þe þoke¹⁷ of servitude,¹⁸ he mycht¹⁹ suddanlie (as him list) oppreß

¹ nomer.² estymat.³ fallow.⁴ cetezeanis.⁵ cosingis.⁶ assingnit.⁷ numer.⁸ a.⁹ dispute.¹⁰ Inwadit.¹¹ þat.¹² Iurnay.¹³ contre.¹⁴ devisit, B.;

devidit, A.

¹⁵ patiens.¹⁶ þis.¹⁷ þok.¹⁸ servitude.¹⁹ myth.

ws. *quha Is he þat is now amang ws, to quham It is *nocht* (88).
 clerely apperit, bot terquyne desiris to haue empire abone ws?
 Attoure gif he be suspect¹ with his awne cieteʒanis, or gif his
 cruell tyrannyis has creditt² amang þe pepill [maist knawin to
 5 hym, It is leiffull þe Latinis to beleif þe samin, houbeit wncouth
 pepill suld gyf mair credence þairto. Attoure gyf þe pepill] &
 freyndis þat knawis him best be penitent of his empire, becaus
 he has slane ane parte þareof, vtheris banist, & of vtheris
 confiscat the gudis to þare vtir³ poverté, quhat vthir confidence
 10 may þe latynis haue, bot þe said terquyne to Invaid⁴ þame on
 þe samyn maner?" Tharefore gif þai⁵ will here him, Na thing
 was sa honorabill as euery man to returne hame, & nane of þame
 to obserue þe day and place set be terquyne mare þan he has
 kepit It be him self. "This seditious⁶ [and warijt] creature
 15 terquyne" (said turnus) "has done þir & mony vthir siclike
 cruelteis, and be þe samyn falset & slichtis has conquest grete
 proffitt & richeß." quhen turnus was rehersing þir and vthir
 siclike wourdis, king terquyne comperit in Iugement and Inter-
 ruppit his orison. Incontinent all þe latynis turnit þare bakkis
 20 to turnus, & | began to salute terquyne. Than terquyne (eftir p. 98.
 þat he was desirit be⁷ sic men as war maist approcheant⁸ to him
 to purge him of his lang tary) commandit silence, and said he
 was chosin ane amyabill compositoure⁹ of certane hie conten-
 ciouns fallin¹⁰ betuix twa Illuster persouns, that ane þe fader and
 25 þis¹¹ vthir þe son, duelling vnder his empire; and was taryit
 alanerly to recounsell þame to amyte and kyndenes. And becaus
 he had spendit þe day bigane in sic besynes, he suld glaidlie
 vaik on þame þe nixt morowe to drest all materis as efferit.¹² It
 is said þat turnus was na thing satisfyit¹³ on his respons, ffor he
 30 allegit [þat] na mater mycht be mare haistely discussit þan betuix
 þe fader and þe sone; ffor gif þe sone war *nocht* obeysant to his
 fader, he mycht nocht eschewe þe vengeance and maladictioun¹⁴
 of þe goddis¹⁵ to fal on him. (LI) als sone as turnus þe senzoure

¹ suspeckit.⁴ Inwade.⁷ wyth.¹⁰ falling.¹³ satyfit.² creddit.⁵ þa.⁸ approcheand.¹¹ þe.¹⁴ malidictioun.³ wter.⁶ sedetius.⁹ compōitour.¹² afferit.¹⁵ goddeß.

of aricia had rehersit þir Iniurius wourdis aganis þe king of romanis, he departit fra þe counsel. Terquyne tuke mare displeſer¹ at his reprufe² þan he schew³ for þe tyme, And sett him Incontinent be sum tressonabill slichtis to sla þis turnus, to þat fyne þat he mycht Incuſ⁴ be his deith þe sammyn terroure to 5
 (89). þe latynis be quhilk he opprest⁵ þe myndis of his awne * citejanis at hame. And becaus he mycht nocht sla turnus be opin violence, for he was ane prince of grete dominioun and rentis,⁶ Tharefore he opprest⁷ þe said turnus, ane Innocent man, be ane fals & dissimilit slicht,⁸ And be certane citejanis of aricia his 10
 vnfreyndis⁹ he corruppit ane familiare servand of turnus, with large sowmes of gold, to suffer grete nowmer of swerdis to be secretelie hid in þe houſ quhare þe said turnus was lugeit. Als sone as þir slichtis¹⁰ war done in maner afore devisit, king terquyne, ane¹¹ litill afore evin, callit all þe princes of latynis to 15
 ane counsell, as he war to be consultit with þame of¹² certane novellis & haisty materis quhilkis be divyne purviance taryit him
 p. 99. þis vthir day fra þare | convencion, to þe saifty baith of his life & þaris; ffor he allegit þat turnus had devisit tressonably baith þe deith of him and¹³ all þe¹³ princis of latynis, þat he mycht be 20
 him self alanerlie reiose þe hale empire of latynis. Attoure, turnus but ony dout had execute his tressoun on þame þis vthir day, war nocht¹⁴ þe man þat he desirit maist was absent. in verificacioun hereof þe said turnus did maist cruelie Inway¹⁵ aganis him, becaus throw his absence allanerly he was frustrate 25
 of his tressonabill purpois. Attour, gif It war lefull to schew þe verite, he doutit nocht bot als sone as þe princes of latynys¹⁶ was¹⁷ assemblit on þe nixt morow, þe said turnus sal cum armit with ane grete cumpany of conspiratouris to Invaide baith him and þame to deith; ffor (as he was sickirly Informit) þare was ane 30
 huge nowmer of swerdis hid¹⁸ in his secrete chalmer to þe samyn

¹ di[s]pleseir.² Risponse.³ sew.⁴ Increſ.⁵ eprest (!).⁶ grit dominat[i]oun & mychtis.⁷ eprest (!).⁸ dissimulat slyth.⁹ wnfrenddis.¹⁰ slyc[at]this.¹¹ a.¹² on.¹³—¹³ wthir.¹⁴ noth.¹⁵ crevlye Invy;¹⁶ *A. has* cruelte.¹⁷ latyne, *A.*¹⁸ war.¹⁹ had.

effect.¹ And gif thyre ymaginaciouns be vane, It may be sone
 knawin ; Praying þame þefore to pas with him to þe said turnus
² lugeing. þe feirþ Ingyne of turnus,² and his dispitefull orisoun
 made aganis terquyne In þe day afore, and als þe tary of þe said
 5 terquyne, made þe mater þe more credibill to þe latyne princes ;
 ffor þai belevit þare slauchter alanerlie differrit be his tary. Sone
 eftir all togiddir þai past to turnus hous, *witþ* purpois to haue
 gevin na credit to þir ymaginacioꝝns afore rehersit, bot gif þe
 swerd^{is} war found in his houß. At last quhen þai war cumin to
 10 þe place desirit, þai³ stude awfully about turnus, quhare he was
 awalkynnyt out of his sleip ; And first tuke all his *servandis*,
 quhilk^{is} (for þe lufe þai⁴ had to þare maister) maid debate. Als (90).
 sone as the * swerd^{is} war drawin out of sindri partis of þe houß
 quhare þai war hid, þe tressoun apperit manifest to all þe princes
 15 of latynis, And Incontinent þai band turnus *witþ* chenȝeis and
 callit þe residew of latynis to ane counsell. In þe quhilk^{is} (als
 sone as þe swerd^{is} war productit afore þame in opin Jugement) all
 þe latyne princes war movit aganis him *witþ* sic Invy for the p. 100.
 | tressoun aganis þame compasit, that he was condampnit to de
 20 *witþ*⁵ ane new maner of deith ; for þai band ane brandreth⁶ of
 Irne *witþ* mony grete stanys to his crag,⁷ and slang him in þe
 wattir⁸ of ferentyne, quhare he was⁹ perist.

¹ affect.²—³ *om.*³ tha.⁴ þa.⁵ to þe deth (!).⁶ brandrayt^{ht}.⁷ craig.⁸ ane waltir.⁹ *om.*

how king terquyne was new confederate with þe latynis; Of his weris aganis þe wolchis, and how he wan sindri of þare townis; Of his grete magnificence¹ in bigging þe tempill of Iupiter; how he send sixtus tarquinius his sone to dissauē þe 5 gabynis,² and how he gat þame randerit to his empire be tressoun. Ca. xx.

(LII) Tarquyne eftir þis callit þe latynis agane to ane new counsell, and quhen he had lovit þame gretumlie³ for þare punycioun takin on turnus, quhilk he condingly deseruit, In- 10 tending be manifest cruelte and slauchter to haue changeit the gouernance of þare empire, he said⁴ as followis: "3e nobill princes and senȝeouris of latyne pepill suld leif be anciant richt vnder þe samyn confederacioun & amite with Romanis as did þe Albanis, Sen þe latynis ar discendit of þe ciete of Alba. And, 15 as 3e know, þe ciete of Alba with all þe pepill þareof war translait to rome in þe tyme of Tullus hostilius." ferther⁵ he thocht It more proffittabill for þare singuler⁶ and commoun weill to renewe band and⁷ kyndenes with [þe] romanis þat þai mycht reiose and be participant⁸ of þe hie felicite succeding to romanis, Than to 20 suffir or abide sic hereschippis and direpcioun of þare landis & cieteis as þai sufferit afore, baith in [þe] tyme of Ancus marcius (91). and tarquinius priscus his fader. * The latynis war drawin with smal difficulte⁹ to þis alliance, how beit be þe said confederacioun þe romanis war ordanit to haue empire apoun þe latinis; for 25 nocht onelie þe hedismen¹⁰ & princes of latynis stude afald to þe opinioun and mynde¹¹ of tarquyne, bot als the punycioun maid on turnus for his demeritis schew be notabill¹² document quhat frute mycht follow be þare rebellious. Thus was þe band renewit p. 101. betuix latynis | and romanis, and charge gevin to all þe ȝoung 30

¹ mangn-.² gibbanis (!).³ grittumlie.⁴ sayis.⁵ farȝer.⁶ singulair.⁷ of.⁸ pertycipant.⁹ diffeculte.¹⁰ heidmen.^{10—11} om.¹² nobill.

pepill of latynis to convene, armit in þare best awise,¹ aganis ane certane day beside þe wod of ferrentyne;² & quhen þai war assemblit be his edict at þe day & place assignit, þat nane of þame in tymes cummyng sal haue þare propir capitane or³ þare
 5 propir baner vnder þare awne empire, he mengit baith þe manipillis of romanis & [þe manipillis of] latynis togiddir, and stabillit baith þe two armyis vnder ane band; and quhen þe manipillis war doublit in þis maner, he made centuriouns abone þame to hald þame in array. (LIII) ffor þocht Tarquyne was ane
 10 wrangwis & Iniust⁴ king in tyme of pece, ȝit he was nochȝt ane evill capitane in tyme of were; ffor in chevelrie & science⁵ militare he mycht haue [wele] bene comparit⁶ to ony his antecessouris, war nochȝt his slauchtir & tyranny⁷ obscurit þe glore of all his valeȝeant⁸ dedis. Tarquyne was þe first of all þe romane
 15 kingis þat movit ony were aganis þe Wolchis, quhilkis weris continewit⁹ eftir him mare þan ij^e 10 ȝeris. he tuke fra þe said Wolschis baith þe tovne of pomecia & suessa be violence of armis, & in þe spuleȝeis & direpcions¹¹ of þe saidis tovnis, he gat xl^{ij} 12 talentis als wele of gold as¹³ siluer; & be occasioun of
 20 þe said Richeß he tuke purpois to spend all þe money¹⁴ & riches gottin be þis aventure in ampliacioun of þe houß of Jupiter, þat þe samyn mycht be biggit with sic magnificence¹⁵ & honour, þat It suld nochȝt onely be sufficient to ressaue him þat is prince of goddis & men, bot als wourthy to present þe maieste & empire
 25 of romanis. & quhen he had dantit þe Wolchis in þis maner he rasit his army aganis þe gabyis,¹⁶ & led þe batell aganis þame, with les esperance of victorie¹⁷ þat he assalezit¹⁸ afore þare principall ciete, namyt gabios, quhilk was nere approcheand to rome, & was dounȝ fra þe oppugnacioun þareof alanerlie be force of¹⁹ pepil;
 30 and finally he assailȝeit¹⁸ þe said²⁰ toun be na fassoun of chevelry

¹ avyse.² florentyne, *A*.³ at, *A*.⁴ wrangus & on-Iust.⁵ science & chawalry.⁶ comparat.⁷ tyranny.⁸ wailȝeand.⁹ contenvit.¹⁰ two hundreth.¹¹ dereptions.¹² fourty.¹³ als wele of (!).¹⁴ mony.¹⁵ mangnyficece.¹⁶ gabynis.¹⁷ wicthore (!).¹⁸ assailȝit.¹⁹ befor þe (!).²⁰ sam.

Innative piete¹ list defend² þe barnis fra maist persecucioun of þe fader; for peraventure sic pepill mycht fynd be him sum birmand curage & sprete to euery cais of batall þat may fall, als weill aganis þe maist proude tyrane his fader as aganis þe maist feirß³ pepill in erde.⁴ At last quhen this sixtus Tarquinius was maid⁵ to departe with hevy⁶ displeßer & Indignacioun, for þe pepill apperit na thing commovit be his lamentabil⁷ complant and miserijs, The gabynis ressauit him with grete solempnite | and p. 103. glaidnes; and bad him haue na admiracioun how beit his fader tarquyne exercit⁸ siclike tyrannyis on his awne sonnys as he exercit⁸ afore on his cietejanis and compaⁿzeouns; ffor quhen (93). þir pepill may nocht be gottin to satifye⁹ his cruelte, he behuffit finalie to rage on him self. All wayis þe cummyng of þe said tarquyne was thankfull and plesand to þame, ffor þai belevit
 15 within schorte tyme to transporte the batell appering fra þe portis of gabyes¹⁰ to þe wallis of Rome. (LIV) Efter þis, quhen he was admittit to sitt on þare public counsale, he said he wald assist to þe agit gabynis in all materis In quhilkis þai had experience & wisdom, Reservand þe charge & governance of batell to him
 20 self; for in sic materis he had singulare prudence, becaus he knewe þe pussance of baith þe pepill, and vnderstude þe pride & tyranny¹¹ of terquyne was richt odious¹² to þe cietejanis & pepill of rome, Sen It was sa Intollerabill to his awne barnis. quhen Sixtus tarquinius had¹³ be þis slicht movit¹³ þe hedismen and principall
 25 capitanis of gabynis to rebellious aganis his fader, he past with ane cumpany of feirß young men, and made frequent direpcioun and spulejeis in þe romane landis, to þat fyne þat ane vane faith suld Increß Ilk day mare and mare to all his wordis and dedis, quhilkis war alanerlie instruckit to dissate and falsett. Nocht
 30 þeles he behaut¹⁴ him self at all Iourneis sa craftelie¹⁵ þat he was chosin finalie gouernoure of all þe gabinis army aganis his fader.

¹ Innatyfe peite.² diffend.³ force.⁴ Rome.⁵ makand him.⁶ havy.⁷ lamentatioun and vofull.⁸ excercit (-cet).⁹ satyfe.¹⁰ gabynis.¹¹ teranny.¹² odius.^{13—13} movit þis slyth

by (!).

¹⁴ behayffit.¹⁵ craftuislie.

slew ane parte¹ of þame as convickit² afore þe pepill, and vtheris
slew be occasioun made aganis þame be Invie & parcialite of
partie. Mony vtheris war slane opinlie be vane occasioun;
vtheris (quhare na crymes nor occasioun or falt³ mycht be
5 gottin) war slane quietlie out of þe ciete, and vtheris war banist
aganis þare wil; And schortlie all þe gudis of þame quhilkis war
owthir slane or absent was dividit amang þe commoun pepill,
⁴throw quhilk þe said pepill⁴ war sa tane with þe sweitnes of þe
eschetis & gudis falling to þame be ythand slauchter of þare
10 nobillis, þat þai war blindit and mycht noch knawe þe haisty
dammage cummyn to þare commoun wele; quhil at last þare ciete
was sa destitute & nakit of wisdom, gude counsel & support, þat
It was made ane facil pray | to the king of Romanis, and randrit p. 105.
but ony straik in his handis.

15 how tarquyne biggit þe tempil of Iupiter; of sindri (95)
prodigiis schewin to þe perpetuite⁵ and magnitude
thareof; And how tarquyne⁵ send his twa sonnys
to þe tempil of Apollo, to explore quhat was signi-
fyit be þe prodigious eddir; and of þe respons gevin
20 to þame; And how Iunius brutus kist þe erde.⁶

Ca. xxi.

(LV) The ciete of gabynis tane, and þe pepill thareof brocht
vnder romane empire be þir fals & tressonable slichtis, king
tarquyne made pece with þe pepill namyt eques; Syne renewit
þe band of confederacion with [þe] tuskanis. eftir þis settand
25 his mynde to policy and civil⁷ laubouris, first he made him to
big þe tempil of Iupiter in þe mont terpey;⁸ And becaus baith
he and his fader had made ane vow to big þis tempill, he thocht

¹ a pairt.

² convict.

³ forfalt.

⁴—⁴ om.

⁵—⁵ om.

⁶ erth.

⁷ cyueill.

⁸ tarpay.

he wald complete þe samyn, þat It mycht remane hereeftir in
 memorie of his empire and name. Attoure, to mak þe said
 montane fre of al vthir religionis, and na goddis bot alanerlie
 Iupiter to be adorit in þe samyn, he tuke purpoiþ to distroy be
 augury all þe remanent tempillis and chapellis quhilk war biggit 5
 and consecrate in It afore be auguryis during þe empire of king
 Tacius, quhen he, beand in extreme dangere, votit þame to his
 goddis for victorie to be had aganis romulus. It is said þat
 in þe begynnyng of þis magnificent¹ lauboure the goddis schew
 certane prodigiis and vncouth² mervellis, to signifie þe grete 10
 pussance and magnitude of romane empire; ffor quhen þe foulis
 be auguriis had schewin þare evident takynns, to suffir all þe
 tempillis,³ quhilkis war biggit in þe montane foresaid, to be evertit
 and distroyit, zit þai wald nocht admitt þat þe tempill of þe god
 namyt terminus suld be distroyit. Of quhilk tempill was gevin 15
 þis augurie and divinacioun following: The vnchangeabil seit⁴ of
 god terminus (quhilk alanerlie amang þe remanent goddis sal
 p. 106. abide vnchasit away fra his mansioun) Signifiis all thingis | ferme
 (96). and stabill within his hallowit marchis. * This werde of per-
 petuite beand accepit,⁵ followit ane vthir prodigie to signify þe 20
 magnitude⁶ of romane empire. apperit to þe lauboraris (quhilkis
 war castand vp þe fundament of þe said tempill) ane hede of
 ane man, with visage hale but ony corruptioun, quhilk signifijt
 þat þe said tempill suld be hede of þe warld: for all þe divinouris
 and prophetis quhilkis war in þe toun, And als all þe divinouris 25
 quhilkis war brocht out of hetruria, Interpret þis prodigie foresaid
 to þe samyn effect.⁷ All wayis þe mynde of [kyng] tarquyne was
 gretumlie⁸ troublit for þe Importabill expens⁹ daly rising¹⁰ be
 þis magnificent bigging; ffor all þe mony gottin be expugnacioun
 of þe ciete of pomecia, quhilk was ordanit to haue completit þis 30
 tempill, mycht skarslie lay þe ground and first fundament¹¹
 þareof. In þis mater I will gif mare credit to fabius Pictor,
 becaus he Is mare ancient historiographoure, Saying þe spulejeis

¹ mangn-.⁴ sait.⁷ affect.¹⁰ rysand.² wncoucht.⁵ exceppit.⁸ gritt-.¹¹ foundment.³ templis.⁶ mangn-.⁹ expensis.

gottin in direpcioun of þe said toun Extendit alanerly to fourty
 talentis, than to gif creditt to piso saying the samyn¹ extendit
 to LX^m pundis of siluer; quhilk sovm² was put by (as said Is)
 to the bigging of þe said tempil. ffor It is noch^t lichtlie to be
 5 trowit þat sa huge money³ (as piso allegis) mycht be⁴ gottin in
 þe direpcioun of ony ane toun. Attoure, þare Is na toun nor
 ciete adiacent of sic riches, þat þe spuleze þareof mycht haue
 bene sufficient to haue rasit þe fundament⁵ of þis magnificent
 werk. (LVI) king terquyne, setting his hail Ingyne & Industry
 10 to complete þis tempil, brocht sindri craftismen out of hethruria;
 And noch^t alanerlie spendit þe public & commoun money⁶ of þe
 toun apoun þis tempill, bot als he thirllit⁷ al þe pepill of þe toun
 to ware þare laubouris on þe samyn. And how beit þe pepill
 war continually thirllit⁷ and occupyt⁸ be him als weill in werely
 15 besines as policye, zit þai thocht þare laubouris þe leß displesand
 þat þai war occupijt⁸ in bigging þe tempillis of goddis with þare
 awne handis. Attoure, quhen he had completit the said tempil
 on his maner, | than he thirllit þe pepill to vthir mare besines of p. 107.
 leß honouris; and in sa fer as þai war occupijt with mare vile
 20 lauboure⁹ þan afore, þare lauboure⁹ was the mare displesand and
 sare; for þai war constrenit to mak public setis¹⁰ and scaffaldis in
 commoun placis quhare playis war devisit, and als mak ane
 commoun fousye¹¹ with rowme and depe synkis gangand vnder¹²
 þe erde to þe riverse, to purge þe toun of all * corrupcioun: And (97).
 25 to thir last twa werkis na magnificence may be comparit in oure
 dayis. king terquyne, eftir þat þe pepill had bene continually
 exercit with þir and siclike laubouris, he considerit þat þe mul-
 titude of Idil pepill wald be richt chargeand to his toun; & þare-
 fore to¹³ augment þe boundis of empire with new pussance, he
 30 send ane large nowmer of his pepill to new citeis, þat is to say
 to Circe and to signia, to þat fyne þat þai mycht, throw new
 Increscence and multitude of pepill, be sum tyme ane strang

¹ samyn.⁵ fundement.⁹⁻⁹ om.¹³ Here the third
hand in B.² soume.⁶ therlit.¹⁰ saittis.

resumes (p.

³ monci.⁷ thirlit.¹¹ fousei.

113).

⁴ bene.⁸⁻⁸ om.¹² onder.

Municioun and defence, als wele be sey as land, to þe pepill of rome. quhill terquyne was doing sic thingis, apperit ane terribill prodigie afore his ene; for ane serpent slaid haistelie out of ane pillare of tre, and made þe pepill *present* for þe tyme sa astonist þat þai fled with grete dredoure to þe palice, throw quhilk þe king 5 was strikin¹ haistelie *witȝ* na les fere þan hevy thocht. And howbeit to þe Interpretacioun of public prodigiis alanerlie war brocht þe prophetis & divinouris of ethruria; zit becaus þe king saw þis terribill sicht *presentlie* and was astonist þarewith, he set him *witȝ* þe more diligence to know quhat thing *mycht* follow þareeftir; 10 And þarefore concludit to send to þe tempill of Apollo, quhilk was þe maist Illustir orakil þat was in þai dayis, for responß. and becaus þe mater was ponderus and (as he allegit²) concernyt maist him self, he wald *committ* þe respons³ þareof to nane vtheris bot to his awne maist tendir freyndis, And send finalie 15 his twa sonnys⁴ titus tarquinius and Aruns tarquinius in grece⁵ throw mony vncouth and vnknawin landis, ⁶and mare vnknawin seyis. titus and aruns⁶ (als sone as þai war direckit to þis message) tuke *witȝ* þame lucius Iunius brutus, gottin on terquina the kingis sister. This lucius Iunius was ane man of mare hie Ingine 20 þan he semit for þe tyme; ffor quhen þe said lucius Iunius had sene his eldest bruthir, namyt Aruns Iunius, slane *witȝ* mony of

p. 108. all þe princes of Rome | be his [awin] eme⁷ lucius terquyne, he tuke ferme purpoiß to governe him in sic maner þat nouthir suld þe king haue occasioun to drede ony attemptatis follow- 25 ing be his curage, nor zit to desire ony gudis pertenyng to his estate; Traisting (gif he war nocht estymeit⁸ bot haldin in contempcioun) to be sovir⁹ of his life, quhare na defence apperit to sauf him be þe law. herefore be crafty Industry he dissimillit,

(98). & made him as he war * ane fule; And becaus he sufferit all his 30 gudis and landis to pass as eschete and confiscate to þe King, he was callit to his surname¹⁰ Brutus, þat is to say ane dum¹¹ beist. Sa plesit þe goddis þat vnder þe schaddow¹² of þat name þe

¹ stirkin, *A.*⁴ tuo sonis.⁷ *om.*¹⁰ *originally* firmanche in *B.*² belevit.⁵ grit (!).⁸ estemit.¹¹ doum.³ responce.⁶—⁶ *om.*⁹ sober (!).¹² schawdow.

deliuer[ar] of romane pepil mycht hide his curage, quhil he saw
 þe tyme respondent þareto. It is said þat þis Brutus, passand to
 delphos þe tempil of Appollo with þir two sonnys of tarquyne,
 erare (as þai belevit¹) to haue bene fule þan companjeon to þame
 5 in þare viage, brocht ane wand of gold Inclusit be his crafty
 Ingyne within ane club of horne, and offerit þe samyn² to Apollo.
 At [þe] last, quhen þir brethir war cummyn to þe said tempill,
 and fullelie satisfijt be responß of apollo of sic thingis as pertenis
 to þare fader, þai tuke new purpoiß in þare myndis, to Inquire
 10 quhilk of þame sal be king of romanis Immediatelie eftir king
 tarquyne. belive ane voce was herd out of þe lawest place³ of
 þe tempill, Saying: "O 3oung⁴ children, he þat first kissis his
 moder sall succede efter tarquyne." Thir two brethir commandit
 þis respons to be kept maist quiet, þat sixtus tarquinius þare thrid
 15 bruthir (quhilk was in rome) suld knaw na thing of þis responß,
 and haue na parte of Romane empire; and þarefore kest Cavillis⁵
 amang þame twa, quhilk of þame suld kifß þare moder first at
 þare cummyn⁶ to rome. Brutus knawing weil þis responß of
 Apollo fer discrepant to þare Interpretacioun and mynde, ruschit
 20 (as It had bene aganis his wil) to þe ground and kissit þe erde,
 becaus It was þe commoun moder of all mortall creaturis. Sic
 thingis done, þir companjeounis maid þame to returne hame.

¹ beleiffit.² sam.³ plais.⁴ jing.⁵ keist kawellis.⁶ cumming.

(99). | how king tarquyne segeit þe ciete of Ardea ; of
 p. 109. þe contenciounis amang þe princes of his army
 concernyng þare wyiffis,¹ And how tarquinius sixtus
 deforsit luces ; Of hir pietuous² complante and
 deith, And how king tarquyne w^{it}h his wyif³ and 5
 barnis war exilit & banist Rome be Brutus.

Ca. xxij.

At the returnyng of þir companjeouns to Rome, þe romanis
 war makand grete ordinance to invade þe Rutuleis. (LVII) ffor
 þir rutuleis had ane strang & riche ciete callit⁴ ardea, and war 10
 ane pepil in þai boundis and in þai dayis ful of riches ; quhilk
 thing was occasioun þat the king of romanis Invadit þame with
 batall, traisting becaus he was superexpendit in magnificent
 bigging with public werkis to recovir sum riches, be quhilk he
 mycht meis sum parte þe haterent [of þe pepill] aganis him. 15
⁵ ffor þe said pepill war nocht onelie movit aganis him⁵ for his
 hie pride, bot als war movit aganis him for þe surfett⁶ spending
 of þare laubouris ythandlie in his erandis and biggingis. The
 ciete of Ardea was first assailzeit, to se gif It mycht be tane be
 suddane assalt ; And becaus his purpois succedit nocht with 20
 felicite, he beltit þe toun on every side w^{it}h strang mvnicioun
 and sege. The sege continewitt⁷ at the said tovne, as oft oc-
 curris quhare ony batallis ar mare langsum þan scharpe, Sindri
 of þe nobillis and princis of rome had fre licence to pas and
 repaß fra þe campe at þare plesoure, And vsit þarethrow to haue 25
 frequent bankettis⁸ & collacioun with vtheris. It happynnyt
 þat⁹ ane certane of þir princes war at banket¹⁰ with tarquinius
 sixtus, Amang quham was terquyne collatyne, son of Egerius
 afore rehersit, quhare þai fell in desputacioun concernyng þare
 wyiffis,¹¹ quhilk of þame had þe best wife ;¹² and becauß Ilk man 30

¹ wiffis.

⁴ namit.

⁷ continewing.

¹⁰ bankat.

² pietewis.

⁵—⁵ om.

⁸ bankatis.

¹¹ vifis.

³ wif.

⁶ surfeit.

⁹ at.

¹² wif.

lovit maist his awne wife,¹ þe contencioun was þe more vehement on athir side. At last tarquyne collatyne said It was *nocht* nedefull to multiply wourdis, for It mycht be patent be gude experience ²within * few houris² how fer his wiff¹ lucre past (100).
 5 all þe laif baith in bewtie | womanhede and gude maneris. “And p. 110.
 þarefore gif þare be ony strenth in oure ȝouth, lat ws ascend haistely on oure horß, and vesy be quhat Ingynis & exercicions³ euery ane of oure wyiffis⁴ ar presentlie occupijt; And þat to be apprisit allanerlie quhilk apperis to oure sichtis in oure vnwarnist
 10 cummyng.” Thir princis war hait and tane be⁵ þe wynis, & come haistelie to rome. At þare cummyng to rome þai vesityt all þare wyiffis,⁶ & eftir þat It was fer rvn⁷ within þe nycht, thay passit⁸ all togiddir to þe ciete of collasia, and fand *nocht* lucre (as vthir princes wyiffis⁴ dois) passand hir tyme in lust & revel-
 15 ling⁹ with companȝeouns, bot fand hir late at evin, sittand in þe myddis of hir houß amang hir vigilant *servandis*, gevin to lauboring of hir woll *wit*¹⁰ vter besines. The victorie and loving of þis wyfelie¹¹ contencioun was gevin to lucre. Tarquinius collatyne & all þe remanent tarquinis his cousingis¹² and freyndis war
 20 plesandlie ressaut be lucre; And becaus þe said tarquyne Collatyne wan þe victorie, he Intertenyt þame *wit* [the] maist humanite and chere þat he mycht. At þis collacioun Tarquinius Sixtus concludit secretelie be Inordinate desire to haue his plesere of lucre be violent deforsing, ffor baith hir fareness and
 25 hir provin chaistite gaif occasioun þareto. Sone eftir þe princes foresaid Returnit fra þare Insolent and barnelie contencioun to þe campe. (LVIII) Within few dayis eftir, tarquinius sixtus, but ony avise¹³ of tarquyne collatyne, come *wit* ane *servand* to Collacia, & enterit in collatynes houß, quhare he was curteslie
 30 ressaut be þe *servandis* þareof, Nathing knowing his tressonabill purpois. And eftir þat he was plesandlie tretit at his supper, he was brocht to ane chalmer within þe said lugeing to haue past

¹ wif.² *wit* few wordis (!)³ exartiounis.⁴ viffis.⁵ vith.⁶ wiffis.⁷ Roun.⁸ past.⁹ Ravelling.¹⁰ and.¹¹ wiflie.¹² cousinis.¹³ awisse.

be nycht ; how beit he tuke litill rest, bot birnand in desire of his
 lust (Eftir þat all thingis apperit sikkir and all þe *servandis* in þe
 houß on þare hevy slepe) he come with ane drawin swerde In
 his richt hand to lucre, quhare scho was slepand in hir bed,
 and held hir fast *wit* his left hand, saying : " O lucre, mak na 5
 p. III. noyis.¹ I am Tarquinius sixtus ; the swerde is here | drawin in
 my hand ; thow sall de þarewith gif þow spekis ane worde."
 Lucre, awalkynnyt² out of hir slepe be þis affray, was richt
 astonist seand hir deith sa nere approcheand. Than tarquyne
 (101). began to * confes þe vehement lufe þat he had to hir, & 10
 besocht³ hir graciously⁴ to consent to his plesere ; And sum tyme
 began to boist hir with deith, assailzeand mony wayis to haue
 turnit hir mynde. And fra he saw hir obstinate, & wald nocht
 inclyne to his desiris by manassing⁵ & terroure of þe deith, he
 boistit hir by hir deith to bring hir to perpetuall dishonoure & 15
 schame ; saying he suld first sla hir self, and eftir þat he sall
 sla ane of þe *servandis* of hir chalmer, and cast him nakit in
 þe bed with hir, to þat fyne the pepill may vndirstand scho was
 slane for hir maist vile & schamefull adultre.⁶ quhen this cruell
 man tarquinius sixtus had vincust hir obstinate chaistite be þis 20
 last mynassing, & deflorit⁷ hir baith of hir womanhede and
 honoure, he departit *wit* his victorius luste to þe campe. Lucre,
 richt soroufull⁸ and opprest *wit* þis lamentabill displeßer, send
 ane messinger baith to hir fader & husband at þe sege of
 Ardea, to cum haistely to hir *wit* all þare maist faithfull & tendir 25
 freyndis, ffor sic ane terribil cais was happynnyt þat It was
 necessare to þame to cum but delay. hir fader, namyt spureus
 lucrecius, come haistelie to hir *wit* his [maist] tender freynde,
 namyt publius Valerius son of Valesius. And als hir husband
 Collatyne come *wit* lucius Iunius brutus, ffor þai met hir writ- 30
 ingis be þe gate quhen þai war cummand⁹ to rome. At þare
 cumming to Collasia þai fand lucre sittand full of sorow and
 displeßer in hir bed. Als sone as hir freyndis apperit to hir

¹ noið.² awalknit.³ besoucht.⁴ gratiuslie.⁵ minassing.⁶ adultery.⁷ deflourit.⁸ sorrowfull.⁹ cuming.

sicht, þe teris began fast to hale¹ oure hir chekis, And quhen
 hir husband had demandit hir gif all thingis war sauf,² scho
 ansuerit, "nay; ffor na thing may be sauf to ane woman quhen
 hir chastite & womanhede Is gane. O collatyne, þe futesteppis
 5 of ane vthir man ar left in thy bed. The body³ is allanerlie
 defoulit, but þe sprete Is Innocent & clene. The deith sall be
 witnes þareof; zit gif me þoure handis & faith þat þe adulterare⁴
 and deforsare of me sall noch^t leif vnpunyst. Tarquinius sixtus is
 þe man on quham I complene, qu^hilk was ressaut in my place⁵
 10 as freynd, how beit he has schewin him maist cruell Inemye; for
 he come armit on me þis last | nycht, And has reft fra me (gif p. 112.
 þe be men and wourthy to be levand) all my joy and solace⁶
 to his pestilentius pleßer." hir fader, hir husband and remanent
 freyndis made þare aithis in solempne⁷ maner to be revengit on
 15 þe deflorare of hir honoure. Syne * made hir consolacioun in (102).
 hir sorow and troubil, Saying sen scho was opprest be violence na
 cryme may redounde to hir, bot alanerlie to tarquyne hir de-
 florare; for hir mynde & noch^t hir body falezeit,⁸ And for þat
 cauß na schame nor dishonoure mycht be Imput to hir. Than
 20 said lucres, "þe sall haue sone experience quhat punycion⁹ my
 body deservis;¹⁰ ffor þocht I haue assolezit¹¹ me fra consent of
 þe tresoun committit aganis my husband, zit I wil noch^t exeme
 & deliuer me fra þe punycioun þat I haue Iustlie deseruit, And
 to be ane notabil exempill¹² þat na vnchaist woman sall leif be
 25 Imytacioun¹³ of lucres in tymes cuming." Scho straik hir self
 with ane dagare¹⁴ (quhilk was hid vndir hir clathis) to þe hert,
 & fell to þe erde on hir said dagare.¹⁴ hir husband, hir fader, &
 remanent freyndis gaif ane lamentabill cry. (LIX) Lucius Iunius
 brutus, seing þame sa ouresett with pietuous¹⁵ doloure, pullit
 30 haistelie þe dagare out¹⁶ of þe¹⁷ wound þat was¹⁷ springand with
 huge stremes of blude, And swore with solempnit aith as followis.
 "Be this blude, maist chaist afore It was deflorit with Iniure and

¹ haill.⁶ solais.¹⁰ desyris.¹⁴ dager.² saif.⁷ solemp.¹¹ assolzeit.¹⁵ sa petewis.³ bode.⁸ failzeit.¹² exempill.¹⁶ furtþ.⁴ adultrair.⁹ pvnitioun.¹³ Imaginatioun (!).¹⁷—¹⁷ vond Than.⁵ plais.

tyrannye¹ of kingis, And be þe goddis (quhilkis I tak in witnes
of þis my solempne² aith) I sal persew lucius tarquinius þe
proude, his waryit wiffe,³ and al þare barnis and freyndis with
fire and swerde and al vthir dedelie violence (þat I may do) to
þe deith, And sal nouthir suffir þame nor nane vthir creature for 5
þare offence to regnne abone þe romanis." And quhen he had
made this solempne aith, he deliuerit þe dagare first to collatyne
hir husband, Syne to lucrisius and valesius hir vthir freyndis.
All þir had grete admiracioun how and be quhat diuyn purui- 10
ance this new curage & Ingyne was enterit in þe mynde of brutus ;
And Incontinent as þai war commandit be him þai swore & made
þare aithis in his maner, Throw quhilk þai war turnit fra soroufull
teris and murnyng in maist rageand haterent & Indignacioun to
p. 113. revenge þe oppres|sioun done to lucres, And followit haistelie
brutus as þare capitane and ledare to confound and aluterlie 15
distroy þe auctorite of kingdomes. And in þe mene tyme þai
bure furth þe body of lucres out of þe chalmer quhare It lay
to ane commoun place quhare maist confluence of pepill was,
þat þai mycht be sicht of þis vncouth and terribill dede draw
king tarquyne and his barnis in þe haitrent and Indignacioun 20
(103). of al þe pepill. *Than Ilk creature beheld þis cruelte, and
lamentit It on þe samyn maner as It had bene done to ony
ane of þame self, And complenit pietuously þis oppressioun and
violent Iniure done be lynage and blude riall of Rome. The
soroufull contenance of lucresius hir fader movit þe pepill to 25
continuall teris. Than brutus reprevit þame of þare effeminate
murnyng, Saying It semit þame erare, sen þai war romanis and
nobil men, to rusche haistelie to harnes and revenge þis terribill
& Importabil cruelte be þe swerde on þare Inemyis and doaris
þareof, þan to lament þe samyn be commiseracion of teris. In 30
continent þe maist feirß and vailjeant campiouns of al þe toun
of Collasia come⁴ armit in þare best awise, and sone eftir followit
þame all þe young⁵ men þareof. Sic thingis done, þai left ane
buschment of armit men in collasia, to kepe þe portis þareof sa
cloiß þat na aduertising of þare purpoiß suld pas to tarquyne & 35

¹ tyrane.² solempnt.³ vif.⁴ coume.⁵ jing.

his sonnys ; Syne past with þe residew of þare army arrayit vnder
 þe gouernance of brutus to rome. Als sone as þis armit cumpany
 come to rome, þai made ane huge effray¹ and noyis² in euery
 partis þareof quhare þai come. Attoure þe pepill war þe mare
 5 astonist, þat³ becaus þai saw the principall men of þare ciete pas
 amang þe factioun of þis new cumpany, And Iugeit þarefore It
 was na vane thing, bot erare proceeding be grete consultacioun þat
 movit þame. And belive⁴ þe abhominabil dede & cruelte fore-
 said, quhilk made sa huge effray in Collacia, Is divulgate on brede
 10 in Rome, and causit þe pepill to rusch out of all partis þareof to
 þe merket. Incontinent ane officiare warnit þame all to compere
 afore brutus the tribune of þe garde (for he was cled at þis tyme
 with þat office). Than brutus maid ane orisoun afore þe pepil |
 with ane vthir mynde and Ingyne þan he had schewin afore thay p. 114.
 15 dayis, ffirst aduertising þe pepill of þe violence and lust of
 Tarquynius sixtus and of his odius deforsment made on lucrez,
 and of hir miserabil deith, and of þe desolacioun of lucresius
 tricipitin hir fader, to quham þis violent oppressioun apperit mare
 miserabil and vncouth þan was hir deith. Als schew to þame
 20 þe pride of Tarquyne, and of þe continuall miserie and lauboure
 to quhilkis þe pepill war thirllit be him in bigging⁵ of fowsyis⁶
 Closettis and condittis vnder þe erde ; And how þe Romanis
 (quhilkis war afore men * of armes and dantar⁷ of all pepil liand (104).
 about þame) war made þan bot vile lauboraris ; And als remembrit
 25 þame of the vnwourthy slauchter of Seruius tullus þarz last king ;
 And how tullia king tarquinis cursit wife rade oure hir faderis
 body in ane cheriot,⁷ for quhilkis þe goddis be Inuocacioun⁸ of
 opprest pepill apperit to puny⁹ þare Iniquiteis. I beleif Brutus,
 with thir and mare penetrive wourdis opinly rehersit in his orisoun
 30 (as þir present harmys and tyrannys gaif occasioun for þe tyme),
 movit þe pepill to sic Indignacioun þat þai abrogate þe empire of
 þe kingis, And denuncit lucius tarquyne, his wife and barnis, as
 Inemyis to be banist out of rome. Incontinent brutus with ane

¹ affray.² noið.³ om.⁴ belyf.⁵ biggin.⁶ fouseis.⁷ cheryoit.⁸ Inmolatioun.⁹ pvnice.

cumpany of feirþ and ȝoung men (quhilk's with gude will gaif þare names to stand in ordinance and to raiþ ane armye aganis þe king) past to Ardea, quhare he was liand for þe tyme, and left spureus lucretius president of Rome, with ane gude cumpany of armyt men to sauþ þe samyn fra [the] tarquinis. In [the] myddis 5 of þis effray tullia, þe cursit spous of tarquyne, fled out of þe toun with maledictioun of men & wemen in all partis quhare scho come, Criand vengeance on hir for þe terribil and waryit dedis be him *committit*. (LX) Tarquyne þe proude, astonist be þis affray (quhen þe rumoure þareof apperit in his campe), made 10 him *wit* maist diligence to paß to rome, to meiþ þe trubil appering; And in þe mene tyme brutus went by the gate þat p. 115. he suld nocht mete him, for he was ad|uertist of his *cummyng*. All wayis vnder ane tyme brutus come to ardea & tarquyne to rome, bot þe ȝettis war closit to tarquyne, and him self exilde. 15 The campe reiosing with grete blyithnes¹ ressauit brutus as capitane and deliuerare of þe toun fra þe tyranny² of king's. All þe kingis sonnys war banist on þe samyn manere. Two of þame followit þare fader and fled eftir to þe toun of tere³ among the Ethruschis. Sixtus tarquinius past to þe toun of gabijis his 20 native realme, quhare he was slane in recompensacion of þe grete murdir⁴ and slauchter made be him afore in þe said toun. Lucius tarquinius þe proude rang abone þe romanis xxv ȝeris. Thir sevin king's rang fra the begynnyng of rome to þe deliuerance þareof (105). fra þare empire ij^c xliij ȝeris. Two consullis war create * eftir þe 25 proscriptioun of king's in Comites centuriate be auctorite of þe president, be *commentaris* of Seruius tullus. lucius Iunius brutus and lucius tarquinius collatinus was made þe first Consullis⁵ of Rome.

And sa endis here þe translacioun of þe first buke of titus 30
liuius fra þe begynnyng of rome.

¹ blythnes.² tirane.³ Teir.⁴ murthir.⁵ consaill.

| Here beynnys the second buke of titus lilius of his first (100),
decade fra þe beynnng of rome. p. 117.

How Brutus solistit¹ þe pepill to mak þare solemne
aithis, neuer to suffir ony kingis regne abone þame ;
5 how Tarquyne collatyne renuncit þe consulate, And
how all þe tarquinis war banist oute of rome.

Ca. primo.²

FRA thens I will discribe the dedis of Romane pepill, frelle
deliuerit of all *seruitude* baith in were³ and pece, and
10 declare þare 3erelie digniteis and empire, mare punnant þe
lawis þan ony force of pepill ; And how þe pride of þis lant
king made⁴ *commoun liberte* richt plesand to þe pepil ; ffor all
kingis afore him rang in sic wise⁵ þat euery ane of þame mycht
haue bene iustly namyt foundaris of rome, in sumparte ekil be
15 þare Industrie to romane pepill. It is nocht to be doutit bot
þe samyn brutus, þat conquest⁶ sa hie & souerane glore in
banysing [of] þe proude king, suld haue done maist odious
myscheif aganis þe *commoun weill*, gif he, be oure haisty desire
of liberte, had deponit ony of þe kingis afore reherit⁷ fra þare
20 em*pire and kingdome. quhat trubill and Irreouerabil harmes (107),
suld haue followit, gif sa mony companyis of hirdis and stran-
gearis,⁸ fugitive fra þare native cuntreis, had Inuadit vthir with
tribuniciane contencious, haward liberte as þai pleit in þe clere,
and frelie deliuerit of al sere of kingis and pynckoun *gouerning*,
25 quhat myscheif had followit, gif sa strange & vnschyn pepill had
maid deteste aganis þe faderis in *ane vnschyn clere, atane tye*

¹ solistit.

² xxi.

³ weir.

⁴ see next line.

⁵ vye.

⁶ conquest.

⁷ reherit.

⁸ vnschyn.

affecciou¹ of þare wyiffis and barnis, Or afore the swetenes² of
 native cuntre (to quhilk men³ bene nocht haistelie³ acquaintit),
 had confederit þame *witʰ* societe of Romanis. for all thing^{is}
 quhen þai ar ȝoung,⁴ and *nocht* cummyn to perfeccioun, mycht
 haue sone bene distroyit be discorde; and now, becaus þe 5
 romanis has bene nurist be soft and temperate empire, þai ar
 brocht to sic firmance þat þai may *witʰ* ripe and strang pussance
 p. 118. sustene | the plesand frute of liberte. þow may In sa fer con-
 sider the begynnnyng of romane liberte⁵ þe bettir⁵ þat þe empire
 of consullis Is ȝerelie changeit, erare þan to haue mynyst ony 10
 thing pertenant⁶ to þe dignite ryall. Thir first consullis bure þe
 samyn privilege⁷ & ornamentis during þare auctorite as þe king^{is}
 afore rehersit⁸ bure during þare empire; ȝit þat þe pepil suld
 nocht be astonist nor more affrayit þan afore, gif baith þir
 consullis had apperit in þare sicht Clothit as kingis *witʰ* purpure⁹ 15
 and dignite ryall, Brutus be consent of his colleig come first to
 sight of pepil with habit and ornamentis of kingis. This brutus
 was na les scharpe kepare¹⁰ of romane liberte þan recouerare
 þareof; ffor he was þe first þat solistit þe romane pepill, richt
 desirus of þare new liberte, to swere with solempne aithis nevir 20
 to suffir ane king to regnne abone þame, to þat fyne þat þe
 myndis of þe said pepill suld *nocht* be brokin be sollicitacioun,
 requeist, nor proffitt¹¹ of kingis eftir following. and to þat fyne
 þat þe pluralite & frequent nowmer of faderis suld mak þe senate
 & court þe more pussant & strang, This brutus ekit þe ordoure 25
 of *senatouris*, quhilkis war mynist afore be tyranny of king
 tarquyne, to þe auld nowmer of iij^c¹² faderis chosin of þe maist
 nobil persouns amang þe horsmen. It is said þat þis brutus
 devisit be his prudence quhay¹³ suld be callit faderis, and quha
 conscriptj, amang þe senaturis; ffor conscriptj war callit þe new 30
 (108). faderis chosin at þis tyme to fulfill þe auld now*mer¹⁴ of faderis¹⁴
 afore mynist. It is na litill admiracioun to consider how proffitt-

¹ effecciou.² sueitnes.³—³ *nocht* be haisty.⁴ ȝing.⁵—⁵ *om.*⁶ *pertening.*⁷ *preuilaige.*⁸ *reheirsit.*⁹ in purpoir.¹⁰ keippar.¹¹ propheit.¹² thre hundreith.¹³ quha.¹⁴—¹⁴ *om.*

abil þis ampliacion of new faderis was to continew þe ciete in
 concorde, & to conferme þe myndis of þame to þe pepill. (II)
 sic thingis done, þe consulis made solempne sacrifice to þare
 goddis, and becaus þare was certane public sacrifices quhilkis
 5 war accustumate¹ to be done alanerlie be kingis (howbeit þe
 pepill had na desire of kingis) zit þai create ane preist to be king
 of all divyne service; and þat þe name of þis king suld nocht be
 noysum nor suspicius to þare liberte, becaus þai tuke presentlie
 sa | diligent care² in keping þareof, they subiect³ him to þare p. 119.
 10 bishop. I wate nocht gif þe faderis kepit Iust mesour in all
 thingis concernyng þare liberte, for þai garnist the samyn nocht
 onelie with materis of grete valoure, bot als with thingis of small
 effect. The name of tarquyne Collatyne (howbeit he neuer
 offendit⁴ aganis þe private or public weill of rome) was richt
 15 odious to þe pepil; ffor þai allegit þe tarquynis war oure lang
 hantit with þe croun of romanis. þai began be priscus
 tarquynus; and þocht seruius tullus rang eftir him (as vncouth
 heretoure severing þe tarquynis ane certane tyme fra þe croun)
 zit tarquyne þe proude recouert It agane as It had bene his
 20 propir heretage, conquest be tyranny and slauchter. And now,
 instantlie eftir þe proscricioun of tarquyne þe proude, the
 empire is returnit to tarquyne collatyne; And sen nane of þe
 tarquynys can leif in private life, þare name apperis richt suspicius
 to þe liberte latelie recouert. This rumoure rais þe ce and
 25 pece throw þe ciete, assailþeing⁵ þe myndis of pepill to depone
 terquyne collatyne of his auctorite. Than brutus, seand þe pepill
 solist with þis suspicioun, callit þame to ane concioun, [and]
 began to remember þame of þare solempne aithis latelie made,
 to suffir nane regne⁶ abone þame in ony tymes cummyng.
 30 Attoure It suld be defendit be vter diligence, þat na thing
 remane within þare ciete þat may be noysum to þare liberte;
 And als na thing þat may garniþ þe samyn suld be contempnit.
 ffor þir ressouns he was constrenit to releve⁷ þe mater, quhilk he
 wald neuer haue done, for þe affeccoun⁸ þat he beris to his

¹ accustomyt.² cure.³ subieckit.⁴ offendis, A.⁵ assailþeand.⁶ to rigne.⁷ Reveill.⁸ effectioun.

freynd. war nocht þe seruent lufe þat he beris to þe common
 well. informis him þareto. - I think" said Brutus, "þoure com-
 mon liberte is nocht recoverit as þit with sickir¹ fermance,
 '109, becaus þe lynage and name rial. Is nocht + alawerhe as þit in
 þoure ciete. bot is als decorit with ² maieste & ³ honouris. how beit 5
 þe sawyn. Is baith noysum & contrarious to þoure liberte. I
 pray þe, tarquyne collatyne" said Brutus, "to deliver us with þi
 awne benedicence of all here of lincus tarquyne þi coosing. we
 p. 120. afferme⁴ þat þow has ciekit the kingis out of rome. Do furth
 thy devoure⁵ & tak away þat offours name tarquyne fra þe pepill; 10
 and gif þow dois It plesandlie, þi cieteganis sal nocht onelie
 rander to þe al þi gudis, bot als sall supporte þe samyn be þare
 liberalite gif þow lakis. departe as freynd, and deliver þe pepill
 of þe terroure (quilk perchance is bot vane) in to þare myndis.
 for It is sa ruit in þare breistis, þat þai beleve⁵ all empire of 15
 kingis sal fynys in þare ciete, als some as þe tarquynis ar put
 away." Tarquyne collatyne, herand þis new and suddane mater,
 was sa astonist þat þe admiracioun þareof inclusit his voce but
 ony speich. And quhen he was begynnand ane orisoun to þe
 pepill, for purgacioun baith of his name & Innocence, The 20
 faderis stude about him, requiring him plesandlie to pas of þe
 ciete. þit nane of þame movit him sa mekil as Spurius lucesius,
 his gude-fader; for he was ane agit man of grete dignite, and be
 sindry persuasiouns exhortit þe said tarquyne, to suffir him self
 to be vincust be vniuersale consent of þe ciete. Tarquyne, 25
 dredand þat he suld nocht onelie tyne his gudis, bot als be
 ciekit out of þe ciete with mare dishonour, renuacit Wilfully þe
 consulate, & departit out of rome with all his gudis to þe ciete
 of lavyne. Than brutus, be avise of þe senate, cawmandit all
 lynage and blude of tarquinis to be banist out of rome. 30

¹ siccar.²—³ maist.⁴ efferme.⁵ divorce.⁵ beleif.

how publius Valerius was made consull in place of (110).
 tarquyne collatyne ; how sindri ȝoung princes of
 Rome war punyst for þare tressoun ; and how þe
 gudis of tarquynis war confiscate amang þe pepill.

5

Ca. ij.¹

The tarquynis beand exilit in þis sorte, brutus made publius
 Valerius his colleig be comites centuriat, for be supporte of þis
 Valerius, he eieckit the kingis out of rome. (III) and þocht na
 thing apperit mare sikkir þan haisty and maist dangerous weris
 10 approcheand be þe tarquinis, ȝit þe samyn ² was mare laitheand ⁸
 þan it semyt. fforthir, þe *commoun* | liberte sa recentlie Re- p. 121.
 couerit, was nere loist ⁴ be falset and tressoun, howbeit na thing
 was belevit les þan þe samyn. In þe romane ciete war certane
 ȝoung & Insolent persouns, discending of na obscure linage ;
 15 And becaus þai war companȝeouns to tarquinis, þai war licent
 during þe empire of kingis to frequent þare lustis with mare opin
 renȝeis þan ony vtheris, and war accustomyt to leif in princelie
 maner. Thir ȝoung nobillis, seand equale administracion of
 Iustice, complenit lamentably amang þame self þat þe *commoun*
 20 liberte was turnit ⁵ to þare *seruitude*. Apperit þarefore na thing
 sa gude as ane king ; for ane king was ane man fra quhilk þai
 mycht purches ony thing, quhethir ⁶ It war richt or wrang, &
 afore him was place of mercy eftir offence, & rewarde followand
 eftir gude dedis. And þocht he was sum tyme *commovit*, he
 25 mycht eftir be recounseld with his liegis, havand all tymes braid
 defference betuix freyndis & vnfreyndis. be contrare þe lawis
 hantit amang thir new consullis was ane thing richt Vnmercefull,
 & mare halesum to vile bodyis þan to ony Illuster persouns ;
 ffor þe samyn has nowthir opin ⁷ renȝeis, nor ȝit remissioun quhen
 30 ony cryme Is *committit*. herefore apperit *rycht* perrellus to euery

¹ xxiiij.³ lacheand.⁴ lost.⁶ quhiddir.² *Second hand in B. resumes* (p. 129).⁵ torned.⁷ appin.

that, knowing so many errors & defaults, to have no defence bot
 (111), otherwise be þare innocence. * The sony¹ nobilis heard sofast
 and very in þare myghtis for þe sentence of lawis þat war abone
 þame, soome þe legatis of king tarquyne, desiring alderly þe
 gods left behynd him and his freynis to be deliuerit, bot only 5
 mentoun to desire him return to his kingdomes. for þis legatis
 had schewin þare message afore þe senators, followin sichei dayis
 eftir grete consiliacioun quhat was to be done: for gif þe gods
 of tarquynis war nocht redressit, The slawys myght be lost caus
 of battel to þe tarquynis to lawid þe ciete. And gif þare gods 10
 war felment þat schal be sufficient mater and helpe to þe tar-
 quynis to continew in þare weris agins þe ciete. quhat þis mater
 was dependand² afore þe faderis. This legatis began to assaie³
 p. 122. grete materis be mony sichei wyis, & nocht onle clomit opynly
 restituicion of þe gods of tarquyne, bot als began to trete 15
 secretlie how þe said tarquynis myght makc eschye recover þe
 kingdomes. And becaus ilk man beleuþ þame to be rich de-
 siris⁴ & diligent in þare materis, þat assaieþ þe myghtis of þis
 young nobilis; be quham þare wounds war plesantly acceptit,
 syne deliuerit certane lawres of þe tarquynis to þe said yong⁵ 20
 nobilis, And eftir þe deliuerance þareof þat take consiliacioun
 with þame, be quhat besines the tarquynis myght be vnder nycht
 secretlie ressamit in þe ciete. IV. The credit of þis tressoun
 was committit to twa brethir Vitellius & Aquilius, 'quhais
 sister⁶ was mariit on brutus, and had to him twa sonnys, titus 25
 and Tiberius, quhilkis war put on þe secrete counsell and parti-
 cipant with þe tressoun of þare two emis⁷ afore rehersiit. Mony
 vthir notabil⁸ children war participant with þe sawyn tressoun,
 bot þare names be roust of þeris Is perist. In þe menetyme, be
 avise of þe faderis, was decernit þat all gudis pertenand to tar-
 quynis salbe deliuerit to þare legatis. Be tenoure⁹ of þis sentence
 war grantit certane space to þe said legatis to remane in þe ciete,
 quhil þare provision war made for cartis to turþ away þe saidis

¹ young.⁴ desyris.⁷ þir two enymes (!).² dependand.⁵ young.⁸ noble.³ assaieþ.⁶ The sister of þir twa breþir.⁹ tennoir.

gudis. The legatis spendit þe tyme þat was gevin to þame to
 þis effect with þir conspiratouris afore rehersit, solistand þame to
 send writingis to þe tarquinis; and allegit gif þe samyn war nocht
 send, na faith suld be gevin to þame apoun sa wechty and hie
 5 materis. The *lettres* quhilke war gevin to þir legatis, to mak
 faith for assistance of þir ȝoung nobillis to þe * tarquinis, made (112).
 þe tressoun mare patent þan It semit; ffor þir legatis afore þai
 war to departe war Intertenit¹ at þe supper² be solempne banket³
 with þir twa brethir Vitellius and Aquillius, quhare þai and þe
 10 remanent conspiratouris, eftir þat þe hous was Ischit of all
 suspect persouns, began to commoun of mony hie materis be
 new consultacioun. In þe mene tyme ane *servand* was ripelie
 aduertist⁴ of all þare tressonabill purpois. Attoure, he was
 aduertist⁴ þareof afore, bot he abade to se gif | ony writingis p. 123.
 15 war send to þe tarquinis, þat þe sammyn (quhen þai war takin
 fra þir legatis) mycht be þe mare evident prufe of þare tressoun.
 Als sone as he saw þe *lettres* deliuerit, he schew þe samyn to
 þe consulis, And Incontinent þir consulis tuke baith þir legatis
 and conspiratouris, and apprehendit þame but ony noyis, afore
 20 þai war aduertist. Syne with grete diligence seirchit þe *lettres*
 þat þe sammyn suld nocht be distroyit. Als sone as þir *lettres*
 war fund, þe conspiratouris war cassyn in presoun. As con-
 cernyng þe legatis, It was in dout quhat suld be done with
 þame; And þocht þai haue committit sic cryme þat þai *deseruit*
 25 to be punyst as Inemyis of þe ciete, ȝit þai war sauffit⁵ be þe
 law of pepill. (V) The faderis war sa commovit for þis tressoun
 recentlie ymagine, þat (howbeit þai decernit afore þe gudis of
 tarquinis to be deliuerit to þir legatis) ȝit þai retretit þare sentence,
 and defendit the samyn owthir to be deliuerit or ȝit applicate to
 30 þe commoun proffitt,⁶ bot allanerlie confiscate amang þe pepill,
 To þat fyne þat fra þe said pepill had Intromettit with þe gudis
 of tarquinis, þai suld haue na esperance in tymes cummyng to
 be recounsellit⁷ with þe said tarquynes, Nor ȝit to trete ony
 pece with þame. The croft of king tarquyne þat lay betuix rome

¹ Internyt, *A.*² sowpper.³ bankit.⁴⁻⁴ om.⁵ saiffit.⁶ proffet.⁷ reconsalit.

sum tyme king, bot þan exild & Inemye to þare public weil,
 Considering þe dignite consulare began be þe houß of Iunius.
 Als sone as þe faderis war ordourit in þare setis, Thir¹ bur-
 reouris come to punyß² þir conspiratouris, and quhen þe said
 5 burreouris had scurgeit þame with wandis þai straik of þare
 hedis with ane ax. The fader brutus na thing schrynkit with
 þe cruell punycioun maid on his sonnys, bot with faderlie piete
 beheld þe punycioun made on þame and þe remanent con-
 spiratouris, on þe samyn maner as þai Iustlie deseruit, þat he
 10 mycht be þarethrow ane notabil exempill baith of piete and
 Iustice for punycioun of all offence committit. * The conspir- (114).
 atouris being punyst in þis maner, Brutus commandit ane rewarde
 to be gevin of þe commoun gude to þis *servand* | that revelit p. 125.
 þe tressoun; and *nocht* alanerlie made him fre man bot als maid
 15 him citezane of rome. This was þe first man þat euir was de-
 liuerit fra servitude to liberte be Vengeance; and þarefore It was
 allegit that þis worde Vengeance began first be þis *servand*; ffor
 he was callit eftir Vendicius to his name, quhilk name mony
 3eris eftir remanit to be ane memorie, þat quhatsumeuir persoun
 20 war deliuerit be sic maner fra *servitude* to liberte he suld be
 acceppit as [ane] citezane of rome.

how king tarquyne, be supporte of þe veanis and
 cietejanis of tarquyne, Invadit þe romanis; how
 Brutus consull & Aruns tarquyne, recontering³
 25 vther in singulare batall, war baith slane; And
 how þe matrouns of rome wore þe dule habit ane
 3ere for þe deith of brutus. Ca. iij.⁴

(VI) King tarquyne, aduertist of þir doingis in maner afore
 rehersit, was nocht alanerlie movit with grete doloure, for his
 30 esperance failzeit in recovering his gudis, bot was als commovit

¹ seittis, þe.² pvnis.³ recontering.⁴ xxv.

with grete Ire and haterent. At last seing all his slichtis Inter-
cludit but ony out-passage, he tuke purpois to Invoid þe
romanis with opin weris; and to bring his purpois to effect,
he ¹past humlie about the citezanis of Ethruria and specially¹
amang þe veanis & cietezanis of þe toun of tarquyne, Requiring 5
þame to suffir him nocht, sen he was cummyn of þare lynage and
blude, to be violentlie eieckit fra his empire & kingdome, That
he and his 3oung sonnys perrisch ²nocht afore þare ene; Schaw-
ing als how vtheris of vncouth blude has bene ressauit to þe
empire of Romanis; And þocht he was native king þareof, ekand 10
daly³ þare empire with landis and Rentis, 3it he was exilit⁴ &
banist be tressonabill conspiracioun of his awne pepill. And
becaus nane was fund wourthy to succede eftir him, The faderis
(115). has dividit þe croun amang * þame self, and sparpellit his riches
[and guddis] amang þe pepill, þat na man suld remane Innocent, 15
bot euery man elike gilty with vthir. ffor þir ressouns he was
sett to recovir his realme and cuntre, and persew his Vnthankfull
p. 126. | liegis, gif þe pepill afore rehersit wald supporte him, in sic
maner þat he mycht nocht alanerlie revenge þe frequent slauchter
of þare freyndis with vtheris Iniuris done to þame, bot als recovir 20
sindri landis quilkis war reft fra þame be tyranny of romanis.
Thir wordis of king tarquyne movit þe veanis to his purpois, for
euery ane of þame, boldin with grete mynassing, thocht na thing
sa gude as baith þare landis to be recoverit, and þe schamefull
Iniuris done to þame revengeit be governance of þe romane 25
king. The name and lynage of tarquynis movit gretumly the
Inhabitantis and pepill of þe ciete of tarquyne; ffor It apperit
richt plesand þat þare name and lynage suld regnne in rome.
Be þis way war rasit twa ⁵armyis of twa sindri pepill, and followit
tarquyne as þare capitane, to recouer his realme & to persewe 30
þe romanis with batall. Als sone as þir armyis war enterit in þe
romane landis, the twa Consulis Brutus and valerius met þame
with arrayit batallis. Valerius led þe Oist of futemen, and
Brutus past afore the armye with ane cumpany of horsmen, to
espie þe oist of his Inemyis. on þe side aduersare was Aruns 35

¹ om.² peris.³ daylie.⁴ exild.⁵ thre, A.

tarquyne, riding in þe samyn maner with one band of hors-
 men afore king tarquyne his fader. quik was followed with one
 awfull army. Als sone as Aruns saw þe courours, he understode
 percellie the consulis war present in þare company; and fra he
 5 was past forthward one lill space, he knew brutus, and inco-
 nient he began to rage in must be, saying, "sone is he þat
 þes banist is fra nure cunre. Se sa proude as he procedis
 now, decort with nure armys. O se goddis Vengeouris of
 depress kingis, be favorabil to me." Incontinent he dang his
 10 hors with þe spurs, & kast down his spere drevn must awfullie
 aganis þe Consul. Brutus, persaving well his cunmyng, met
 him in þe samyn force: for it was one excellent ghere in thay³
 dayis to princis and Capitanis of armys to mete vthir in
 singulare bataill. All wayis þir two feirþ campions ruschit
 15 togidder with sic beidn breistis, þat name of þame take regarde
 to ony defence of þare bodyis, bot alantlie to wound þare
 fallow;³ throw quik the *forþ⁴ was sa grete, þat evelyne
 of þame ran vthir throw þare armoure and targeis to þe hart,
 and baith atanis fell of þare hors dede to þe ground, þe lauchis
 20 stekand throw þare bodyis. followit haistellie þe batell of hors-
 men Invading vthir with maist terribill furie, ⁵ And nocht lang
 eftir come þe futemen; bot þe victorie⁵ was vncertane, and þe
 batall fochtin with equale haterent; for þe richt wyngis⁶ war
 victorius, and þe left wyngis⁶ discomfist on evely side. The
 25 veanis (quhilkis war ay accustomyt to be vincust be romanis)
 war sloppit⁷ and put to flicht. king tarquyne the new Incomer,
 with his men of armes the cietezanis of Tarquyne, nocht alantlie
 withstude þe romanis, bot als put þame abak. (VII) quhill þir
 batallis war fechtand in þis maner, Sic terroure Invadit þe Veanis
 30 & terquynis, þat baith þare armys but ony forthir dangane severit
 and departit hame within þe nycht. It is said þat one vncouth
 and prodigious mirakil happynyt in þis last battall, for one voce
 was herd in þe nycht afore þe samyn in þe wod of Aisia þe
 silvane god of þe said wod, saying, "þe romanis sal be victorius,

¹ forþ.³ follow.⁵⁻⁵ om.⁷ stoppit, .d.² þa.⁴ force.⁶ weyngis.

and ane salbe slane ma of þe Ethruschis þan of þe romanis";
 And þarefore þe romanis returnit hame as victorius, and þe
 ethruschis as vincust. publius valerius (als sone as licht apperit
 on þe nixt morow) gadderit vp þe spulezeis of þe said feild, &
 returnit with grete tryumphe to rome; Syne beryit þe body of 5
 Brutus his colleig with all reuerence & honoure þat he mycht.
 Bot ȝit na thing succedit mare to þe glore of brutus þan did þe
 public sorow of þe ciete, made in his funerall tryumphe; ffor þe
 matrouns wore þe dule habit for him (as he had bene þare fader)
 The space of ane ȝere, becaus he was sa¹ scharpe punyssare of 10
 þare violate chaistite.²

- (117). how publius Valerius mesit þe suspicioun of þe com-
 moun pepill aganis him, and made lawis for þare
 singulare proffitt; how marcus horacius was made
 p. 128. consul in | the place of Brutus, And how he 15
 dedicate the tempil of Iupiter. Ca. iiij.³

Publius Valerius eftir þis sorouful⁴ victorie (becaus the myndis
 of commouns ar variabil⁵) was nocht alanerlie hatit, bot als
 hevely suspekkit with þe pepil; for þai belevit þat he wald vsurpe
 þe crowne, becaus he surrogate nocht haistelie ane new consul in 20
 þe place of brutus; And als becaus he began to edifie ane strang
 toure in mont Velia, quhilk be mvnicioun and straitnes of þe
 ground apperit Vnexpugnabil. Thir and siclike wourdis movit
 þe mynde of Valerius to hie & Insufferable displesoure, herand
 how þe pepil had consauit sa wikkit opinioun of him; And þare- 25
 fore to purge him of þare suspicioun he callit þe pepil to ane
 counsell, and nakit him (afore he made his orison) of al orna-
 mentis pertenyng⁶ to þe dignite consular, quhilk doingis made
 him richt tendir and plesand to þe pepill, becaus he devodit him
 self sa plesandlie of all ornamentis riall; ffor apperandlie he 30

¹ ane. ² chestite. ³ xxvj. ⁴ sorrowfull. ⁵ vareable. ⁶ pertenand.

confessit þat þe strenth and maieste of romane pepill was of
 mare pussance þan þe consulis. Valerius, (Als sone as þe pepill
 war assemblit to here his orisoun) began to loif¹ þe grete felicite
 of Brutus his colleig; for eftir þat he had deliuerit þe realme of
 5 seruitude, and brocht þe samyn in maist honowr, he was slane
 fechtand with perseuerand manhede to þe deith, afore his huge
 glore brocht him be Invy to haterent of pepill. Be contrare,
 becaus he was left on live behynd þe glore of Brutus, he was
 fallin in Invy and suspicioun of pepil; And quhare he was haldin
 10 sum tyme þe deliuerare of þe ciete, he was repute þan mare
 tressonabil þan þe Vitellis and aquillis, quhilk's thocht to haue
 randerit þe ciete in þe terquinis handis. "O romanis" (said he)
 "may þair nevir be sa provin vertew amang 3ow, þat It may be
 Inviolat but *suspicion. how mycht I be cryme of avarice (118).
 15 vsurpe þe king|dome, sen I was euer sa Vnmercifull Inemy to p. 129.
 king's? Suld I beleif my citejanis to haue me in ony fere or
 dredoure, howbeit I duelt in þe capitoll or ony maist strang
 houß? Is my fame of sa smal estimacion afore 3ow, is 3oure
 20 erare quhare I am þan quhat I am? The houssis (maist wise
 faderis) of Valerius sall nowthir be noysum nor contrarius to
 3oure liberte. Mont Velia sal be sovir to 3ow without suspicioun,
 ffor I sal noch alanerlie mak þe wallis of my houssis² equale to
 þe ground, bot sall als tummyll þe stanis þareof to þe fute of þe
 25 montane, þat 3e may haue empire abone me, 3oure suspect
 cietezane. Lat þame herefore edifie in mont Velia þat has mare
 credit of public liberte þan had Valerius." Sone eftir was al þe
 mater (of quhilk þis houß suld haue bene edifyit) Deieckit
 haistelie to þe vail³ vnder mont Velia; and on þe lawest parte
 30 of þe said montane ane houß was biggit, quhare now is þe
 public rew. (VIII) Eftir þis certane lawis war made be Valerius,
 quhilkis assoilzete him of all suspicioun movit aganis him twich-
 ing⁴ þe desire of þe croun; ffor þai war sa contrarius to þe said
 suspicioun þat þai schew him bot ane private cietezane, And he
 35 was callit þarefore Valerius publicola, þat is to say,⁵ þe woure-

¹ love.² houß.³ waile.⁴ tweching.⁵ schaw, A.

schippare¹ of pepill. The first law made be him was, þat ane
 appellacioun sall haue place fra þe faderis and consulis to þe
 pepill. The secund law was, þat Ilk man (Nochtwithstanding
 quhatsumeuir estate and dignite he be of) þat makis him to
 vsurpe þe kingdome of Romanis, sal be slane, and baith his hede 5
 & his gudis brint in sacrifice to þare goddis. Thir twa lawis war
 richt plesand to þe pepill, And war *pronuncit* allanerlie to þe
 pepill be auctorite of þe said valerius (þat he mycht þarethrow
 haue þe thank þareof). Sic thingis done, he sett ane counsell to
 surrogate ane colleig in þe place of brutus, And create spureus 10
 lucretius consul; bot he was sa fer rvn² in age, þat he mycht
 nocht sustene þe charge of þe consulate, & within few dayis eftir
 p. 130. he de|ceissit. In quhais place was surrogate mercius horatius³
 puluilus. I fynd amang certane auld autoris⁴ þat spureus
 lucretius was neuer consul; for þir allegis þat horacius succedit 15
 (119). Immediatelie in brutus place; or ellis gif lucre*sius was consul
 he did neuer na notabil actis, and for þat causis þe memorie of
 him Is perist. The set⁵ of Iupiter was nocht (as jit) dedicate in
 þe capitoll, and for þat cauß the two consullis kest cavillis,
 quhilk of þame suld dedicate þe said tempill; and becaus the 20
 cavil fell to horacius, his colleig Valerius past with ane army
 aganis þe Veanis. In þe mene tyme his freyndis tuke grete
 Indignacioun, þat þis Illustir tempill suld be dedicate be
 horacius, and set þame [sa fer as þai mycht] to empesch þe
 samyn. At last, quhen sindri thare attemptatis war fund in 25
 vane, this horacius was enterit in þe tempill makand his cery-
 monis and prayeris to þe goddis, as þe rite and custome was at
 þai dayis; And quhen he was haldand þe post of þe tempill in
 his handis, þai send ane schamefull messinger in þe tempill to
 schaw þat his son was dede; And sen his hous was vnchancy, 30
 & his son dede, he aucht nocht to dedicate þe solempne tempill
 of Iupiter. It is nocht facill to be declarit, nor jit Is It writtin
 be sekire⁶ authoris, gif sic constance was in horace to gif na
 credit to þe wourdís of þis messinger; ffor he ansuerit na thing

¹ worschippar.² rvin.³ heracius, A.⁴ authoris.⁵ sait.⁶ secure.

pareto, bot alanerlie *commandit*, gif his son was dede, to bere his body out of þe hous. Syne held þe post of þe tempil in his handis, continewing furth in his cerymonis quhil þe tempill was dedicate. Thir war þe dedis of romanis in þe first zere eftir þe
 5 *proscriptioun* of kingis; And at þe begynnyng of þe nixt zere Valerius publicola was continewit consull as afore, & titus lucretius maid his colleig.

how tarquinius solistit *prosenas*, king of Clusium, to (120).

10 Invade þe romanis; how þe faderis intertenit þe small pepill *witʒ* sindri kyndenes; how horace Cocles defendit þe brig of tiber quhil It was cuttit be his companjous, And how | he fred his self of p. 131.
 his Inemyis. Ca. v.¹

(IX) The tarquynis banist, as we haue schewin, & discomfist
 15 in þis last batall, fled to Laertes *porsena* king of Clusium, and with maist pietuous² requeist and prayeris besocht þe said *porsena*³ to suffir nocht þame, quhilkis war descendit of þe Ethruschis his cousingis, to be exilit⁴ fra þare native cuntre; & sum tyme persuadit him to suffir nocht þis odious maner lately
 20 rising in *proscriptioun* of kingis to be Vnpunyst. for liberte has sa grete sweitnes in þe self þat gif kingis defend nocht þare realmes *witʒ* als grete force as þe pepill desiris⁵ to recouir þare liberte, All hie estat⁶is sall be equate to⁶ þe lawest. Na thing sal be elevate; na thing sall⁷ be preemynent abone þe laif in
 25 the⁸ ciete, throw þe quhilk þe honoure of kingdome, the maist plesand thing amang goddis & men, sal be finist. *Porsena*,⁹ traisting na thing sa proffittabil as to haue his lynage and blude regnand baith abone þe romanis and Ethruschis, come with ane

¹ xxvij.² *prosenas*.⁵⁻⁶ and ⁶⁻⁷ are reversed in B.³ pietuous.⁴ exild.⁸ ony.⁹ *prosenas*.

awful armye to rome, and made þe senaturis¹ mare astonist þan
euer þai wer afore þat tyme; ffor baith his army was pussant,²
and his renoun richt grete In þai dayis. Attoure þe senatouris
dred noch³ onelie the⁸ vncouth and strange⁴ Inemyis liand
about þame with⁵ braid garnisouns, bot als dred þat þare awne 5
cietejanis, astonist be fere of Vncouth armyis, suld ressaue the
tarquynis within the ciete, and trete sum condicioun of pece
vnder maist vile and schamefull *seruitude*. The senate, throw
þis present dredoure, ceissit noch⁶ to Interten þe pepill with⁷
maist plesand wourdis & dedis; And þat na penurite of vittalis⁸ 10
(121). suld follow be þis present trubill, Sindry prudent men *war send
baith to þe Wolchis and cumanyis to by vittalis⁹ for the susten-
tacioun of þe pepill. Attoure, fre licence was gevin to þe pepill
to sel salt, how beit þe sammyn was sald⁷ afore amang þame
with⁸ grete price. Attour, It was constitute þat þe smal & 15
Indigent pepill sal noch⁹ alanerly be frelie exonerate of al tribute
p. 132. & custumes,⁸ | bot sall als be supportit with all chargis & neces-
saris be þe riche men of þe ciete; ffor It was found sufficient
charge to þir Indigent pepill to Nuris þare awne children, howbeit
þai payit nane⁹ vthir tribute. Thir liberall and plesand dedis of 20
þe faderis was occasioun to þe commoun pepill to persevere with¹⁰
ferme concorde at þare opinioun,¹⁰ Nochtwithstanding þe huge
trubill and hungir eftir following during þe sege of porsena;
Throw quhilk þe commouns and small pepill of þe ciete Na leß
detestit þe name of kingis þan did þe faderis and senatouris 25
þareof. Thare mycht na man conquess¹¹ be gile or tressonabil
slichtis sic favoure and beneuolence of pepill, as did þe senatouris
be þare singulare prudence. (X) Als sone as þe Inemyis apperit,
all þe pepill þat duelt to landwarte come for defence, baith of
þame self & þare gudis, to duell within rome; Syne garnist þe 30
sammyn with¹² strang soudiouris¹² and men of armes. sum thoct
þare¹³ self sikkir¹⁴ fra Inemyis be force of wallis, and sum be

¹ senatouris.² passant.³ þir.⁴ strang.⁵ victalis.⁶ victallis.⁷ sauld.⁸ customes.⁹ na.¹⁰ apinioun.¹¹ conquis.¹² sodiouris.¹³ þame.¹⁴ sicker.

defence of þe river; ȝit *nochtwith*standing þir Industrijs the
 Inemyis had almaist¹ gottin entres within þe ciete be ane brig
 of tre, war *nocht* It was þe mare valejeantlie defendit be ane
 nobill man namyt horace cocles, quham fortoun maid for þat
 5 day ane grete municoun of roman ciete. This cocles, set be
 aventure in ane rovme maid for defence of þe said brig, & seand
nocht alanely² mont Ianikill³ tane, and his Inemyis discending
with huge force to tak þe said brig, bot als his companȝeouns sa
 astonist þat þai fled, levand þare armoure and wapynnys behind
 10 þame, he reprevit⁴ euery ane of þame be þare name, and tuke
 baith þe faith of goddis & men in witnes þat þare fleing was in
 vane; ffor gif þai left þe brig *with* fre passage behind þame,
 Thare Inemyis suld be haistelie als pussant in þe palice & in þe
 capitol as þai war presentlie in mont Ianicle. And þarefore he
 15 prayit þame to returne, and cut þe brig *with* fire & Irne and al
 vthir violence þai mycht; for he suld resist þe dynt of Inemyis,
 sa | *fer⁵ as his body mycht suffir, quhil þe brig war brokin. p. 133.
 Incontinent þis cocles past to þe formest parte of þe brig fornens⁶ (122).
 his Inemyis, and made þame þe more astonist, That *nochtwith*-
 20 standing þe fleing of his remanent companȝeouns, he abaid
 allane redde to gif þame batall with maist audacite. ȝit in his
 extreme Ieoperdy two companȝeouns, namyt Titus herminius
 and spurius laertius, abade with him to eschewe schame; for þai
 war men of forcy dedis & discending of nane obscure lynage.
 25 Cocles, accompanyit with þir two companȝeouns, sustenit all þe
 first bront⁷ and furie of Inemyis. At last, quhen he herde⁸ the
 noyis and clamoure of þame quhilkis war cuttand the brig, þat
nocht was left þareof vnbet doun bot ane small parte, sauffit
 alanerlie for his returning, he causit his twa companȝeouns to
 30 pas abak to sum secure hald; Syne began awfully to turne his
 terribill ene fornens⁶ þe princis of Ethruschis, Sum tyme provok-
 and euery ane of þame to singulare batall, and sum tymes dis-
 pitand þame all, Sayand⁹ becaus þai war vnmyndefull of þare

¹ all maste.² allanerlie.³ Ianikle.⁴ reprevit.⁵ far.⁶ fornence.⁷ brunt.⁸ hard.⁹ saying.

liberte, and levand vnder *seruitude* of proude kingis, þai come to
 Invaid þe liberte of vthir pepil quhilk neuer offendit to þame.
 The ethruschis taryit ane quhile fra his Invasioun, ffor euery ane
 of þame beheld vthir, quha suld strike first; quhil at last þe hale
 army was schamefully *commovit* and with huge noyis slang all 5
 þare dartis at him atanis. 3it *nochtwithstanding* þir dartis fast
 stekand in his targe,¹ he abaidd obstinatie, gangand *with* maist
 sturdy² þais on þe said brig; And at last, quhen his Inemyis
 war sett *with* maist forcy violence to deieck³ him, rais sic noyis
 throw falling of þe brig, & throw clamoure of romanis reiosing in 10
 þe fall þareof, þat þe effray⁴ suddanlie rising þarethrow held þe
 preið⁵ of Inemyis abak. Than Cocles, seand him self Inter-
 cludit be Inemyis afore him, and but ony out-passage behynd,
 sade, "O haly fader tyberyne, ressaue þis armoure and þis knicht
 in þi propiciant streme;" and armyt in þis wise he lap in tyber, 15
 p. 134. And *nochtwithstanding* Innow|morabil⁶ dartis schot at him be
 Inemyis, he swam throw þe river, but ony harme, to his fallois.⁷
 This hardy Ieopardie be him done wil haue mare fame þan
 credence to oure posterite. The ciete was richt plesand to
 Cocles for his excellent vertew. Ane ymage was gravin to his 20
 similitude & sett in place of generall convencioun. Attoure, þe
 (123). ciete gaif him als mekil⁸ land as he mycht *cirkill⁹ about on ane
 day with ane pleuch. be þir wayis private lauboraris gat preemin-
 ence amang public honouris, ffor nochtwithstanding þe penurite of
 vittalis rising Ilk day in þe ciete throw segeing & oppugnacioun 25
 þareof, 3it Ilk ciete3ane defraudit him self of sa mekill vittalis as
 mycht support þe said Cocles quhil sum bettir chance of fortun
 occurrit.

¹ trage (!).² sturby (!).³ deiect.⁴ effra.⁵ preið.⁶ Innomorable.⁷ followis.⁸ mekle.⁹ circle.

how porsena segeit rome, and brocht þe samyn to
 grete affliccioun; how Valerius consull, be craft of
 cheuelrie, discomfist ane cumpany of ethruschis;
 how Caius mucius slewe þe scribe in stede of
 5 porsena, and causit porsena to scale¹ his sege.

Ca. vj.²

(XI) ³ Porsena, repulsit of his first assalt, set him be prudent
 counsell to sege þe ciete, and lade ane strang garnisoun of armit
 men within mont Ianicle; syne campit him with his remanent
 10 armye on the planis and brayis of tyber, And brocht schippis
 out of al partis to incluse the said Ryver, þat na vittalis war
 brocht to Rome, And þat his armye mycht spuleze þe cuntre
 on euery side *with*out Impediment. belive he brocht þe romanis
 to sic affliccioun, þat every gudis pertenant to þame, als well
 15 bestiall as uthir fructis, for fere of his army war brocht within
 rome. Thus þai durst put na thing vtouth þe wallis; ȝit þe
 Ethruschis war sufferit to rage with sic opyn renȝeis erare be
 wisdom þan be ony dredoure of romanis; for valerius consul,
 assailȝeing be mony occasiouns to tak ane grete nowmer of
 20 Inemyis sumtymes at advantage, quhen þai war skatterit at þare

¹ skale.

² xxviiij.

³ *The fifth hand in B. begins here (p. 145) as follows:—*

Porsena, Repulsit of his first assalt, sett him be prudent counsale
 to sege þe ciete, and laid ane strang garnisoun of armyt men within
 mount Ianicle; syne campit him with hir (!) remanent army on þe
 planis and brais of tyber, And browcht schippis owt of all partis to
 Incluse þe said riveir, þat na vittallis war brocht to rome, And þat
 his army mycht spulze the cuntre on euery syd *with*owt Impediment.
 Belyve he browcht the romanis to sic affliccioun, þat euery guddis
 pertenant to þame, als weil beistiall as *vþir* fructis, for feir of his
 army war browcht within Rome. Thus þai durst put na thing
 vtouth þe wallis; ȝitt þe ethruschis war sufferit to Rage *with* sic
 oppin reinȝeis erar be wosdome þan be ony dredour of Romanis; for
 Valerius consull, assailȝeing be mony occasionis to tak grett nowmer
 of *en*nymeis sum tyme at advantage, quhen þai war skatterit at þair

incursiouns, schew him self negligent in small materis, þat he mycht be the mare scharpe revengeoure of grete chargis quhen
 p. 135. þai occurrit. herefore, to draw his Inemyis fra | thare armye,
 he commandit ane large nowmer of bestiall to be schot furth on
 þe nixt day at porte aquillyne, quhilk was þe farest porte of 5
 rome fra sycht of Inemyis, traisting þame to be sone aduertist
 thareof be sundri fugitouris daly departing of þe ciete, for the
 (124). hunger and derth continu*ally rising in þe samyn; & as he
 coniecturit, sa followit. for the Ethruschis war aduertist be ane
 fugitoure of þis huge nowmer of bestial liand vtouth þe portis, 10
 and come haistelic with grete cumpany oure tyber, in esperance
 to tak þe haill pray of gudis foresaid. 3it afore þare cumming
 Valerius laid tytus hermyneus with ane buschement of men hid
 in þe gabell rew beside þe secund stane; And in þe samyn
 maner left spurius largius with ane uthir buschement at porte 15
 collyne, to ly in wate quhil þare Inemyis war past by, and to stop
 þare returnyng to þe rivere. The tothir consul, Titus lucesius,
 Ischit furth at port Nivia with certane manipillis of armyt men.
 In þe mene tyme Valerius descendit fra mont Celia, and was þe
 first þat apperit to sight of Ethruschis. Als sone as hermyneus 20

Incursionis, schew him self negligent in small materis, þat he mycht
 be þe mair scharp revengeour of grett chargis quhen þai occurrit.
 Heirfoir, to draw his enymeis fra þair army, he commandit ane large
 nowmer of beistiall to be schot furth on the nixt day at part (!)
 exquillyne, quhilk was þe farest part of Rome fra sycht of ennymeis,
 trasting [þame] to be sone aduertist þairof be sindry figitowris (!)
 daylie departing of þe ciete, for þe hunger and derth continualie
 rysing in þe samyn. And as he coniecturit, sa followit; ffor þe
 etruschis war aduertist be ane fegitour (!) of þis huge nowmer of
 beistiall liand vncowth (!) þe portis, and come haistelic with grett
 Cumpany oure tiber, in esperance To Tak þe haill pray of guddis
 foirsaid. 3it afoir þair cumin Valerius lade tytus harmineus with
 ane Buschment ¹. . . at part Collyne to ly in wait quhill thair
 ennymeis war past by, and to stop þair returning to þe Revere. The
 tothair consull tytus lucesius and schot (!) furth at port nivia with
 certane manipillis of armit men. In þe meyne tyme balerus (!)
 descendit fra mont Celia, and was þe first þat apperit to sycht of

¹ No break in MS.

herde the noyis of Valerius cumpany, he Ischit with his busche-
ment haistely fra þe wate, and chasit þir Ethruschis on lucretius.
þan raiß ane huge noyis and clamoure on euery hand be Isching
of þe romanis at sindri portis, throw quhilk þe Ethruschis,
5 cummyn for pray of gudis, & *nocht* equale to resist þare Inemyis,
war slane & discomfist; for þe passage was sa Intercludit on
all handis þat þai mycht *nocht* returne. (XII) Porsena, *nocht*-
withstanding þis discomfitour, continewit still at þe sege with
more Ire and haterent þan afore, throw quhilk raiß ane miser-
10 abil derth¹ ay mare & mare in þe ciete, And gafe² ferme
esperance to porsena to wyn þe samyn be lang sege³ alanerlie.
Than was in rome ane nobill childe of hie sprete and curage,
namyt Caius Mutius, quhilk havand grete Indignacioun þat romane
pepill, being⁴ vnder *seruitude* of kingis, war nowthir Invadit
15 with battall nor segit be Inemyis, and þan þai beand deliuerit of
seruitude to be segeit onelie be þai pepill quham þai sa oft afore
| discomfist; herefore, traisting to revenge this vnwourthynes be p. 136.
sum feirß and hardy Interprise, he tuke first purpoiß to pas of
his awne curage among the tentis of Inemyis; 3it dredand gif he
20 past on þis maner to be tane and brocht agane be [þe] wache⁵ as
ane tressonabil spy, as he þat semyt to revele in quhat estate and
dangere þe ciete stude, he past to þe senate, and said: "O faderis,
I will pas oure tyber, and enter within þe tentis of my Inemyis,
nocht as ane revare⁶ movit for affectioun⁷ & desire of gudis;
25 my curage Is [sett] to attempt *ane hie & mare souerane (125).
vassalege, gif þe goddis be respondent to my curage." The

ethruschis. als sone as hermineus hard þe noyis of þe valerius
cumpany, he Ischit with his buschement haistely fra þe waitt, And
chasit þir ethruschis on lucretius. þan raiß ane huge noyes and
clamour on euery hand be Isching of the Romanis at sindry portis,
throw quhilk þe ethruschis, cummyn for pray of guddis and nocht
equall to reseist þair *enimeis*, war slane and discomfest; for the
passage was sa Intercludit on all handis, þat thay mycht nocht
returne.

¹ dreith (!).² gyf (!).³ seig.⁴ beand.⁵ wache.⁶ reuer.⁷ effectioun.

faderis apprevit his purpois. Than Mutius enterit amang þe tentis of Inemyis *witʰ* swerde hid vnder his clothis, and thrang in quhare maist confluence of pepill was, quhil at last he come quhare þe king was sittand in his seit¹ riall. The samyn² tyme happynnyt his army to be resavand þare wages, and be 5 aventure þe king's scribe or ellis his thesaurare was sittand beside þe king richelie accutterit,³ and *nocht* fer⁴ different fra þe samyn ornamentis as þe king wore, gevand his consultacioun, as apperit, on some wechty mater. Mutius knewe *nocht* quhilk of þame twa was king, and durst *nocht* inquire,⁵ in 10 aventure sum men had tane suspitioun of him; ȝit becaus he saw þe princes of þe armye haue mare erandis with the⁶ scribe þan *witʰ* þis vthir þat sat beside him, he slew þe scribe in stede of þe king; syne with bludy swerde made ane gate throw his astonist Inemyis. *Nocht*þeles, throw noyis and clamoure of 15 pepill haistelie rissyn⁷ he was tane, and brocht afore þe king. Always quhen he was maist destitute of freyndis, and Inquirit in generall⁸ quhat he was, and quhy he slew þis nobil man, he apperit mare feirfull and mynassant⁹ þan astonist. "I am" (said he) "ane romane, namyt L. Mutius, ȝoure Inemye, & tho~~ch~~t to 20 haue slane my Inemye, certifying ȝow my curage & sprete Is na leß reddy to sustene þe deith, þan It was to committ | this slauchter. It is propir till ane romane als wele to suffir strong aduersite,¹⁰ as to wirk forcy dedis. I am *nocht* þe man þat Is onelie coniuirit in þi deith. þare Is ane grete nowmer of pepill 25 to cum behind me, to fulfill þe dede þat I haue failzeit. Tharefore gif þow thinkis proffittabil, arme thy self to fecht euery houre aganis þe samyn Ieoperdeis quhilk I haue now assailzeit; ffor þow has presently baytʰ þe man and þe swerde in þe porchis of þi palice þat sall sla þe. We, þe ȝoung men of rome, 30 denuȝcis batall to þe *witʰ* plane diffiance. Tharefore drede na vthir batall nor army, bot euery ane of my companȝeouns sall assailȝe¹¹ þe *witʰ* [þe] samyn Ieoperdy þat I haue attemptit, quhil

¹ sait.⁴ far.⁷ rysing.¹⁰ strang aduersiteis.² sam.⁵ inqwyre.⁸ Iugement.¹¹ assaill.³ accuttreit.⁶ þis.⁹ manisant.

- þow be dede." Porsena, movit to na les Ire þan Indignacioun with¹ þir wourdis, and richt effrayit² for þe huge dangere appering, commandit w^{it}h maist awfull mynassing þis Mutius to be circulit³ w^{it}h maist rageand⁴ flammes on euery side, and to
- 5 be brynt haistelic in þe sammyn, leß þan he suddanlie revelit quhat * watcheing⁵ & hid tressoun was compasit in his slauchter. (126).
 "O porsena" (sade Mutius) "aduertis þe how small regarde my cumpanzeouns takis of þare miserabil⁶ bodyis, in compare of þe Interminabil honoure þat þai seik. þow sall vnderstand be me."
- 10 And Incontinent he schot his hand in þe fire, quhilk þan was birnand on ane altare to the sacrifice of goddis, and brynt his hand w^{it}h sic constance as he had sufferit na pane þareof. Porsena, astonist of þis vncouth wounder, descendit haistely fra his throne,⁷ and commandit Mutius to be removit fra þe fire.
- 15 "pas þi way" (said Porsena) "þow has done mare displeßer to þi self þan to me. I suld command þe to be louit of maist provin vertew, gif þe sammyn had bene assailzeit for defence of my cuntre; And now be richt of batall I will suffir þe to departe fre, but ony hurte or displeßer of my army, quhare þow list."
- 20 Than Mutius, thinkand þat he wald recompens⁸ þe king w^{it}h siclike rewarde, gude deid, and meritis, said, "becaus þow, nobil prince, has sa grete sicht to vertew, I will schaw, for þi graci⁹us meritis done to me, þe thing þat I wald neuer haue schawin for ony | grevous punycioun or boist¹⁰ þat mycht haue followit. p. 138.
- 25 herefore vnderstand we are iij¹¹ men, quhilkis ar al princis and Illustir persouns of rome, sworne of ane opinioun and mynde in þi deith. And þocht my aventure was first, euery ane of þame sall sailze as þai best may, quhill þow be finalie¹² slane." (XIII)
 Mutius (becaus he was deliuerit fra þe deith for birnyng of his
- 30 richt hand) was callit Seuola¹³ to his new surname. Porsena was sa astonist be þis first aventure, for na thing failzeit in his deith bot alanerlie þat þe hand 3eid wrang, þat he send his legatis

¹ be.² affrayit.³ cerculit.⁴ regeand.⁵ waching.⁶ meserable.⁷ torne (!).⁸ recompence.⁹ grati⁹ous.¹⁰ boist.¹¹ thre hundreth.¹² fynelie.¹³ seuola, A.

to rome, offering of his fre benevolence to trete peace¹ with romanis ; for he thocht richt dangerus to abide þe chance of euery ane of þir iij² knichtis, quhilkis war (as he belevit) all coniuirit in his deith. the³ legatis desirit þe tarquynis to be restorit to þare empire,⁴ how beit þe samyn was in vane ; for þocht þe said 5 porsena desirit þe tarquinis to be restorit, he knewe na thing bettir þan repulß of sic desiris. Nochtþeles, becaus he promittit to þe tarquinis to lauboure for þare restitucioun, he desirit þe samyn alanerlie to saif his aith. In þis peace¹ was tretit⁵ þat þe landis tane afore fra þe veanis sal be restorit. It was⁶ als 10 (127). expressit in þe said tretie þat romanis *sal gif plegeis for obseruacioun of þir poyntis, gif þai desirit porsena to remove his army fra mont Ianicle. The peace⁷ tretit in þis maner, Porsena rasis his army⁸ fra mont Ianicle,⁸ and departit nocht allanerlie þarefra,⁹ bot als out of all vthir landis pertenyng¹⁰ to þe romanis. 15 The faderis, for þis hie & singulare vassalage¹¹ done be Mutius seuola,¹² gaif to him ane large heretage, and landis liand beþound¹³ tyber, callit mony þeris eftir Mutius medois.

Off the hardy Vassalege¹¹ done be Chelia þe romane virgin ; of þe selling of king porsenais vittalis ; how 20 Aruns his son was slane and his army discomfist be þe Cumanis ; how porsena send his legatis to rome & of þe ansuere made to þame. Ca. vij.¹⁴

p. 139. | Becaus vertew was honorit in þis wise, It gaif occasioun to wemen to do¹⁵ gay vassalege.¹⁵ amang þe romanis was ane 25 virgine namyt chelia, quhilk was gevin with mony vthir plegeis, þoung men & women,¹⁶ to porsena, for observacioun of trewis afore contrakkit. This Chelia, seand þe tentis of hethruschis

¹ peax.² thre hundret.³ His.⁴ emprice.⁵ trettit.⁶ is.⁷ peice.⁸—⁸ om.⁹ out of mont Ianicle.¹⁰ pertinand.¹¹ vaslage.¹² seuola, A. ; seuala, B.¹³ beþond.¹⁴ xxxix (!).¹⁵—¹⁵ honest waslage.¹⁶ wemen.

(quhare scho was brocht) *nocht* fer distant fra þe brayis¹ of tyber, begilit hir kepar; Syne *witʰ* þe remanent virginis (quhilkis war gevin as plege² in þe samyn maner) come throw þe army of Ethruschis, and nocht onelie swam oure tyber, bot als restorit³

5 þame but ony displeßer to þare freyndis. Als sone as porsena was aduertist of þis hardy vassalage,⁴ he grewe in vehement Ire, and send haistelie his legatis to rome, desiring þe said virgine Chelia to be restorit to him as principall plege;⁵ for of þe remanent plegeis be hir reskewit he tuke litill force. And

10 becaus he thocht þis last Interprise done be chelia of mare renoun þan was þe vassalage⁴ done latelie be Cocles or Mutius, he declarit be his oratouris (gif þis virgine war *nocht* deliuerit) he suld *nocht* onelie hald þe trewis as brokin, bot als Invaid þe romanis *witʰ* new weris; promittinȝ als, gif þis chelia war

15 deliuerit, to restore hir but ony displeßer to hir freyndis. faith was keptit but violacioun on athir side; *ffor þe romanis be (128). tenoure of þare confederacioun deliuerit þis virgine, & porsena *nocht* alanerlie keptit hir but ony displeßer, bot als honorit hir for hir excellent vertu;⁶ Syne gaif hir fre licence to cheiße ane

20 parte of þe plegeis, quham scho best plesit, to returne hame with hir. This virgin, quhen þe plegeis war brocht afore hir, chesit sa mony of þame as war ʒoung, but ony haris on þare beirdis,⁷ quhilk doing was richt commendabill to þe virginite of goddis, and als richt probabil⁸ be consent of þe remanent plegeis, becaus

25 þe age⁹ reddiest to ressaue Iniure of Inemyis suld haue bene erast deliuerit. þe peace¹⁰ renewit in þis sorte, The romanis decorit þis virgine for hir singulare vertew *witʰ* new maner of loving; for þai made ane ymage to hir similitude, sittand on ane hors, and sett þe samyn in þe hie way. | (XIV) throw this peceabill¹¹ departing p. 140.

30 of porsena fra rome, ane terribill rite was institute be þe auld faderis, continewing to oure dayis. Amang mony vthir solemniteis now vsit, occurris ane horribill custume Ilk ʒere to sell þe gudis of porsena. It is necessare to say þe begynnynȝ of þis rite

¹ brais.⁴ wasslage.⁷ birdis.¹⁰ peax.² plaig.⁵ prince, *A.*⁸ profitable (1).¹¹ petiable.³ returnit.⁶ bewtie, *A.*⁹ aig.

raiff owthir during þe sege of porsena at rome, continewing ay in
 tyme of peace; Or ellis to say, It began of ane mare freyndlie
 begynnynge þan þe name and titill of It beris, That is to say, to
 sell þe gudis of porsena *witʰ* maist Inemyte.¹ howbeit sindri
 opiniouns ar of þis mater, ȝit þe thing maist approcheand to 5
 verite Is be þis way as we haue schewin.² quhen porsena was to
 departe, eftir þat he had rasit his tentis fra mont Ianicle, he had
 incredibill provisioun³ of vittalis brocht to him out of þe maist
 riche partis of Ethruria, & gaif þe samyn be his liberalite to
 romanis; for þare ciete was waistit throw lang sege. herefore 10
 þat þe gudis of porsena suld *nocht* pas in pray amang þe pepill,
 It come in vse to sell ȝerelie þe gudis of porsena *witʰ* *inimite*.¹
 thus þe said vittalis war callit þe gudis of porsena, to be erare
 ane memorie⁴ of þare benevolence towart porsena, þan of ony
 augmentacioun made be þame to his riches; ffor sic thingis was 15
nocht in þe power of Romanis, quhen Porsena had put ane end
 in þis maner to romane weris. þat þe rasing of his army to þai
 boundis suld *nocht* appere in vane, he send his son Aruns *witʰ*
 ane parte of his army to sege þe toun of Arycia. The aricianis
 at his first *cummyn*⁵ war gretumlie astonist; ȝit *witʰin* schort 20
 space eftir, þai gat sic supportis fra þe latynis and Cumanys, þat
 (129). þai tuke auda*cite⁶ to decerne⁷ þe chance of batall be þe swerde.
 Als sone as þe batallis war Ionit,⁸ the Ethruschis come *witʰ* sic
 properant furie be manhede of Aruns, þat þe aricianis war put
 to flicht; bot þe Cwmanis (quhilkis war arrayit in ane vthir 25
 weyng) sum parte be þare crafty Industry eschewit þe violence
 of Ethruschis; quhill at [þe] last þai saw þe said Ethruschis
 dividit but array, & þan come haistelie with displayit baner on
 p. 141. þare bakkis. Thus war þe | Ethruschis in myddis of þare
 victorie discomfist. ane parte of þir Ethruschis, seand Aruns 30
 slane, & havand no maner refuge, come but ony wappynnys to
 rome, quhare þai war plesandlie ressaut & curit of þare woundis.
 parte of þame abade still in rome as citezanis þareof; vtheris

¹ inmite.² haif now schawin.³ incredible promissioun (!).⁴ memore.⁵ *cunning*.⁶ *adicate*.⁷ disseme.⁸ Iunit.

returnit hame & schewe þe benevolence of romanis. ȝit mony of
 þame remanit stil in rome, and gat certane boundis within þe
 wallis thareof, namyt þe Thuskane rew, to thare habitacioun.
 (XV) The nixt ȝere Valerius publicola and publius lucrecius ware
 5 made consullis. In quhilk ȝere come þe legatis of porsena to
 rome, desiring king tarquyne to be restorit to his realme. It was
 ansuerit be romanis, þai wald send þare legatis with þare mynde
 & ansuere to porsena. sone eftir war send to him certane of þe
 maist honorabil [men] and wise faderis of rome; for þocht þe
 10 romanis mycht haue gevin schort ansuere neuer to ressaue ony
 kingis in þare ciete, ȝit þai thoct mare expedient to send þe
 maist wise faderis as ambassiatouris to him with þare ansuere, þan
 to haue gevin ony ansuere¹ to his legatis in rome; traisting to
 put perpetuall silence² to sic desiris in tymes cummyng, & þat
 15 þe myndis of romanis and Ethruschis (considering³ þe grete
 humanite and tendirnes þan standing betuix⁴ þame) suld nocht
 be travellit with ony forthir sollicitude or troubill; becaus he
 socht baith þe thing þat was noysum and contrarius⁵ to romane
 liberte. And leß þan romanis war deliuerit wilfully to distroy
 20 þame self, þai wald aluterly denye his desiris, for þe romanis
 desiris nocht to leif⁶ vnder seruitude of kingis, bot alanerlie to
 reiose⁷ þare liberte. And for þat cauß þai war extremelie
 resoluut erare to opin⁸ þare portis to maist dedelie Inemyis þan
 to kingis. Attoure, þai war all resolute of ane mynde, to put
 25 ane end alß sone to þare ciete as to þare liberte; ⁹And for þir
 mocious desirit porsena (gif he desirit þe romane ciete vndis-
 troyit) to suffir þe *cietezanis þareof to leif in liberte.⁹ King (130).
 porsena, vincust¹⁰ be thir ressouns, and seand þe romanis sa
 obstinate in defence of þare liberte, said, "I sal neuer infest nor
 30 trubil ȝow ony forthir wíth sic desiris, be|caus ȝoure myndis ar p. 142.
 sett sa constantly in contrare my desiris. I wil nocht dissaue
 the tarquynis ony forther with vane behechtis to recouer þare
 realme, And quhiddel¹¹ þai wil leif in pece¹² or were, þai sal

¹ anßer.² scilence.³ considring.⁴ betueix.⁵ contryius (!).⁶ lyf.⁷ reoß (!).⁸ oppin.⁹—⁹ om.¹⁰ wincowst.¹¹ quydder.¹² pice.

serch new habitacioun, in aventure þai fynd occasioun to dissolue þe amite and kyndenes now standing betuix¹ me and romanis." Porsena schew him mare plesand in his wourdis þan in his dedis to romanis; for he *nocht* alanerlie restorit to þame all þare plegeis (quhilkis war laid afore to him in ostage,² for obserua- 5 cioun of all poyntis contrackit at þe rasing of his sege fra Mont Ianicle) bot als restorit to þame þe landis of Veanis, quhilkis war tane fra þame be his contract made afore at mont Ianicle. king tarquyne, disparit all wayis to recouer his realme, fled to his maich mamilius Octavius tusculus, prince of latynis, be quhais 10 departing gude peace³ continewit betuix¹ Ethruschis & romanis.

how þe Sabynis war dantit; Of þe deith of valerius publicola, and of þe [generall] doloure made for his deith; how þe aruncis war vincust, and pomecia equate to þe ground; and how þe nobillis and 15 princes of þe said ciete war slane, and þe cietezanis þareof sauld. Ca. viij.⁴

(XVI) In the nixt 3ere M.⁵ Valerius and pub. posthumius war made consullis, and faucht þe samyn 3ere with grete felicite aganis þe sabinis, and tryumphit. the sabinis, *nochtwith*standing 20 þis discomfitoure, made þare ordinance to Invade þe romanis *with* greter army þan afore. The romanis, suspeckand⁶ sum occult weris to follow be Mamilius tusculus, maich to king tarquyne, howbeit þe samyn *nocht* opinlie apperit, 3it to mete all haisty danger þat mycht occur þarethrow, Valerius publicola & 25 (131). titus lucrecius war made consullis. In þe mene *tyme rais sic sediciouns amang þe sabinis, concernyng þe tretting of were and peace,⁷ þat þe samyn made þe romanis mare pussant þan afore; for Appius Clausus (quhilk was eftir callit Appius Claudius), seand he mycht *nocht* be partie⁸ to sedicius lymmaris desirus⁹ 30

¹ betweix.² hostage.³ paix.⁴ xxx.⁵ The 3eir nixt following Marcus.⁶ suspecand.⁷ paix.⁸ perty.⁹ dysyris.

| of trubill (becaus he was ane luffare of peace¹) come fra þe loch p. 143.
 of regill with ane grete cumpany of his freyndis to rome. Thir
 sabynis, quhilk come w^{it}h appius, war sa plesandlie ressaut þat
 þai war made cietezanis of rome, and gat² certane landis liand
 5 bezound þe river of Anien to þare sustentacioun. Thir pepil, be
 cummyng of new freyndis, war callit þe auld tribe of Claudius.
 Appius for his wisdome³ & riches was ekit to þe nowmer of
 faderis; bot he come sone eftir in grete haitrent of sindri grete
 princes of Rome. The consulis nocht lang eftir come with ane
 10 awful army in þe sabyne⁴ landis; and quhen þai had waistit þe
 sabynis be frequent Skarmussing⁵ & direptioun of þare landis,
 In sic maner þat na rebelloun be þame mycht appere mony
 3eris eftir, þai returnit w^{it}h grete tryumphe to rome. The nixt
 3ere Agrippa meninius and publius⁶ posthumius war made
 15 consulis. The samyn 3ere publius⁶ Valerius, namyt be romanis
 þe prince of pece and war,⁷ deceissit with Interminabill glore;
 howbeit he was richt pure in riches, ffor nocht w^{it}standing his
 excellent dedis sa oft sustenit for þe commoun weil, he deceissit
 in sic pouerte þat all his gudis war nocht sufficient to bery his
 20 body; And was beryit þarefore be expens of þe commoun purf.
 The ladyis & matronis of rome lamentit his deith in þe samyn
 maner as þai did Brutus. The samyn 3ere twa townis namyt
 pomecia and Chora (quhilkis war afore Colonyis of latynis) past
 fra þe romanis to þe opinioun of Aruncis. This occasioun movit
 25 þe romanis to cum w^{it}h strang army aganis þe Aruncis. Thir
 aruncis, at þe first entreß of þe consullis in þare land, gaif batall,
 & war discomfist and chaist to þe⁸ toun of pomecia, bot þe
 slauchter was na leß eftir þan afor þe victorie, [for] few [war]
 tane and mony slane, & sa mony as war tane war all slane; and
 30 abone þis cruelty the plegeis (quhilkis war iij⁹ in nowmer) mycht
 nocht be sauffit.¹⁰ The consullis eftir þis victorie¹¹ tryumphit in
 rome. (XVII) * The nixt 3ere Opiter Virginius and spurius (132).
 Cassius war made consullis, quhilkis sone eftir þare electioun

¹ a luffar of peax.⁴ saben.⁷ peax and weir.¹⁰ saiffit.² gart, both.⁵ scarmuschi.⁸ pair.¹¹ victourie.³ wosdome.⁶—⁶ om.⁹ thre hundret.

assailzeit to tak be force þe ciete of pomecia; and becaus þare
 p. 144. | oppugnacioun succedit *nocht with* felicite, þai assailzeit to tak
 þe ciete be sowis¹ and vthir [sindry] Instrumentis of were. The
 Aruncis war sa boldin in haterent (howbeit þai had litill esperance²
 of victorie), þat þai Ischit in *grete* nowmer on þe romanis, armyt³ 5
 mare with firebrandis þan ony martial wapynnys, and trublit all
 þe army of romanis *with* fire and slauchter; & *nocht* alanerlie
 brynt þe sowis and woundit þe men of armys vnder the samyn,
 bot als hurt ane⁴ of þe consullis sa cruelly on his horß þat he
 was nere slane. 3it It is nocht schawin be authouris⁵ quhat 10
 was his name. The romanis eftir þis batall returnit to rome.
 amang mony hurt and woundit⁶ men at þis Jeoperdie, The
 consull was left in danger of his liffe. The romanis (als sone
 as þare woundis war curit) returnit to pomecia with mare pus-
 sance & cruelte þan afore; And quhen þe sowis with vthir 15
 [sindry] Instrument of chevilyr war reparit, in sic maner þat
 þe men of armys war reddy to pas oure þe wallis, þe ciete
 was randrit; bot þe slauchter was na leß on þe cietezanis
 þareof þan þe *sammyn* had bene tane be strang hand or on
 force; ffor all þe princes of þe ciete war slane, and þe reman- 20
 ent pepill sauld vnder crovn. Eftir, al þe ciete was cassin
 doun and þare landis sauld. The consullis tryumphit mare
 for þe scharpe revengeing of þare haitrent þan for ony grete
 vassalege⁷ be þame done.

¹ swis.³ armye, *A*.⁵ awtours.⁷ vaslage.² asperance.⁴ a (!).⁶ woundit.

how þe *commoun* women of rome war revist¹ be (133).
 sabynis ; how Titus largius was made dictator, and
 spurius Cassius maister of cheuelrie ; how þe latynis
 war discomfist at þe loch² of Regill ; how sindri
 princes recounterit vthir be singulare batall, and
 how þe latynis war discomfist. Ca. ix.³

(XVIII) The þere following, posthumius Cominius & titus
 largius war made consullis. This þere apperit trublus, for cer-
 tane solempne playis war made in Rome, In quhilkis sindri
 10 huris and *commoun* women war revyst be certane Insolent
 sabinis. throw reves[sing]⁴ of þir *commoun* women apperit grete p. 145.
 dissensioun and batall on athir hand ; and þocht þis mater
 was of small effect, 3it be occasioun þareof apperit new re-
 bellioun of sabinis aganis þe romanis ; and above þe fere and
 15 dredoure þat apperit be þe were of sabinis, followit ane troubil
 mare dangerus, for fourty sindri pepill war coniuiryt al attanis
 in perdicoun of romanis, be persuasioun of Mamilius prince
 of latynis, maich to king tarquyne. The ciete of rome stand-
 and in þis extreme sollicitude & danger, raiff þe first men-
 20 cioun amang romanis to create ane dictator ; ffor It was traistit
 the consulis war of þe opinion and factioun of þe tarquinis.
 It is vncertane in quhat þere or vnder quhat consulis þis first
 dictator was made ; 3it I find be excellent autouris þat Titus
 largius was þe first dictator amang þe romanis, & spurius cassius
 25 þe first maister of cheuelrie. þe law concernyng þe creacioun of
 þe dictatoure was þat he sal be chosin be þe consullis. I beleif
 erare þat titus largius was þe first dictatoure & maister abone
 þe consulis, for he was sum tyme consul afore, þan to say
 þat marcus Valerius fusius, nepote to Volesius, was þe fyrst
 30 dictator, becaus he was neuer consul. ffor gif ane⁵ dictator
 suld haue be⁶ chosin of þat houß, his fader marcus Valerius,
 sum tyme consul, ane⁵ man of provin vertewe, suld haue erare

¹ reveist. ² loith (l). ³ xxxj. ⁴ revisching. ⁵ a. ⁶ bene.

- (134). bene¹ chosin þan þe said va*lerius fusius. Als sone as þis first dictator was creat, þe pepil began to be gretumly astonist, seand þe axis² and ornamentis riall pas afore him as king; ffor þai vnderstude It was necessare to obey all his chargis in ane scharper³ maner þan to þe consulis. ffor þe 5 consulis war twa persouns vnder ane dignite, euery ane of þare supporte depending on þe tothir. fforther, nowthir remede of appellacioun nor zit na vthir helpe mycht auale in þis mater, sa lang as he was dictator, bot alanerlie to obey. þe sabynis war þe more astonist, herand ane dictator made in rome alanerlie for þare cauf, and þarefore send þare legatis to rome to commoun of pece;⁴ & desiring þe dictator and senate to
- p. 146. perdoun⁵ þe folie & errouris | done be ʒoung and Insolent persouns, in reuessing⁶ þe wemen afore rehersit. It was an-suerit be romanis, þai culd remitt þe offence done be ʒoung, 15 bot nocht be agit men; for sic men vnderstude weill, be occasioun of Iniuris and batall risis Iniure⁷ and batall;⁸ alwayis þe romanis wald haue discendit to peace,⁴ gif the sabinis wald haue debursit plesandlie all þe expens of weris rasit be þare rebellioun, for þat was desirit. (XIX) In þe nixt ʒere Seruilius 20 Sulpicius & manlius Tullius war made consullis. Na thing was done In þis ʒere wourthy to haue memorie, for certane quiet trewis war takin, & prevenit al trubil appering. In þe nixt ʒere titus Ebutius and gneus Vetusius war maid consulis. In þare tyme þe toun of fidenas was segeit, & þe toun of Crus- 25 tumerie tane. Als þe ciete of prenestes was tane fra þe latynis, and ekit to þe empire of Romanis, throw quhilk þe batall In-cressing sa mony ʒeris be latynis was nocht lang differit. ffor fere of þis troubill au. posthumius was made dictator & ti. Ebutius,⁹ maister of [þe] cheuelrie, be quhais auctorite ane¹⁰ 30 army was rasit baith on fute and hors, & met þe latynis at þe louch of regill within þe tuskane landis. And becaus þe romanis hard þe tarquynis war gadderit in grete nowmer amang

¹ be.² axis.³ scarppar.⁴ paix.⁵ perdone.⁶ Reuising.⁷ Iniuris.⁷⁻⁸ om.⁹ ebatius, A.; abutius, B.¹⁰ a (!).

þe oist of latynis, þai raiß in sic haitrent and furie þat þe batellis mycht *nocht* be seuerit, bot ruschit haistelie togiddir. This batall was fochtin¹ *wit* mare cruelte þan ony batall afore rehersit; ffor þe princes & regentis of baith þe armyis abaid
 5 *nocht* (as þe custume² Is) to gif þare prudent consultacioun for felicite to þare army eftir following; bot erare boldin in maist Ire ruschit pertlie *wit* þare awne bodyis amyð þe oist of *Inemyis, throw quhilk þare was *nocht* ane nobil man bot (135). onlie þe dictator þat eschapid vnwoundit on athir side. Als
 10 sone as king tarquyne persauit þe dictator posthumius arraying his oist, he prekit his horß *wit* grete Ire, howbeit he was waik, and fer rvn³ in ȝeris, aganis þe dictator. *Nocht*þeles, he was dounȝ sidelings fra his horß, and sone eftir reskewit be his freyndis. In ane vthir weyng was Ebutius, the maister of
 15 cheuelrie, quhilk *wit* grete ferocite⁴ prekit | aganis Mamilius, p. 147. maich to king tarquyne; & he, *nocht* vnwar of his cummyng, met him on þe samyn maner. So thik was þe schoure of dartis, þat mamilius was woundit throw his armoure in þe breist, and Ebutius schott throw þe arme. Mamilius was
 20 haistelie recoursit be ane weyng of latynis. Than Ebutius, Impatient for vehement doloure to bere his spere, departit of þe feild. Mamilius, na thing astonist of his wound, provokit⁵ new batall on þe romanis; ȝit becaus he saw his freyndis hurte, he drew þe band of tarquinis about him, to quham Titus, þe
 25 son of tarquyne þe proude, was capitane. The tarquinis, movit to grete haterent for þe tynsale of þare realme and gudis, faucht sa cruelly,⁶ þat in sum parte þai renewit batall. (XX) quhen þe romanis war put sum parte abak in this wise, M.⁷ Valerius, bruthir to valerius publicola, beheld þe feirß ȝoung tarquyne musterand in þe first bront of þe tarquinis oist; and was sa revist with
 30 þe glore and lynage of his houß, þat he thocht þe blude riall and name of tarquinis suld fynys be þe samyn houß be quhilk þai war first disherist, and bot ony mare tary he prekit his horß, and come drevin with huge furie on tarquyne. Than tarquyne

¹ fochin.³ ron.⁵ provocat.⁷ marcus.² custome.⁴ forocite, *A.*; felocite, *B.*⁶ crewell.

to eschew his dynt sum parte schrinkit, and fled amang his freyndis; throw quhilk Valerius, or he mycht renȝe¹ his horß, was drevin vnwarlie amang his Inemyis. In þe menetyme, ȝoung tarquyne ran him ²sidlingis throw þe body wíth ane spere, and straik him ²dede to þe ground. quhen Posthumius 5 dictator saw noch onelie þis nobil ³man slane, bot als þe tarquinis sa feirslie fechtand þat þe romanis war astonist, reddy to gif bakkis, he gaif signe to ane vthir cumpany, quhilk was chosin alanerlie for defence of his body, commanding þame to Invaide euery man þat fled wíth na les haterent þan þare Inemyis. The 10 romanis throw dreddoure of þis cumpany ceissit of þare fleing,

(136). & wíth new curage reconterit þare Inemyis. Incontinent *þis band of men (quhilk stude in maner of garde about þe dictator) enterit with fresche mynde and bodyis on þe tarquinis, quhilk war þan wery and Irkit throw lang & obstinate batall; and 15

p. 148. | Invadit þe said tarquinis wíth grete slauchter. Than raiß ane new battall betuix þe princes of baith þe armyis. Mamilius, prince and capitane in þe army of latynis, seand þe tarquinis circulit on euery hand wíth þe dictatouris cumpany, tuke certane manipillis of latynis, quhilk war maist reddy to all Ieoperdijs 20 for þe tyme; and went fordwartis⁴ þarewith to support þe tarquinis. Als sone as titus hermineus, lieutenent⁵ vnder þe dictator, saw þis cumpany cumand fordwart,⁶ he knewe perfitelie mamilius be his schynand armoure and riche clething; & Incontinent prekit his horß, drevin aganis him wíth mare 25 violent preiße þan did ebutius þe maister of chevelrie in þe batall latelie rehersit; throw quhilk he ran þe said mamilius throw þe body. At last, quhen he was spuleȝeand þe said mamilius of his riche armoure, he was hurte with ane lance be ane of his Inemyis, & brocht to his tent, 30 quhare he deceissit sone eftir þat his wound was dicht. Incontinent þe dictator past to þe horsmen, commanding þame (becaus þe futemen was Irkit with lang batall) to discend of þare horß to þare support. The horsmen haistelie obeyit, and ruschit

¹ reinȝe.² *The second scribe in B.*⁴ forthwartis.⁶ forthwart.²—² om.

resumes here (p. 161).

⁵ lieutenand.

in supporte of þe futemen ; Syne kest vp þare targeis in defence
 of þame þat past afore þe banerman. The futemen, seand þe
 horsmen enterand in batall to þare support, faucht with sic
 curage þat þe latynis war vincust and put to flicht. þan þe
 5 romanis montit haistelie on þare horß to followe on þe chaisß,¹
 and þe fute oist² followit on þare bakkis on þe samyn maner.
 It is said þe dictator, na thing pretermittin þat myc/ht supporte
 his armye owthir be divine or humane lawis, votit to edifie ane
 tempil in þe honoure of þe god Castor ; and assignit certane
 10 rewardis to euery knyç/ht of his armye, as þai enterit first and
 nixt wíthín þare Inemyis tentis. throw quhilk followit sic bir-
 nand curage wíth his folkis, þat þare Inemyis war spuleȝete³ of
 þare tentis with na leß force þan þai war chasit afore. Thus
 was It fouchtin⁴ at þe louch⁵ of Regill betuix þe latynis and
 15 romanis ; the dictator and maister of chevelrie returnit wíth
 grete | tryumphe to rome. p. 149.

How the tempillis of saturne and marcurie war dedi- (137).
 cate, and of þe deith of king tarquyne ; how þe
 latynis send þe legatis of [the] Wolchis to rome
 20 as presoneris ; And how þe romanis and Latynis
 war confederate togiddir with grete humanite &
 kyndenes. Ca. x.⁶

(XXI) The nixt ȝere Quintus Clelius and titus laercius war
 made consulis, And in þe ȝere following⁷ Aulus sempronius and
 25 marcus Minucius war made consullis, In quhais tyme ane
 tempill was dedicate to Saturne. þe solempne feistis institute
 þareto war namyt Saturnilia. The ȝere following, Aurelius
 Posthumius and titus virgineus war made consulis, In quhais
 tyme (as sum autouris alleȝeis) was þe batall afore rehersit at
 30 þe louch⁸ of regill. during þir thre ȝeris nouthir was sikkir

¹ chace.³ spulȝeit.⁵ loch.⁷ followand.² ost.⁴ fochtin.⁶ xxxij.⁸ locht.

peace¹ nor sikkir were betuix þe romanis & latynis. It is said Aurelius posthumius renuncit þe consulate, becaus he dred his colleig virginus was nocht sikkir with² him, and was made þarefore dictator. Sa mony errouris and diuersiteis of writaris
 5 dois ordoure þe tyme and digniteis of rome with sic contrarieteis, þat it is richt difficill owthir to knaw quha war consulis or ȝit quhat was done in sic antiquiteis. The ȝere eftir³ maid Appius Claudius & publius Scruilius consulis. This ȝere is richt notabill be ane messingere þat schew þe deith of King Tarquyne, for he deceissit in þe ciete of Cvmys, eftir þat he was cummyn to seik
 10 refuge at Arisdemus the tyran; becaus þe latynis war sa brokin þat þai mycht mak him na forthir support. Throw þir thythingis nocht anerlie⁴ war þe faderis, bot all þe pepill of rome, rasit with inestimabil blythnes; ȝit þe faderis war mare reiosit þan þe pepill; for (as It is afore rehersit) the faderis, for fere of þe
 15 tarquynis, intertenyt þe pepill with continual benefactis⁵ & gudis, to make þame stand þe more afaldly at þare opinioun. bot (138). fra þe faderis war aduertist of king tarquynis deith, *þai nocht onelie ceissit⁶ of þare gude dedis done to þe smal pepill, bot
 p. 150. als began | to Invaid þame Ilk day with new Iniuris. the ciete
 20 namyt segnia (quhilk was afore ane colone of romanis) howbeit It stude certane tyme at þe opinioun of king tarquyne, was recoverit and brocht as afore to Romane empire. The Inhabitantis þareof war ekit with mare nowmer þan afore. The samyn ȝere þe romanis war diuidit in xxxi tribis,⁷ And in þe Idis of
 25 maij nixt following was dedicate þe tempill of mercurij.⁸ (XXII) Sa lang as þe weris continuit⁹ betuix romanis and latynis, nowthir was sikkir peace nor ȝit were betuix romanis and wolchis; ȝit þe wolchis made all þe ordinance þat þai mycht
 30 to support þe latynis; bot þe dictator & romane pepill made sa haisty provisoun þat þe latynis and wolchis mycht nocht Invaid þame atanis. At last þe Consulis, movit with maist haitrent aganis þe wolchis, brocht mony awfull legiouns in þare landis. The wolchis, seand þame self brokin of þare purpois be

¹ pace.³ following.⁵ benefices.⁷ tribus.⁹ continewit.² secker to.⁴ allanerlie.⁶ cessit.⁸ marcurie.

vnawarnist cummyng of romane legiouns¹ in þare landis, war sa
 astonist þat, but ony recontering or debate, þai gaif iij^c plegeis
 for peace, quhilkis war all sonnys of þe princes and maist nobil
 men of Chora and pomecia; throw quhilk þe romane legiouns
 5 returnit hame but ony batall. ȝit als sone as þir wolchis war
 deliuerit of all fere of Inemyis, þai returnit to þare auld slichtis,
 makand provisioun in þare maist quiete maner to Invaid þe
 romanis; and gat þe hernikis confederat to þame, And sone
 eftir send þare legatis to persuade þe latynis to þare opinioun.
 10 bot þe recent slauchter made on þe saidis latinis at þe louch of
 regill causit þame to haue sic extreme haterent aganis all per-
 souns persuading þame to haue ony batall with romanis, þat
 þai tuke þir legatis, & nocht alanerlie send þame to rome, bot
 deliuerit þame to þe consulis, be quham It was schewin þe
 15 wolchis and hernikis war confederate with all vthir circum-
 stance (as Is afore rehersit) to Invaid þe romanis. this human-
 ite was sa plesand to þe faderis, that þai sufferit vjm^m plegeis &
 presoneris of latynis | to retorne hame but ony ransoun. Syne p. 151.
 tuke consultacioun with þe new faderis to trete peace & be
 20 confederate with latinis; how beit þe samyn culd² neuer be
 done in na tymes past. The latynis, reiosing of þir doingis, and
 seand þame self (becaus þai war devisaris of peace) estymet³
 with sic *glore amang romanis, send ane goldin croun to be (139).
 offerit to Iupiter in þe capitoll. Mony of þir presonaris
 25 (quhilkis war lately deliuerit be beneuolence of romanis) returnit
 with þir legatis to rome, and eftir þare cummyng veyit þe samyn
 housis quhare þai war haldin afore in captiuite, and gaif thankis
 to þare lugearis for þe beneuolence schawin to þame during þe
 tyme of þare captiuite. Sone eftir, þe romanis and latynis war
 30 lugeit togiddir with mare familiarite & kyndenes þan euer was
 amang þame in ony tyme afore.

¹ legyons.² nicht.³ estemit.

how grete dissensioun rais betuix the faderis & pepil
 of rome, and of sindri consultaciouns made to
 repreß þe samyn; and how þis dissensioun was
 mesit be prudence of þe consul scrullius; how þe
 sade consul dantit þe wolchis, & gaif the spuleze 5
 þareof amang his indigent knichtis. Ca. xj.¹

(XXIII) Now was þe batall of wolchis apperand haistelic
 aganis þe romanis, quhen þe ciete of rome was full of haitrent
 and dissensioun amang þame self; for þe faderis and small
 pepill war of sindri & contrarius opinions. This dissencioun 10
 rais in special throw certane Indigent pepill, quhilkis war
 haldin in captiuite for non-payment of dettis to þare creditouris.
 The small pepill lamentit hevilie, Sayand² þai war send furth
 of þe said ciete, fechtand continually for þe liberte & empire
 þareof; And at þare returnyng þai war takin & opprest Be þe 15
 cietezanis, throw quhilk nocht allanerlie appetit þare liberte
 mare sikkir³ in tyme of were þan pece, bot was als mare
 sikkir³ amang þare Inemyis þan amang þare freyndis. This
 p. 152. Invy | and dissensioun of pepill, sproutand in þis maner, was
 gretumly inflamit⁴ be calamyte of ane agit man, quhilk was 20
 discendit of Illuster lynnage. This man past with þe ansenzeis
 of all his eldaris to ane opin place, quhare maist confluence
 was of pepil, eftir þat he was haldin in lang captiuite be his
 (140). creditouris, for dett In quhilk he *was deuoluit. his clething
 throw filth of presoun was vile and horribil, the habit of his 25
 body was richt fowsum, for he was lene and nere consumyt
 throw hunger. The hare of his berde was lang and taty,⁵ &
 the hare of his hede made his face elrage & wylde; zit nocht-
 withstanding þis difformite he was knawin, for he was ane
 capitane sum tyme in þe romane weris, and had done grete 30
 vassalege⁶ baith for þe honoure & defence of þe ciete, as weil

¹ xxxij.² saying.³ sicker.⁴ Inflammit.⁵ tawty.⁶ wassalage.

apperit be sindri wannys and markis in his face and vther
 [partis] of his body. The pepill had grete miseracioun of his
 calamite, and stude about him on euery side, demanding him
 how and be quhat maner þat vile habit and deformite was
 5 cummyn to him. he ansuerit þat he was sum tyme ane man of
 armes in þe sabyne weris, and was ane heretoure of grete here-
 tage, bot þe sabyneis *nocht* alanerlie wastit þe samyn and barrit
 him fra þe frutis þareof, bot als brynt þe village quhare he was
 borne, and confiscate al his gudis and bestial. And *nochtwith-*
 10 standing þat he was brocht on þis maner to extreme pouerty,¹
 he was chargit to pay þe samyn tribute as he payit afore.
 schortlie, þe dett in quhilk he was devolvit to his creditouris
 has brocht him to þe said calamite; ffor þis dett þat he was
 awand be non-payment was ay duplyt² on him be vsure and
 15 okkir, and raiß sa grete be doubling & non-payment þareof at
 termes assignit, þat he was constrenit to sel his kyndelie here-
 tage, quhilk was left to him baith be his fader and eme. And
nocht alanerlie was he disherist þus of his landis, bot als throw
 þe samyn he was bereft of all his vthir gudis. And finalie,
 20 quhen his creditouris mycht recovir na mare gudis, | thay pynit p. 153.
 his body *with* grete torment; for he was *nocht* condampnit to
 service, bot erar to presoun and bouchery.³ And to verify þe
 samyn, he schew mony grene woundis on his bak, apperandlie
 as he had bene new scourgit. Throw þe miserabil sicht
 25 schewin to þe pepill of þis man, and throw his pietuous regret,⁴
 raiß ane huge noyis and clamoure, *nocht* onelie in þe merkett
 bot als throw all partis of þe ciete. ffor euery persouns
 (quhilkis war thirllit vnder dett to þare creditouris) and all þai
 quhilkis war lately deliuerit þareof, ruschit opinlie to þe merket,⁵
 30 desiring pietuously the romane pepill to support þame aganis
 þare troubil.⁶ in euery partis of þe ciete occurrit wilfullie
 certane men to augment þis sedicioun, And drew þe pepill
with grete noyis * and cumpanyis out of all partis to þe merkett.⁶ (141).
 Sa mony of þe faderis (as war present for þe tyme) war in grete

¹ poverté.² dowbillit.³ bocherie.⁴ regate.⁵ mercat.⁶ triblie.

dangere, throw þis effraye suddanly falling amang þe pepill; and but dout þe faderis suld nocht haue eschapit with þare livis, war nocht þis sedicioun was þe more haistelie repressit be Intervencioun of þe twa consulis. In þe mene tyme, ane cumpany of reuthful and Indigent pepill turnit þare vissage to þe consulis, 5 and began to schaw þare thirllage and vtheris þare grete deformiteis, allegeand þai suld nocht haue ressaut sic meritis in rewarde of þare chevelrie; & desirit herefore þe consulis, mare with awfull þan ony benyng continance, to convene þe faderis; And in þe menetye þai stude with brade garnisouns about þe 10 court, to be arbitouris and dressouris of all public materis as þai plesit. Ane parte of þe faderis (how beit þai war few in nowmer) come be aventure (as said Is) to þis convencioun, and drewe þame towart þe consulis. The remanent faderis war nocht onelie absent fra þe courte, bot als for fere of pepill þat 15 was gadderit in þis furye durst nocht convene to public merkett;¹ Throw quhilk þe faderis (quhilkis war presentlie assemblit) mycht conclude na thing concernyng grete materis for þare few nowmer. Than þe confusit multitude of pepil belevit þame delayit and mokkit, and traistit þat þe faderis war nocht absent fra þis 20 convencioun be ony aventure or fere, bot alanerlie to be Impediment to þare desiris. | Attoure, the consullis nocht allanerly dissaut þame, but als turnit bakkis to þare peticiouns. Apperit þus þare Calamiteis to be in plane derisioun to þe faderis. This sedicioun was finalie approcheand to sic poynt, þat þe 25 maieste of consullis mycht nocht abandoun þe Instant furie of pepill; Throw quhilk þe faderis war vncertane, nocht knawand quhidder þai war in mare dangere to comper in þis furie of pepill, Or to be absent fra þe samyn. At last þai apperit. the courte finalie beand garnist with hale nowmer of faderis, nocht 30 onelie war þe said faderis, bot als þe consulis, of sindri and diuerß opiniouns. Appius Claudius consul, ane man of hie curage, decernit þis sedicioun to be dantit be autorite consulare, Saying gif one or two² of þe maist sidicious³ persouns amang þe pepill war scharplie punyst for þis Instant troubill, þe re- 35

¹ mercat.² ane or twa.³ seditious.

manent wald ceiß for fere *pareof*. * Seruilius his colleig, ane (142).
 man of mare soft Ingyne, said þe myndis of pepill mycht be mare
 eselie bowit þan brokin. (XXIV) In þe menetye succedit
 ane vthir trubil, to þe grete terroure of þe ciete, ffor ane post
 5 come *with* grete noyis fra þe latynis, to aduertise þe romanis þat
 þe wolchis was cummand *with* ane dangerus armye to sege rome.
 Thir tithingis movit þe faderis & commouns in diuerß maner and
 sortis; ffor *nochtwithstanding* þat þai war baith membris of ane
 ciete, zit be þis dissencioun þai war dividit in two sindri bodyis
 10 and myndis; ffor þe commoun pepill reiosit þat þe wolchis war
 cummyn (as þai belevit) be provisioun of goddis to revenge þe
 hicht and pride of þe faderis. Attoure, euery ane of þe pepill
 persuadit vthir to gif nocht þare names in writt, þat þai suld
 nocht be rasis in ane armye aganis þare Inemyis; Thinkand It
 15 mare plesand þat þai and þe faderis suld peris¹ all togiddir
 þan to peris þame allane. And *parefore* desirit þe faderis to
 tak þare wappynnys & defend þe ciete, þat þe proffittis and
 commoditeis conquest be Ieoperdie of batall May be allanerlie
with þame quhare moist dangers is sustenit. On þe tothir side,
 20 the curage of faderis was richt astonist & doutsum, | Als mekill p. 155.
 for þe fere of þare awne pepill as for ony vncouth Inemyis;
 And *parefore* desirit maist tendirly Seruilius consul (because
 he was gevin to favoure populaire) to deliuer þe commoun weill
 of trubil with quhilk It was presentlie circumvenit. Than
 25 Seruilius departit fra þe senaturis, and began to mak ane orisoun
 to þe pepill, Saying þe faderis tuk grete sollicitude in þare con-
 sultaciouns to dreß all materis for þe commoun proffitt of [þe]
 pepill. *Nochtþeles* þare deliuerance in þis wechty mater con-
 cernyng þe grettest parte of þe ciete, þat is to say, þe small pepill,
 30 was Interruppit be Interuencioun of ane vncouth trubil, quhilk
 Invadit þe haill public weill. And becaus þare Inemyis war
 sa nere þe portis, and þe batall sa nere approcheand, þai mycht
 mak na new alteracioun at þat tyme for weill of þe pepil. And
 howbeit þai had lasere² to do þe samyn, It was *nocht* honest
 35 to þe pepill to refuse þe defence of þare liberte and realme,

¹ perice.² lasar.

without þai war afore rewardit for þe samyn; nor ȝit was It honest to þe faderis to releif þare Indegent pepill erare be force
 (143). and dredoure than be þare awne beneuolence. *The generall
 edict made be Seruilius causit þe pepill to gif þe mare faith to
 his orisoun; ffor be þis edict was *commandit* þat na cietezanis 5
 of rome be haldin owthir bound or inclusit within ony houß or
 presoun in rome, vnder pane of dede,¹ That þir pepil quhilk
 war presonit in þis wise suld nocht be Impeschit² þarethrow
 to gif þare names in writt. Attoure It was *commandit* be þe
 samyn edict þat na man sell, nor ȝit posseid, þe gudis of ony 10
 romane cietezane, nor tary his sonnys nor nepotis sa lang as þai
 ar³ within þe romane army. be þis edict all þe pepill þat stude
 thirllit vndir dett to þare creditouris⁴ gaif haistelie þare names
 in writt, and come ruscheand out of all partis to þe merket, for
 þare creditouris durst nocht *wit/hald* þame.⁴ Thus⁵ was ane 15
 huge army rasit, with mare ordoure, wisdom, and vertew þan
 euer was ony vthir armye afore aganis þe wolchis. The con-
 sull went fordwart *wit/h* þis foresaid armye, and satt down
wit/h his tentis ane litill space fra þe armye of wolchis.
 p. 156. (XXV) The nicht folowing, the wolchis, confiding in this new 20
 dissensioun betuix þe faderis and small pepil, assailȝeit þare
 tentis, to espie gif ony fugitive persoun war tressonably *cummyn*
 fra þe romanis to aduertis⁶ þare Inemyis In quhat estate þare
 armye stude, Or to reveil how þare army mycht be Invadit
 with maist advantage. Nochtþeles the wolchis war Impeschit, 25
 for þe watche⁷ of romanis persaut þare *cummyn*, throw quhilk
 þai war haistelie rasit and be sound of trumpett went to harnes.
 Thus failȝeit þe wolchis of þare first assalt. The residewe of þe
 nicht was in quiet with baith þe Oistis. Als sone as licht apperit
 on þe nixt day, þe wolchis fillit up þe fowsyis,⁸ quhare þe campe 30
 of romanis lay, and Invadit þare trinschis. belive⁹ all muni-

¹ deith.² empeschit.³ wer.

⁴—⁴ *Transposed as follows in B.:* durst nocht *wit/hald* þaim | In writ and
 come ruscheand out of all partis to þe | *mercat*, ffor þir creditouris durst
 (*deleted*) gaif haistelie þair | names.

⁵ þis.⁶ aduertice.⁷ wache.⁸ fowseis.⁹ belife.

ciouns,¹ quhilkis war laid be Industrie to sivr² þe armyis, war
 removit. þan þe counsel, seand all his Oist richt desirus³ of
 bataill, And in speciall þe Indigent knichtis afore rehersit, to
 haue experience of þare feirþ myndis, he sum parte delayit þe
 5 batall. And fra he saw þare myndis richt ernstlie gevin þareto,
 he gaif signne to Ione.⁴ The wolchis at þe first Ioynyng⁵ was
 put to flicht, And chasit with continuall slauchter sa lang as
 the futeman mycht follow; and eftir þame followit the horsemen,
 and chasit þame with Ithand slauchter to þare tentis; and be-
 10 caus þai war astonist with huge dredoure * for þe chace sa (144).
 feirsly following on þare bakkis, þai durst noch abide in þare
 [said] tentis quhare þai war campit afore þe batall. Thus war
 the tentis of wolchis tane, and þame self miserably discomfist.
 The consul went arelie on þe morow with all his legiouns to
 15 Swessa pomecia, quhare þe wolchis war fled eftir þis last dis-
 comfitoure. Nochþeles þe counsell tuke þe toun within schort
 tyme eftir his cummyng, And gaif all þe spuleze þareof to his
 wery & Indigent knichtis; syne returnit wih his victorius
 armye to rome.

20 how peace was tretit betuix Wolchis & | romanis, p. 157.
 and parte of þare landis ekit to romane empire;
 how þe sabynis & Aruncis war vincust, And how
 þe faderis and þe pepill of rome fell agane in new
 dissensioun. Ca. xij.⁶

25 At returnyng of þe Consull to rome, come þe legatis of
 Wolchis namyt mitetranis, ffor þai war astonist be taking of
 pomecia, and desirit peace. þus was peace grantit finalie to
 þe Wolchis, bot ane parte of þare landis war ekit to romane
 empire. (XXVI) Schort tyme eftir, þe Sabynis maid þe romanis

¹ aventouris (!) ² syver. ³ desyris. ⁴ Iune. ⁵ Iunyng. ⁶ xxxiiij.

richt astonist. This effray was erare ane vane noyis than ony
 batall, ffor ane rumoure was brocht haistely to Rome within
 þe nycht, þat þe Sabynis war cummyn with maist terribil Incur-
 sioun in [þe] romane landis, nocht fer fra þe rivere of Anien,
 and put baith villagis & landis be fire and hereschip¹ to vtir 5
 euersioun. haistelie aganis þe Sabynis was send Aulus posthu-
 mius wíth þe haill power of horsmen, for he was dictator in
 þe batall afore rehersit aganis the latynis. Eftir him followit
 seruilius consull wíth ane strang power of futemen. The
 horsmen discomfist ane grete nowmer of sabinis, eftir þat 10
 þai war skatterit but array at þare spulejeis. The remanent
 legiouns of sabinis mycht nocht resist þe fute Oist of romanis,
 ffor þai war sa Irkit be þir Incursiouns In þe nycht afore, &
 sa ful of mete & wynis, þat þai had bot skarß powar to fle.
 (145). * Thus was þe effray of Sabyne batall baith herde² in rome, & 15
 endit, within þe space of ane nycht. On þe day following,
 quhen þe romanis belevit ferme peace of euery pepill liand
 þame about, come þe legatis of Aruncis denunceand batall to
 þame, Without þai haistelie randerit þe landis tane fra þame
 afore & ekit to romane empire. Als sone as þir legatis war 20
 departit, þe fame was þat þis army of Aruncis was sene ane
 large space fra þare ciete, cummand fordwart to sege Rome;
 throw quhilk raiß [sa] suddane effray amang þe faderis, þat
 þai mycht nowthir ripelie avise nor 3it (becaus þai ran al attanis
 p. 158. to harnes) mycht | gif plesand ansuere to þe legatis, bringand 25
 sa awful army within þare message. finalie þe romanis gadderit
 ane army to pas fordwart to Aricia, bot þai war nocht fer gane
 quhen þe aruncis apperit in sicht, and sone eftir baith þe armyis
 Ionit;³ bot þe Aruncis war vincust, And be þis batall ane end
 was put to all þare weris. (XXVII) The Aruncis beand þus 30
 discomfist, þe romane army, sa oft victorius at frequent Ieopar-
 dyis within sa few dayis, abaid on þe promeß and faith maid
 to þame baith be Seruilius consul and þe senate. Than appius
 Claudius, ane man of Innative pride, to mak þe faith and
 promeß of his colleig in vane, allegeit scharplie afore þe pepill 35

¹ herschippis.² hard.³ Iunit.

þe law concernyng payment of lent money. throw seuerite of
 þis law *nocht* alanerlie all *personis*¹ (*quhilkis* war afore devoluit
 in dett) war *commandit* to be restorit to þare creditouris, bot
 als sindri vthir persouns for new dett war randerit in² þe samyn
 5 maner. Als sone as þe pepill (*þat* war returnit fra þis last batall)
 saw þis trubil new appering, þai ran *with* grete cumpanyis to
 seruilius Consull, Ilkane reprocheand þe promiss maid be him,
 And Inquiring gif It was þe frute & rewarde of þare cheuelrie
 & woundis sustenit in þis last batall. And sum tyme þai schew
 10 þe wannys & prentis of þare sare woundis latelie sustenit in
 þare Weris, desiring him herefore to bring þis mater with new
 consultacioun afore þe faderis, or ellis to concur *with* þame as
 ane emprioure suld do *with* his men of armyis, and as ane
 consul suld do with his knichtis. Thir wordis movit þe consul,
 15 how beit the mater (as It *presentlie* occurrit) causit him to
 change his mynde; for *nocht* allanerlie was his colleig con-
 trarius to his condicioun made afore to þe pepill, Bot als þe
 faderis war * contrarius on þe samyn maner. And becaus þis (146).
 seruilius bure him Indeffrent³ in þis mater, he conquest grete
 20 haterent of þe pepill, & was na thing luffit with þe faderis; for
 he was haldin soft and ambitious with þe faderis, & maist dis-
 satefull | with þe pepill. Apperit þus þat he suld be within p. 159.
 schorte tyme na leß hatit with þe pepill þan was appius. In
 þe mene tyme, fell ane new debate amang þe consullis, quhilk
 25 of þame suld dedicate þe tempill of marcurie. The faderis
 reieckit þis mater fra þame to þe pepill, vnder sic conditioun
 þat he þat war chosin þareto suld be baith stewart of al vittalis
 pertenand to þe ciete for þat ȝere, And sal als Institute þe col-
 lege of marchandis, & ressaue all solempniteis þat suld be done
 30 to þe bischope. The pepill frustrate baith þe consullis of þis
 honoure, for þai gaif þe dedicacioun of þe said tempil to marcus
 lectorius, centurio primupile,⁴ quhilk thing apperit na les done
 in honoure of lectorius þan in contemptioun of þe consulis;
 ffor It was ane dignite passing abone his estate. And nocht
 35 alanerlie war þe consulis *commovit* for þis contemptioun, bot

¹ þe soumes, A.² on.³ Indifferent.⁴ primipile.

als þe faderis commovit on þe samyn wise. On þe tothir side,
 þe curage of pepill was þe more rasis, & went ane more feirß
 way þan euir þai afore devisit; ffor thai war sa disparit, þat þai
 beleuit nowthir helpe of þe faderis nor zit of þe consulis. At
 last, quhen þai saw ane of þare companzeons brocht in Iuge- 5
 ment to here him self punyst for his dett, þai ran all togiddir
 to his debate, throw quhilk þare noyis and clamoure was sa
 grete þat nowthir mycht þe decretis of þe consulis be herd,
 nor zit wald þe pepill obey þareto. Apperit na thing to be
 done be law bot alanerlie be force; And becauß sindri of þe 10
 pepil war trublit be þare creditouris In presens of þe consulis,
 Thay turnit all dredoure & dangere of þare commoun liberte
 on þare said creditouris. Abone þis trubil, þe ciete was astonist
 throw weris instantlie appering be þe sabynis; And howbeit
 þe senaturis decernit ane armye to be rasis, zit þare wald nane 15
 gif þare namys in writt. Than Appius began to rage in maist
 Ire, and accusit þe ambitiou of his colleig, sayand for favoure
 populare he Intendit to betraiß þe public liberte; And becaus
 p. 160. he wald *nocht* allege þe law | concernyng lent mony, he was
 Impediment þat na army suld be rasis be auctorite of þe senate. 20
 (147). * "The public weil" (sade Claudius) "is nocht sa desert, nor
 zit þe consell nor senzeorye of romanis is sa attenuate and
 febill, bot I sal revenge baith þe contemptioun done to þe
 faderis and to me." And *nochtwithstanding* þat ane huge mul-
 titude of pepill was standand about him, all Inflammyt in maist 25
 fervent Ire throw licence & liberte recentlie be þame vsurpit,
 he commandit to tak ane of þe maist notabill¹ and principale
 persouns of þis factioun populare, þat þe punytioun made on
 him suld be ane terroure to þe remanent pepill. Als sone as
 þis man was takin be þe burreouris, he appetit to þe pepill; 30
 zit appius had *nocht* gevin place to his appellatioun, becaus
 þe Iugement of pepil (as he knewe) wald be contrarius to his
 doingis, war *nocht* his obstinate and feirß mynde was vincust
 mare be auctorite & counsell² of þe faderis þan be ony clamour
 & noyis of small pepill, Sa fer þe³ curage & myndis of small 35

¹ noble.² consale.³ The fifth hand in B. resumes here (p. 177).

pepill war boldin to sustene þe Invy of Appius. Attoure Appius the consull raif Ilk day mare and mare, *nocht* alanerlie be opin clamouris, bot erare be thingis mare wikkit¹ and dangerus; þat is to say, be secessioun and private counsale. At last baith the
 5 consulis war sa faschit, seand þame self odious to þe pepill, þat þai wilfully exonerit² þame self of al auctorite & dignite consulare. Seruilius was hatit baith with þe pepil and faderis, And appius alanerly luffit *wit* þe faderis.

how þe faderis and small pepill continewit in þare (148).
 10 dissenciouns; Of þare sindri consultaciouns þare-intill; how marcus Valerius was made dictator to abandoun³ þe smal pepill of þare insolent dissenciouns; And how þe equis, wolchis, and sabynis war vincust⁴ be romanis. Ca. xiiij.⁵

(XXVIII) Sic thingis done, Aulus Virginius & Titus Vitellius war made consulis. The smal pepill, *nocht* knowand | quhat p. 161.
 myndis þir new consulis wald bere to þame, tuke private consultacioun, and convenit be frequent cumpanyis within þe nycht to avise on þare materis. Sum tymes þare convencioun was in
 20 mont esquilles, and sum tyme in mont Aventyne, þat þai suld *nocht* be astonist to do ony thing be Vnprudence or foly quhen euer It happynnyt þame to assembl in commoun place. The consulis, knowing þis mater (as It was) richt noysum, schew þe damage⁶ þarethrow following to þe faderis. The faderis,
 25 quhen þis mater was brocht afore þame, mycht *nocht* ordourlie gif þare consultacioun þareintill. This mater was sa postponit be noyis of pepil and Indignatioun of faderis, þat þe consullis thoht best to remitt þe charge of Ilk thing þat was to be execute be þare auctorite alanerly to þe senate, þat þai mycht

¹ vikit. ² exonerat. ³ aboundoun. ⁴ vincost. ⁵ xxxv. ⁶ dampnage.

bere þe Invy þareof afore þe pepill. ffor þai allegeit, gif þe
 commoun wele of Rome was gouernit be auctorite, nane bot
 þe public¹ counsel suld be haldin in rome. howbeit as þan
 þe public¹ weil was devidit and skatterit² in ane thousand
 sindri courtis & consulis, ffor sum of þame war made in mont 5
 Esquilles, & sum in mont aventyne. "be þe faith of hercules"
 (said þe faderis) "had we sic ane man as appius Claudius!
 for sic ane man war bettir þan ony consull.³ he wald within
 ane moment remove all tróubil Instantlie appering." The con-
 sulis, correkkit in þis wise be þe faderis,⁴ Inquirit quhat þai 10
 erast desirit, ffor þai war to do na thing bot as þe faderis⁴
 (149). ple*sit. Than þe faderis decernit ane army to be rasit, for þe
 small pepill be sleuth and ydilnes rageit in all Insolence. At
 last, quhen þe consulis war departit fra þe faderis and cummyn
 in Iugement, þai callit all þe 3oung men of þe ciete be þare 15
 names; bot þare was nane þat made þame ansuere.⁵ 3it þare
 assemblit ane confusit nowmer of pepil about þe consulis, say-
 ing þai wald nocht suffir þame self to be ony langare frustrate
 be⁶ vane behechtis, & declarit þat þe consulis sall neuer gett
 ane man of þame to ane armye, quhill þe said consulis war 20
 p. 162. opinlie sworne to deliuer to Ilk man first his liberte, or | euer
 þai deliuer to him ony wappynnys,⁷ þat þai may fecht erare
 for defence of þare native cuntre and cietezanis þan to fecht
 for ony defence of þe faderis. The consulis considerit weil þe
 mater, as It was commandit be þe faderis, And howbeit þai 25
 saw mony of þe faderis speik richt feirslic⁸ within þe wallis of
 þat courte, 3it nane of þe said faderis wald concur with þame
 and be participant of all Invie and haterent of pepill. Apperit
 þus ane richt dangerous contencioun betuix⁹ þe faderis¹⁰ and
 small pepill; 3it þe consulis, afore þai assalezeit extreme danger, 30
 tuke purpois to convene þe faderis¹⁰ to new consultacioun.
 Sone eftir convenit mony of all þe 3oung faderis of þe ciete
 to þe chalmeris quhare þe consulis war, commanding þe saidis
 consulis to exoner þame self of all auctorite & dignite con-

¹ om.³ counsale.⁵ answeir.⁷ wappingis.⁹ betweix.² scattris.⁴ fadderis.⁶ w^t.⁸ ferslie.¹⁰—¹⁰ om.

sulare, Sen þare myndis war nocht abil to sustene þe chargis
 pertenyng¹ þareto. (XXIX) The consulis, havand experience
 sufficientlie of al þe materis, said as followis; "O faderis con-
 script, þat 3e sall nocht say bot we ar redde to execute al
 5 Ieoperdyis, sen sa grete seditioun is risyn in þe ciete, we desire²
 þat sic persouns as accusis oure sleuth pas with þis armye quhen
 It is rasyt in oure cumpany; ffor sen It is 3oure pleßer, we sall
 Ieoperd ws als fer as he þat Is maist feirß³ in þis ciete." The
 consulis eftir þir wourdis returnit to þare settis, And be Industrie
 10 gart call ane man be his name quhilk was present in þare sicht.
 This man made na ansuere,⁴ for he had ane multitude of pepil
 armit at all poyntis to sauf him fra all Iniure þat mycht follow.
 nochtheles The consulis send ane burreo to tak him; bot he
 was haistelie rescoursit be þe pepill. Incontinent þe faderis
 15 (quhilkis come as assessouris to þe consulis) come with grete
 noyis, cryand, "þis Is ane terribill deid," And discendit
 haistelie fra þare trone to haue supportit * þis officiare. The (150).
 pepil, eftir þat þai had stoppit þe officiare to tak⁵ þe man afore
 rehersit, come with all þe⁶ furie on þe faderis. Nochtheles þe
 20 debate⁷ was haistelie mesit be Intervencion | of þe consulis. p. 163.
 This debait⁷ was finist but straik of stane or darte, for þe noyis
 and clamoure was mare þan ony Iniure þarintil. The senate
 effrayitlie⁷ *convenit* to þis counsell, and was more effrayitlie⁷
 consultit. The faderis (quhilkis war Iniurit in þis mater⁸)
 25 desirit punycioun to be made for þe offence committit. Noch-
 theles Ilk man began to gif⁹ his counsel¹⁰ mare be noyis and
 clamoure þan be ony gudelie sentence; And quhen þare hate-
 rent was a litill mesit, the consulis began to reproche þe faderis,
 saying na bettir consell¹⁰ [wes] in þe court þan in þe merkett.
 30 At last þe faderis began to be consultit *wit* bettir ordoure.
 Eftir lang consultaciouns thre opiniouns & sentence was in þis
 mater. The sentence of publius Virgineus was noch generall,
 for his mynde was þat nane of þe thirllit pepill suld be deliuerit
 fra þare dett, bot sa mony as faucht vnder seruilius aganis þe

¹ pertenand.³ fers.⁵ take.⁷⁻⁷ om.⁹ geif.² dysyre.⁴ answeir.⁶ þair.⁸ maner.¹⁰ counsale.

Aruncis, wolchis, and sabinis. Titus largius allegit þat þe tyme was mare expedient to tak consultacioun for dressing of grete materis, þan to rewarde ony meritis or gude dedis; becaus þe hail communitie was drownit in dett, And þarefore na tranquillite mycht follow without þe small pepill ware equalie releuit. ffor 5 gif ane war preferrit to ane vthir, þe small pepill suld rise¹ in mare seditioun þan afore. Appius claudius, ane man of feirß nature, and made wyld be haterent of pepill aganis him on þat ane parte,² & glorius be loving of þe faderis on þat vthir parte,³ said þe pepill war rasit on flocht⁴ mare throw þare 10 licence & opin renzeis þan ony miserabil calamite fallin⁵ to þame, as weil apperit; for þai war mare Insolent þan rageand; for all þis damage⁶ was cummyn alanerly becaus ane appellacioun has place fra þe faderis and counsulis to þe pepill. This apperis þe auctorite of counsulis to be erare ane mynassing þan 15 ony empire abone þe pepill, Becaus þe appellaciouns has place before þe samyn persouns quhilkis ar participant with þe cryme. "Tharefore," said Appius, "latt ws create ane dictator, fra quhais sentence is na appellacion; for be þis way all þis furie, 20 þat now birnis sa bald⁷ | in the hartis of small pepil, sal be sone slokynnyt.⁸ traist 3e," said Appius, "þat ony man wil be (151). sa malaperte to strike ane officiare, quhen * he seis þe Iurisdiccoun baith of live⁹ and deith in his handis quhais maieste Is violate be his tressoun?" (XXX) This sentence of Appius (as It was in dede) apperit to sindri richt terribill in respect 25 of the sentence of Virgineus and largius, quhilkis war mare plesand and humane in þare Iugementis; 3it þe opinioun and sentence of largius apperit Vnproffittabil, becaus he desirit þe pepill equaly to be deliuerit of þare dettis; And gif þat war done, al faith promittit to creditouris within the ciete suld 30 be aluterlie brokin. herefore the counsel¹⁰ of Virgineus was thocht mare moderate and ressonabill þan ony of þir vthir sentence. The faderis applaudit finalie to þe oppinioun of

¹ riß.² on þe ta part.³ on þe toper part.⁴ rassit on floucht.⁵ falling.⁶ dampnaige.⁷ so bauld.⁸ slokin.⁹ lif.¹⁰ counsaill.

- appius be faction of private persouns, quhilkis has euer noyit
 & sal euir noy the commoun weill. The mater was sa nere
 dressit þat appius had almaist bene create dictator, to þe In-
 finite troubil of þe ciete; for þe making of him dictator suld
 5 haue drawin þe lufe and myndis of commoun pepil fra þe
 faderis in [ane] maist dangerus tyme; for þe sabynis, equis
 and wolchis war all providit and reddy atanis to Invaide þe
 romanis. The faderis for þir ressouns tho^{cht} expedient to gif
 þe empire and dictatoury¹ to ane man of mare soft Ingyne,
 10 And þarefore made marcus valerius þe sone of valesius dictator.
 The small pepill, nochtwithstanding þat þis valerius was create
 dictator to resist þare desiris, ȝit becaus his brothir Valerius
 publicola dotate þame with sa mony gude lawis and priuilegis²
 aganis þe faderis and consullis, þai belevit na thing contrarius
 15 nor displesand to þare weill mycht rise³ fra þat houß. The
 edict made eftir be þis Valerius confermit⁴ þe myndis of small
 pepill to him; for þe samyn was nocht fer defferent fra þe
 edict made before be seruilius consul, at þe beginnyng of þe
 first dissencioun betuix þe said faderis & small pepill. Always
 20 þe smal pepill, thinkand best to obey þe auctorite of þis dic-
 tator, left þare debait & gaif | þare names in writt, And sone p. 165.
 eftir was rasit ane army of mare power þan evir was rasit
 afore þai dais; for þai war x⁵ legiouns of pepill, of quhilkis
 foure was gevin to þe dictator, and thre to Ilkane of þe con-
 25 sulis. Now mycht the batell be na langare deferit,⁶ for þe
 equis latelie Invadit þe romane landis. Attoure þe oratouris
 of latynis desirit þe romanis owthir to send þame supporte, Or
 ellis to suffir þame [to] tak wapynnys⁷ for defence of þare
 awne landis. It was found * mare expedient to þe romanis (152).
 30 to defend þe vnarmit latynis fra all Invasouris þan to suffir
 þame bere wapynnys,⁸ In aventure gif þe sade latynis gat ony
 victorie, þai mycht be more facill to rebelloun. ffor þir
 ressouns vetusius consul was send in þare supporte, quhilk
 put ane⁹ finale end to all þare trubil; ffor þe equis left þe

¹ dictatoure.³ ryß.⁵ ten.⁷ wapingis.⁹ a.² privilaigis.⁴ conformit, both.⁶ differit.⁸ wappinis.

planis, and confiding more in þe straitnes of þe ground þan
 in þare wapynnys,¹ þai debatit þame self in þe hicht of þe
 montanis. The tothir² consul Virgineus past aganis þe wolchis,
 and þat he suld noch³ tyne his tyme, he waistit þe wolchis
 landis with sic cruelte þat þai war constrainit to gif batall. 5
 Now was baith þe armyis arrayit in myddis of ane feild betuix
 þe tentis of athir side afore þare trynschis. The Wolchis
 (becaus þai war in mare nowmer þan [war] þe romanis) had
 þame in contempcioun, and come fordwart⁴ skatterit but ony
 array. The consul be his prudence wald nouthir suffir his 10
 armye to remove, nor ȝit to mak ony⁵ clamoure or noyis;
 bot commandit þame to stand still with þare dartis all in þare
 handis. Als⁶ sone as þe armyis war Ionit, The romanis faucht⁷
 maist cruelly with þare swerdis. The Wolchis, ouresett with
 lang travell and clamoure, eftir þat þai war cummy⁸ on þe 15
 romanis, quham þai traistit to haue effrayit⁹ for fere of þe
 huge danger appering, and seand þe said romanis sa feirsly
 fechtand aganis þame w¹⁰ schynand swerdis afore þare ene,
 þai war na leß astonist þan þai had bene tane vnder wait,
 And Incontinent þai gaif bakkis. howbeit þai had litill pus- 20
 sance to fle, for þai | war ouresett and ayndleß¹¹ throw þare
 lang rymnyng afore þai Ionit. On þe tothir side the romanis
 (becaus þai war noch¹² travellit in þe begynnyng of þare bataill)
 war fresche, and noch¹³ alanerlie ourtuke suddanly þe said
 wolchis, bot als w¹⁴ grete force tuke þare tentis quhare þai 25
 war campit; syne chasit¹⁵ þame to þe toun of velicras with sic
 feirsnes þat baith þe victouris and vincust pepill vnder ane
 cumpany and buschement enterit within þe said toun atanis.
 bot¹⁶ mare horribil slauchter was made þan in þe first batall
 or chais¹⁷,¹⁸ ffor þare was nane sauffit except alanerlie sa mony 30
 as randrit þame self nakit in þe romane handis. (XXXI)
 quhil þe wolchis war dantit in þis wise, the dictator vincust
 þe sabynis and distursit¹⁹ þame w²⁰ þare tentis; how beit þe
 samy²¹ was noch²² but cruell bargane and Innowmerabill slauchter

¹ wappinis.² any.³ affrayit.⁴ chaissit.⁵ chace.⁶ furthwart.⁷ —⁸ om.⁹ endles.¹⁰ quhair.¹¹ discourssit.

on athir side. for þe * dictator left his band of horsmen, & (153).
 come on þe myd feild of sabynis on þare left hand with his
 Oist of futemen, quhare baith þare wyngis war arrayit for de-
 fence þareof, and be þe samyn force he tuke þare tentis and
 5 put end to þare bataill. Sene¹ the bataill was fochtin² at³
 þe louch of Regil, þare was na batall mare honest þan þis last
 rehearsit. The dictator Valerius returnit *with* tryvmphe to rome.
 abone all vthir honouris quhilks war gevin to him, þare was
 made in þe generall playing placis⁴ ane sete to him and his
 10 posterite for contemplatioun of playis⁴ quhen þai occurrit, and
 þe sadill curale⁵ set in þe samyn. The romanis, eftir þis vic-
 torie of wolchis, tuke þe landis namyt Velicras and ekit þame
 to romane empire; And sone eftir send ane cumpany of romanis
 to Inhabit þe toun of Velicras, and maid It ane colonie of
 15 romanis. Eftir thir frequent Victories followit new batell aganis
 the eques; 3it þis batall was fochtin⁶ aganis þe mynde of þe
 consul, for þe place quhare his Inemyis lay was sa difficill⁷
 þat he mycht nochit weil Invaid þame. 3it his army thocht It
 dangerus to delay þe batail, In aventure | the dictator war p. 167.
 20 deprivit of his office afore þai returnit to rome, throw quhilke
 þai mycht be frustrate als wele of his promissis as þai war
 afore be þe⁸ promiss⁹ of þe consulis. Thir ressouns movit þe
 consul to rais his armye fulichlie aganis þe stay montanis quhare
 his Inemyis lay; And þocht þe samyn was attemptit with huge
 25 folie, 3it throw febilnes of wolchis followit grete felicite to
 romanis. ffor the wolchis war sa astonist be feirß cummyng
 of romanis, þat þai left baith þare tentis & trynschis quhare
 þai war campit in maist strenthy place, afore þai come within
 schot¹⁰ of dartis, & fled doun in þe law valis. be þis way þe
 30 romanis gat Innoumerabil pray of gudis and victorie but ony
 effusioun of blude.

¹ Syne.² and, *A.*³ curage, *A.*⁴ deficill.⁵ promissis.⁶ fochtin.⁷ *om.*⁸ fochtin.⁹ his, *both.*¹⁰ schort, *A.*

- (154). how Valerius dictator¹ exonerate him self of þe
dictatorie;¹ of þe first secessioun of þe small
pepill to þe sacrate montane, And how þai war
recounsailit to þe faderis be moninius agrippa;
and of þe first institucioun of þe tribunys. 5
Ca. xiiij.²

Howbeit þe romanis war thryis³ victorius in thre sindri
batallis, as said Is, ȝit nowthir þe faderis nor commouns mycht
forzett þare particulare⁴ besines; ffor þe vsuraris⁵ devisit be
þare subtell⁶ and crafty Industry to frustrate baith þe pepill 10
and þe dictator of all promeis⁷ and faith made to þame afore
the rasing of þare last armye. valerius dictator,⁸ eftir returnyng
of vetusius consul (afore ony accioun was discussit be þe senate),
proponit þe accioun of þe victorius pepill, desiring to haue þare
myndis concernyng þe dett In quhilk þai war⁹ presentlie devoluit. 15
And becaus his petitiouns war⁹ repulsit afore þe senate, he said
in þis wise, "I can nocht be plesand to ȝow sa lang as I am
dressare of concorde. Nochtþeles within few dayis ȝe will desire
þat þe small pepill had had sic ane maister as I haue bene to
þame; and in sa fer as pertenis to my honoure, I wil nocht 20
p. 168. dissaue | my cieteȝanis with vane behechtis,¹⁰ Nor ȝit bere the
office of dictatoury¹¹ ony langare abone ȝow. the contenciouns
amang ȝoure self has movit vncouth Inemyis to Invaid ȝow
with¹² batall; and to þat fyne þat ȝoure public weil suld myster
þe ministracioun of þis office þat I bure latelie. Pece is maid¹² 25
with vncouth Inemyis, bot It is empeschit at hame. ffor þir
causis I wil testify ȝoure sedition erare as ane private man þan
to be cled with¹² ony public auctorite." Als sone as valerius
had sade þir wourdis, he departit fra þe courte, & exonerate
him self of þe dictatoury. It apperit to þe smal pepil þat 30

¹ dictatoure.⁴ perticulare.⁷ promeis.¹⁰ behechtis.² xxxvj.⁵ vsararis.⁸ dictatoure.¹¹ dictatourrie.³ thrið.⁶ subtile.⁹—⁹ om.¹² maist, A.

valerius left þe said auctorite for [þe] Indignacioun þat he
 take in his mynde for þe repelling of his petitiouns; and for
 þat cauþ þai convoyit him w^{it}h incredibil¹ lo*ving to his houþ, (155).
 thinkand þat he had done sufficientlie al chargis pertenyng to
 5 his devore, for It stude nocht be him þat þai war frustrate.
 (XXXII) Eftir þis ane huge dredoure Invadit þe faderis, ffor
 þai traistit als sone as þe army was skalit, nocht alanerlie
 mony hid conventiouns bot als new conspiraciouns suld rise
 haistelie in þe ciete; And howbeit þis last army was rasit²
 10 alanerlie be auctorite of valerius dictator, ȝit becaus euery
 mane³ of þame was sworne to þe consulis, Thay belevit nane
 of þe said armye wald brek þare faith promittit. for þir
 ressouns (as some new occasioun of batall war approcheand
 be þe equis) The faderis commandit þe romane legioun and
 15 army foresaid to departe of þe ciete to resist þare Inemyis.
 be þir doingis raiþ þe seditioun betuix þe smal pepil and
 faderis mare haistelie þan It apperit. for þe army take þare
 deliuerit purpois to sla þe consulis, þat be þare deith all faith
 to þame promittit mycht be dissoluit. Nochtþeles, herand þat
 20 na religioun nor faith of sacramentis mycht be dissoluit be
 cruell fellony, þai ceissit þare purpois, and be persuasioun of
 sitinius, ane subtel man, þai departit of þe ciete, but command
 of þe consullis, & past oure þe river of Anien to þe sacrate
 montane, | thre mylis fra rome. this opinioun⁴ is mare p. 169.
 25 autentik þan Is þe opinioun⁴ of piso historiciane, Saying þe
 pepill departit alanerly to mont avantyne. The pepill, beand
 campit⁵ on þis montane but ony capitane, garnist þare tentis
 w^{it}h maist sovir⁶ trinschis & fowseis, and held þame self quiet
 certane dayis, takand nathing bot alanerlie sa mekill as mycht
 30 be þare necessare sustentacioun; And nowthir did Iniuris nor
 ȝit take ony Iniuris of ony pepil liand þame about. In þe
 menetyme raiþ ane huge dredoure in þe ciete, & throw fere
 þareof all thingis apperit richt doutsum, ffor all þe small
 pepill, quhilk war left in rome behynd þare fallowis,⁷ dred þe

¹ incredible.³ ane.⁵ campit.⁷ follouis.² rassit.⁴ oppinȝeoun.⁶ sober.

violence of þe faderis. on þe samyn maner þe faderis dred þe
 ydil pepill þan *present* in þe ciete, and war vncertane quhethir
 þe sammyn war mare desirus to abide or departe. Als þai
 knew *nocht* how lang þis multitude of pepil þat departit (as
 said is) to þe sacrate montane wald stand in quiet but *ony* 5
 forthir Iniure or Violence, throw quhilk þe said faderis war
 (156). richt pensive in þare myndis, oft avising quhat * Irrecouerabil
 harmes *mycht* follow in perdition of þare ciete, gif ony ex-
 terne or vncouth¹ Inemyis war Instantlie reddy to Invaid þe
 sammyn. And þarefore þai war extremelie resolut þat na 10
 esperance² *mycht* appere of defence of þare ciete, bot gif þe
 cietejanis þareof stude *with* þame at concorde; throw quhilk
 It was necessare þame to be recounseld³ *with* vthir be gude
 or ellis be evill wayis. ffor þir resouns It was found expedient
 to send meninius Agrippa, ane richt facound Oratoure, to þe 15
 pepill, for he was richt tendir to þame and discendit of þare
 lynnage & blude. This meninius, beand finalie ressauit within
 þe tentis of þe pepill, *with* maist grave maner said na thing to
 þame bot þis fabil following. Sum tyme þe membris of þe
 body war *nocht* all (as þai ar now) of ane opinioun and con- 20
 corde, for euary ane of þame had þare awne counsel and þare
 awne ressouns be þame self. The remanent membris tuke hie
 Indignacioun aganis þe wame,⁴ thinkand richt vnworthy þat
 þare hail sollicitude, þare hale laubour & besyneß, was direkkit⁵
 p. 170. to na vthir fyne, bot alanerlie for | the plesere of þe wame.⁴ 25
 Attoure, þe wame stude in myddis of þame all *with* maist eif
 and quiet, vsing nane vthir exercitioun bot alanerlie the pleseris
 brocht to It; And þarefore all þe membris conspirit atanis
 aganis þe wame in sic Ire, þat þe handis determit⁶ to bere na
 mete to þe mouth. The mouth sal *nocht* resauie þat þe handis 30
 has brocht, and þe teith sal *nocht* grynd þat þe mouth resauis.
 quhen þe membris, boldin in þis haterent, beleuit to haue
 dantit þe wame *with* hunger, Thay brocht baith þame self
 and all þe body to extreme resolucioun; Throw quhilk apperis

¹ extrein or
wnco^u.

² asperance.
³ recounsalit.

⁴ wambe (*and so*
below).

⁵ derectit.
⁶ dissernit.

þe office of þe wame is richt nobil and proffittabil¹ to þe
 remanent membris, for It *nocht* onelie nurissis þe self, bot als
 nurissis all þe laif of þe membris; for quhen It has degestit
 þe mete, It diffoundis þe blude, be quhilk we leif and con-
 5 *seruis* oure hele, throw al þe vanis of oure body. Menini^{us}
 þe oratoure forsaide, comparand þis Intestyne seditioun betuix
 þe wame & þe remanent membris of þe body to þe haterent
 rissyn² betuix þe faderis and pepill of rome, softit þe myndis
 of þe said pepill in sic maner þat þai war content to be re-
 10 counsalit with þe faderis. (XXXIII) Sic thingis done, freyndis
 began to trete concorde³ and power grantit to þe pepill be
 certane conditiouns, to haue hallowit⁴ officis to support þame
 aganis * þe consulis; And It sall *nocht* be lefull to þe faderis (157).
 to reiose þe said officis. Be þis way twa tribunys of [þe]
 15 pepill war Institute, þat is to say, Caius Lucini^{us} and lucius
 Albinus. Thir twa first tribunis chesit thre collegis to support
 þame. Sicinius, þe seditious man afore rehersit, was made ane;
 of þe remanent names Is litill force. sum allegis þat þe pepil
 create twa tribunis at þare first departing to þe sacrate mon-
 20 tane, quhare þe sacrate law was first pronu^{nc}it be secessioun
 of þe pepill fra þe faderis to þe said montane.

how romanis and latynis war confederit; how þe
 wolches war vincust and sindri of þare townys
 tane be romanis; Of þe | huge vassalege done be p. 171.
 25 marcius corilianus; how þe romanis war troublit
 with derth, and þe wolchis with þe pestilence;
 how marcius corilianus was banist & tendirly
 rasauit⁵ with þe wolchis. Ca. xv.⁶

At þe returnyng of þe pepill to rome, spurius Cassius and
 30 posthumius Cominus war made consulis. In tyme of þir con-

¹ profytable. ² rysing. ³ accorde. ⁴ hallowit. ⁵ ressauit. ⁶ xxxvij.

sulis was ane band of confederatioun made betuix þe latynis and romanis, for Spurius Cassius was left in rome for making of þe samyn. the tothir consul Cominus was send with ane army aganis þe wolchis ; And he w^tzin schort tyme vincust þe anciantes,¹ and chasit þame to þe toun of longula ; quhare 5 þai war vincust as afore and þe toun takin. Eftir þis he tuke ane vthir toun of wolchis namyt mutamit ;² Syne wⁱth grete force segeit þe toun of coriolos. amang mony vthir vailþeand³ knichtis in þe romane army was ane 3oung childe, namit marcius, baith reddy of wit and hand, quhilk was eftir callit 10 Corilianus to his surname. Certane legiouns of wolchis departit out of Ancium⁴ þare toun, as þai had noch bene astonist wⁱth fere of vncouth Inemyis or ony batellis apperand, and suddanly Invadit þe romane army, quhilk was liand (158). for þe tyme at * þe sege of Coriolas, and takand na aduertence 15 nor sollicitude bot alanerlie of þe toun and cieteþanis In it Includit. In þe samyn tyme sindri cieteþanis of Coriolas Ischit out of þe toun on þe romanis. Than be aventure was standing by marcius, þis valeþeand campioune afore rehersit, accompanyit wⁱth ane knott of feirþ knichtis, and be his singulare manhede 20 noch alanerlie dang abak þe Inemyis Isching (as said Is) bot als enterit feirslie wⁱth all his cumpany at ane opin porte ; and slew all pepill þat occurrit to his sicht. Syne put þe houþ,⁵ quhilk stude hie abone þe wallis, in fire. Incontinent ane terribill spraich and crye of wyiffis⁶ and barnis rysing 25 p. 172. throw | all partis of þe toun, to huge terroure of þe cieteþanis þareof (as þe vse Is), rasiþ þe curage of þe romanis and made þe anciantis⁷ astonist, becaus þe toun þat þai come to reskew was takin. Thus was þe anciantis⁷ vincust,⁸ and þe toun of Coriolas takin. Marcius corilianus be his souerane vassalage 30 sa fer obscurit þe renoun of posthumius consull, þat war noch þe band of latynis was made þat sammyn 3ere be spurius Cassius his Colleig,⁹ and Ingravin in ane brasin pillare, all þe victorie conquest¹⁰ be him but ony memorie suld haue perist.¹¹

¹ antiatys. ³ vailþeant. ⁵ housis. ⁷ antiatis. ⁹ collaige. ¹¹ perreist.
² mucamyt. ⁴ Antium. ⁶ wiffis. ⁸ winkust. ¹⁰ conquiest.

The samyn zere deceissit¹ Meninius Agrippa, quhilk was lufit
 baith with þe faderis and small pepill; bot abone all he was
 maist hartelie beluffit² w^{it}h þe small pepill, eftir þare seces-
 sioun³ to þe sacrate montane. And þocht he was baith com-
 5 positoure and Iuge to continew þe cietezanis in concorde, and
 ambassiatour⁴ of þe faderis to þe smal pepill and reducear⁵ of
 þame to þe ciete, zit he deceissit⁶ sa pure þat all his gudis
 war nocht sufficient to bery⁷ his body; And þarefore þe small
 pepill brocht him furth with ane sovme of money rasit amang
 10 þameself be equale taxacioun, extending to twa vnces. (XXXIV)
 The nixt zere titus gregonius & publius Minutius war made
 consulis; how beit þe ciete was in quiet þis zere but ony
 vncouth⁸ or domestic weris; zit þare succedit ane vthir troubill
 mare sorouffull to þe pepill. for throw secessioun of þe pepill
 15 to þe sacrate montane, mony of all þe romane landis lay waist
 and vnlauborit⁹ for þat zere; And sa rais first ane huge derth
 of vittalis in þe ciete, And eftir þat followit na les hunger
 þan¹⁰ is w^{it}h sic persouns as bene Inclusit or segeit w^{it}hin
 cieteis, quhare na vittalis may be gottin. throw quhilk ane
 20 terribil mortalite suld haue haistelie followit baith of ser*vandis (159).
 and commouns, war nocht þe consulis maid þe maist haiste
 prouisioun to remede þe sammyn. ffor nocht alanerly war
 merchandis direct¹¹ be þe said consulis to by vittalis in þe
 land of Ethrurie on þe richt hand of Ostia, and on þe eist
 25 hand to þe ciete of Cvma amang þe wolchis; Bot als war
 send merchandis to by | quhete in sicill. for all þe pepill p. 173.
 quhilk lay maist approcheand to romanis had sic Ire and
 haterent aganis þame, þat þai war constrenit¹² to seik vittalis
 at maist remote and vncouth⁸ regiouns. quhen þir merchandis
 30 quhilk war direckit¹¹ to Cvma had ladin þare schippis, and
 war reddy to cum away with þir vittalis be þame coft, þai war
 haldin violently be Aristodemus tyran, and confiscate for þe
 gudis of terquynis, to quham he allegit him to be heretoure.

¹ dissisit.⁴ -ouris, both.⁷ bury.¹⁰ þat, both.² beluvit.⁵ redussar.⁸ wnco^u.¹¹ dereckit.³ cesescioun (!).⁶ disseissit.⁹ wnlauborait.¹² constrianit.

The schippis quhilkis war send to þe wolchis & pontyne war
 nocht alanerlie Inhibit to by vittalis, bot war als cruelly In-
 vadit be Inhabitantis and pepil þareof. ȝit certane vittalis war
 brocht to rome out of Ethurie, be quhilk þe pepill was sus-
 tenit. The romanis, vexit with þis affliction and troubil of 5
 hunger, had bene vntymuslie Invadit be þe wolchis, war nocht¹
 ane grete² pestilence come haistelie on þe said wolchis quhen
 þai war reddy to raif þare armye. The romanis, seand þare
 Inemyis astonist with þis terribil pestilence, send new garni-
 soun of pepill baith to the toun of velitras and to þe Castell 10
 of norva, to þat fyne That howbeit þis pestilence happynnyt
 to ceif amang þe wolchis, ȝit þai suld leif vnder grete fere
 and dredoure of romanis. At þe Ische of þis ȝere, Marcus
 Minutius and Aulus sempronius war made consulis; In quhais
 tyme come grete haboundance of vyttale³ out of sicill to 15
 rome. Sone eftir, þe faderis went to þare consultacioun, to
 avise how mekil of þir vittalis⁴ suld be gevin to þe small
 pepill. Sindry men belevit þe tyme cummyng⁵ to recovir the
 priuilegis quhilkis war latelie conquest⁶ be þare secessioun in
 plane extorsioun of þe faderis. In þe first marcius Corilianus, 20
 Inemye to þis new auctorite of tribunis, said as followis: "gif
 þe pepill desiris þir vittalis,⁷ lat þame renunce þare new priui-
 legis,⁸ and restore þe faderis to þe samyn richtis as þai had
 afore. quhy suffer I" (said Marcius) "þir new digniteis &
 (160). officis of tribunys? quhy suffer I sicinius * schynand with þis 25
 p. 174. aulthorite abone me, as I war put vnder seruitude and redemit
 fra þe handis of thevis? quhy suffir I [sic schame and dis-
 honour forþer þan Is necesar? ⁹Sall I suffer] sicinius to
 regne¹⁰ abone me, sen I mycht nocht suffir king tarquyne?⁹
 Lat sicinius pas now to þe sacrate montane, and tak þe pepill 30
 with him; for þe way is nocht onelie patent þareto, bot als to
 all montanis liand þareabout. Lat þe pepill reif now þe frutis
 of oure landis, as þai did þe thrid ȝere afore. Lat þame now

¹ noch.⁴ vitillis.⁷ vattellis.¹⁰ rigne.² cruell.⁵ cumin.⁸ preuilaiges.³ wictaill.⁶ conquest.⁹—⁹ after next sentence in B.

leif on þe vittalis quhilkis þai conquest¹ be þare furie. I dar afferme gif we hald abak þir vittalis fra þame, þai sall be dantit [þairthrow] erare to be lauboraris of þe landis in tymes cummyn² þan to arme þame aganis þe faderis, or stop þe landis to be
 5 manurit. And beleif It may be als eith done as said, to gif na vittalis to þe pepil, bot vnder sic conditioun þat þai renunce al lawis, autoriteis, and priuilegis quhilkis þai latelie conquest in extorsioun of þe faderis be þare secessioun, afore þai gett ony parte of þir vittalis." (XXXV) This opinioun of marcius
 10 was found oure Rigorus³ be þe faderis; ffor It was ane provocacioun to arme þe pepill with maist Ire aganis þame, becaus It defraudit þe pepill of þare leving, and to mak þame as þai war Inemyis of⁴ þe ciete, to perisþ be hunger & to haue na parte of þe vittalis quhilk come in þare ciete be
 15 gude aventure, without þe tribunis war deliuer⁵ as cativis to be punyst at þe plesere of þis marcius, and without sa mony as he plesit amang þe pepil war skurgit on þe samyn wise. The pepill had na litill Indignacioun, þat þis marcius suld rise sa haistelie to be þare new fleschour and skurgeare,⁶ Or to
 20 haue ony power of life or deith abone þame, Or ȝit to bring þame to ony servitude or thirllage. And finalie þai had⁷ Invadit þis marcius afore his departing fra þe courte, war nocht þe tribunis assignit ane day to here him punyst for þe tressoun aganis þame committit. þus was þe Ire and Indig-
 25 nacioun of pepill sum parte | mesit, seand þame self made p. 175. baith Iuge & maister of his life and deith þat was þare Inemye. Marcius tuke first þe minassing of tribunys in contemptioun, & said þai had na autorite nor power to pvnys,⁸ bot alanerlie to supporte þe pepill, als þai war tribunys of
 30 pepill and nocht of faderis. All wayis þe pepill was sa halely commovit þat þe faderis mycht nocht eschewe nor be deliuerit of þare Ire bot be * punytioun of þis man; and ȝit þe faderis (161). resistit þe Ire of small pepill sa fer as þai mycht, nocht alanerlie be euery ane of þare persuasioun In speciall, bot

¹ conquest.³ regorus.⁵ delyuerit.⁷ to haue, A.² cumming.⁴ to.⁶ scourge.⁸ pvnice.

als be þe auctorite of þe hale ordoure of senatouris. first It
 was assailzete be þe faderis to brek þe purpois of small pepil
 gif þai mycht, and to stop þame fra ony conventioun or coun-
 sell.¹ and becaus þe saidis faderis war frustrate in þis lauboure,
 þai went altogiddir as þai had bene gilty for sum cryme be 5
 þame committit, makand humyll Intercessioun to þe pepill for
 þe life of ane cietezane or senatoure; and prayit þame gif þai
 wald nocht assoleze² him as cietezane, to perdoun his life, and
 to gif him frelie to þame as he war ane faltoure. finalie þe
 day Is cummyn þat was sett to marcius to compere afore þe 10
 pepill, and how beit he nocht comperit, þe pepil perseverit in
 þare Ire; and nochtwithstanding his absence þai condampnit
 him, quhare euer he mycht be apprehendit, to þe deith.
 Marcus, fugitive fra þare lawis, become Inemye with grete
 mynassing baith to romanis and his native cuntre, and fled 15
 amang þe wolchis; quhare he was maist tendirle Ressaut, &
 estemyit with grete reuerence and honoure, Becaus his haterent
 was sa boldin aganis þe said Romanis. ffor he complenit sum
 tyme þe Insufferabil and maist odious³ Iniuris done to him, and
 sum tyme he votit him self with huge mynassing to revenge þe 20
 samyn. he was ressaut⁴ in lugeing⁴ with Attius Tulus, þe
 gretest senzeour þat was amang þe wolchis in þai dayis, and ay
 scharpest⁵ Inemye to romanis. And becaus þis Tulus had ane
 auld rankoure⁶ aganis þe Romanis, and þat vthir marcius had
 p. 176. ane new Ire aganis þame on þe samyn maner, | thay tuke þare 25
 secrete avisement togiddir be quhat maner þai mycht best mak
 were aganis þe said romanis. ffor þai beleuit þare pepill mycht
 nocht be lichtly persuadit to batall, becaus þe samyn has bene
 assailzete sa oft with sindri infelicateis; and nocht onelie was
 þare ferß sprete and corage⁷ brokin be sindri discomfitouris, 30
 bot all þe maist forcy 3oung campiouns of þare cuntre miserably
 devourit⁸ be pestilence. Thus sen þe Ire and Indignatioun of
 þare pepill was slokynnyt⁹ be Interuentioun of lang trewis, It
 was necessare to awalkin þame be sum slicht of new Iniuris.

¹ consale.² odyus.³ schairpest.⁴ curaige.⁵ sloknit.⁶ assoilþe.⁷ om.⁸ ald rancure.⁹ devorit.

how latyne¹ was punyst for his contempcioun aganis (162).
 þe command of Iupiter, and how þe romane playis
 war new restorit; how Tullius causit þe wolchis to
 be schamefully eiekkit out of rome, and armit þame
 5 *with* grete Ire aganis þe romanis; and how marcius
 Corilianus put þe romanis to grete afflictioun.

Ca. xvj.²

(XXXVI) It happynnyt þat þe romanis war makand þare pro-
 visioun to renew þe grete playis mony ȝere before hantit in þare
 10 ciete. þe cauß quhy þir playis war renewit followis. ane hous-
 haldare nocht onelie scurgit his *servand* arelie in þe morow throw
 þe placis quhare þe playis war ordanit³ to be, bot als gart him
 bere þe gibbet on his bak throw þe said place, afore þe pepill was
 convenient to þe contemplatioun of þir playis. Sone eftir, þe rom-
 15 anis began þare playis, as þis sorowfull punytioun had bene na
 thing vnsemand to þe religioun & solempnite of þare playis.
 Schort tyme eftir, Iupiter apperit to ane citeȝane of rome, how-
 beit he was of þe lynnage populare, namyt latyne; And schew to
 him be divyne visioun þat þis last play was na thing plesand to
 20 him, becaus þe first padȝeane þareof be skurging of þe *servand*
 was dolorus; & þarefore⁴ | commandit him to schaw þe faderis and p. 177.
 consulis, gif þai restorit nocht þare playis to sic magnificence and
 honoure as was hantit afore, þare ciete suld be haistelie Invadit
 with grete trubill. how beit þis man was gevin to all religioun,
 25 and had þe goddis in reuerence [and dredour], ȝit he schew nocht
 his visioun to þe faderis, þat he suld nocht cum be revelatioun of
 sic fretis in derisioun of pepill. bot his tary and Inobedience
 succedit to his hevy *dammage*,⁵ for within few dayis he tynt his
 son be suddane infirmite. þan Iupiter (þat þe cauß of suddane
 30 deith⁶ of his son suld nocht be vnknewin to þe said latyne)

¹ king latyne, *A.*

² *om.*

³ ordenat.

⁴ for that cauß.

⁵ havy dampnaige.

⁶ deid.

apperit to him be new visioun, Inquiring gif he thocht him self
 sufficientlie punyst for his Inobedience be deith of his son; and
 zit (as of before) said to him gif he schew *nocht* þe said visioun to
 (163). þe faderis & consulis, as he was afore **commandit*, he suld be
 punyst with maist cruell displeßer. howbeit þis secund visioun 5
 was deiply prentit in his mynde, zit he was sleuthfull and wald
 nocht schaw¹ þe samyn; And þarefore be haterent of goddis he
 was strikkin *wit* suddane infirmite but ony power of his body.
 Than was he clerely aduertist þat he had incurrit þe Ire of goddis.
 At last he was sa oureset with grete² troubill rising aboue vthir, 10
 þat he send for his freyndis, and schew to þame þe sindri visious
 of Iupiter, *wit* all circumstance afore rehersit. Incontinent, be
 advise of freyndis, he was brocht on ane³ litter to þe courte afore
 þe faderis, and quhen he had schewin all his visioun, to þe grete
 wonder⁴ of all pepill *present* for þe tyme, ffollowit ane vthir 15
 mirakil mare wonderus⁵ þan was sene afore; for þis latyne
 (quhilk was brocht to þe court afore the faderis but ony pouste of
 his membris) was sa suddanlie conualescit & restorit to his hele,
 fra he had schewin þe *command* of Iupiter, þat he past hame to
 his houß sa hale as he had never be⁶ strikkin *wit* ony infirmite. 20
 p. 178. (XXXVII) The senate for þis my[rakill] *commandit* þe playis to be
 renewit to Iupiter with maist magnificent coist þat mycht be
 devisit. to vesy þir playis come grete nowmer of wolchis with
 Attius Tullius þare prince. This Tullius afore þe begynnyng of
 þir playis went to þe consulis, as It was devisit be him and martius 25
 at his departing, and said [as] he wald schaw to þame sum secrete
 materis, gif þai war at quiet concernyng þe public wele. "I wil"
 (said tullius) "say sum thing of my cietejanis, quhilkis be my
command has followit me to 3oure ciete, nocht to accuse þame for
 ony falt or tressoun as zit *committit* aganis 3ow, Bot erare to 30
 provide sum way þat þai do na thing tressonabill aganis 3ow in
 tymes *cummyng*. The Ingyne of my pepill is mare Inconstant
 þan I desire, quhilk Is richt manifest to ws be mony harmes; ffor
 we stand nocht in prosperite be oure awne gude dedis, bot allan-

¹ schew.² ilk.³ a.⁴ vonder.⁵ vonderus.⁶ bene.

erlie be 3oure patience. here is ane grete nowmer of wolchis gadderit in 3oure ciete, and 3oure playis ar now haistelie to be begvn, to quhais sicht sal the pepill be maist ernstfully gevin. I remember quhat displeßer was laitlie done be 3oung and Insolent
 5 sabynis In þis ciete, quhen þai revist 3oure commoun wemen. Tharefore I drede þat sum thing be done by vnprudence or folie of my pepill. This is þe mater þat I wald haue schewin to 3ow for þe eif of my pepill and 3ouris. Attoure, * In sa fer as pertenis (164). to me I am deliuerit to departe haistelie of 3oure ciete, and to
 10 retorne hame, þat I be *nocht* participant of ony Iniure or troubl following." Quhen þe consulis had opynnyt þis doutsum mater afore þe faderis be sikker certificacioun¹ of Tullus, þai belevit þe samyn of verite; ffor þe auctorite of Tullus was of sic estimacioun² and renoun amang þame, þat It maid þis mater *rycht* credibill.
 15 And þarefore, to eschew all displese | (gif ony was appering) p. 179. certane *seriandis* war send to þe wolchis, *commanding* þame to departe out of þe ciete afore þe nycht war *cummyn*, Vnder pane of dede.³ The terroure of þis proclamacioun made þe wolchis sa astonist, þat þai ran *wit* huge effray to thare lugeing, to gadder
 20 þare gudis þat þai *mycht* haistelie departe. Eftir þare parting⁴ fra þe ciete, raif ane hie Indignacioun in þare myndis, becaus thay war chasit on sic ane solempnit⁵ day fra þe cumpany of goddis and men, as þai war maist waryit and abhominabil creaturis. (XXXVIII) Tullus, eftir þat þai war returnand hame in sindri
 25 cumpanyis, abaid at þe wod of ferentyne; And quhen þai war all *presentlie cum*,⁶ he callit þe capitanis and principale men þareof to ane counsell. Als sone as he had gottin þame about him in maner of Concioun, he apperit full of haitrent, & with wourdis persuading þame to grete Ire he said in þis maner: "Belouit freyndis,
 30 how beit 3e wald for3ett þe auld Iniuris and harmes done to 3ow & 3oure progenitouris be romane pepill, how may 3e sustene þe schame and dishonoure done to 3ow þis day? ffor þe romanis has made þare playis allanerlie þis day to 3oure diffamacioun & schame. Persaue⁷ 3e *nocht* how þai haue led 3ow þis day as

¹ siccar sartificatioun.³ deith.⁵ solempne.⁷ persaif.² astimatioun.⁴ departing.⁶ *cumin*.

vincust cativis in tryumphe? know 3e nocht quhat derisioun 3e
 haue sufferit þis day, be sa mony vncouth cietezanis, strangearis
 & nyghtbouris? Se 3e nocht how 3oure wyiffis & barnis has bene
 þis day transportit throw sa mony mowthis of vncouth pepill?
 quhat will be said be þai pepill quhilk herd þe schamefull pro- 5
 clamacioun made aganis 3ow? quhat will be said be þai pepill
 þat has mett 3ow schamefully passing of þe ciete? Na vthir thing
 wil be presumyt bot we suld haue done sum tressonabill offence,
 p. 180. þat mycht haue perturbit þir solempne playis, gif we | had taryit
 ony langare within þe said ciete, & mycht nocht haue purgit ws 10
 (165). þareof bot alanerlie * be þe sacrifice of piacle. and for þir causis
 we ar chasit fra cumpany and counsell of euery honest pepill.
 Attoure, It proffittis na thing to *oure* livis how beit we haue
 haistyt¹ ws *wit* maist diligence of þare ciete; And þocht we
 wald say þat þis haisty departing may nocht be callit ane schame- 15
 full fleing, 3it how may 3e think ony vthir bot þat ciete Is 3oure
 dedelie Inemye, In quhilk 3e behuffit to haue loist² all 3oure
 livis,³ gif 3e had taryit ane day mare þan 3e did? Now is opin
 were denuncit to 3ow, to þe grete mischeif of þame þat has
 denuncit It, gif 3e be vailzeant men." The wolchis, boldin *wit* 20
 huge Ire na leß consauit be þame self þan be persuasioun⁴ of
 tullus, Returnit in þare houff,⁵ and movit sa þare freyndis for þe
 dishonoure done to þame, þat al þe name and lynage of Wolchis
 was conspirit *wit* opin rebellioun aganis þe romanis. (XXXIX)
 And to be gouvernouris to þame in þis maist dangerus battall war 25
 chosin Attius Tullus and marcius Corilianus, þe romane outlaw,
 In quham þis wolchis had mare esperance⁶ of felice þan eftir
 succedit to þare purpois. Apperit þus þat⁷ þe public wele of
 romanis was more strong and pussant be Valezeand capitanis þan
 be ony strang armyis. This marcius tuke first þe toun of circe, 30
 and quhen he had expellit þe Colonis and new citezanis þareof, he
 deliuerit þe samyn⁸ frelie to þe wolchis. sic thingis done, he past
 fordwart with thortoure passage in þe latyne way, & tuke fra rom-
 anis the townis namyt longula, satrik, polustia, Coriolos & Novella,

¹ haistit.³ liffis.⁵ to þair houssis.⁷ at.² lost.⁴ persuauioun.⁶ asperance.⁸ sam.

and made þame tributare to þe empire of Wolchis. And within
 schort tyme eftir, he tuke þe toun of lavyne *with* Corbeo, vetelia,
 trebium, labicos, & pedum. finalie departing | fra þe toun of p. 181.
 pedum, he sat doun campit *with* his oist beside þe fowsy¹ namyt
 5 Civilia Within five mylis to Rome; and howbeit he waistit all
 landis pertenand² to þe small pepil of rome, with sindri vthir
 landis liand þareabout, ȝit he send ane cumpanye of armit men to
 kepe þe landis pertenand to þe faderis fra all direptioun. This
 slicht was done be martius, owthir becaus he had mare Ire aganis
 10 þe pepil þan faderis, Or ellis to raif ane seditioun betuix þe faderis
 and Pepill of rome. In þe mene tyme, þe tribunis armit þe small
 pepil feirslie aganis þe faderis, Saying þai lauborit alanerlie for
 sautie of þare awne landis; þat but ony dout grete discorde had
 followit eftir, war *nocht* *þe feir of vncouth Inemyis, quhilk Is (166).
 15 occasioun of concorde, causit þame, howbeit þai war suspect to
 vthir, to stand all of ane opinioun. The faderis had confidence in
 na thing bot alanerlie in þare wapynnys and armour; Be contrare
 þe pepill curit *nocht* quhat aduersite nor troubil succedit to þame,
 sa þat þai had na weris.

20 how the faderis send þare legatis and preistis to
 martius for peace, and war repulsit; Of þe orisoun
 made be volumnia to þe said martius, & how he
 rasis his campe and was slane; how þe equis
 and Wolchis war diuidit amang þame self, and
 25 vincust be romanis. Ca. xvij.³

Spurius mausius⁴ and sextus furius war made consulis in þe
 ȝere following. quhen þir consulis war nowmerand þare legiouns,
 and devisand to put garnisouns of armit men to þe portis and
 wallis of þare ciete, Comperit afore þame ane huge pepill desiring
 30 peace. The consulis be þare pietuous regret⁵ and noyis war

¹ fousey. ² pertening. ³ xxxix. ⁴ Nawsius. ⁵ petewis Regrait.

astonist, & solistit þe faderis to send legatis to martius Corili-
 p. 182. anus | for sum tretie of pece. The faderis, seand þe pepil dekey¹
 fra all curage and manhede, send þare oratouris² to þe said
 martius. To þir legatis was gevin ane doure ansuere be martius,
 saying he wald trete pece with romanis, sa þai wald frelie gif 5
 oure all landis pertenyng to þe wolchis; And gif þe romanis
 wald nocht [frelie] renuŕce þe saidis landis, bot traisting be crafty
 tyranny to reiose þe sammyn, he maid þame vnderstand he was
 na leß myndefull of euery Iniuris done to him be his cietezanis
 þan of þe meritis done to him be þe wolchis his freyndis; & mak 10
 þame sone to know his feirß curage and sprete was nocht brokin
 bot scharpit³ be exile. Eftir þis ansuere was send to him vthir
 oratouris of mare renovne [and prudence], bot þai gat na entres
 in his tentis. Than þe preistis war send to him in þare religious
 habitis; howbeit þai brak nowthir his mynde nor purpois more 15
 (167). þan did þe vthir legatis afore rehersit. (XL) * In þe mene tyme
 þe matronis of rome past oft tymes to Veturia, moder to þe said
 martius, and to Volumnia his wife; 3it it is nocht knawin quhiddir
 þe samyn procedit be generall consultacioun of þe faderis, or gif
 It was onelie be þare awne effeminate doloure. Always þe fore- 20
 said matronis persuadit þis agit woman Veturia to pas to þe
 camp of martius with his wiffe Volumnia and his twa barnis, þat
 þai mycht defend þe ciete be þare teris & petuous⁴ wourdis,
 quhilk couth⁵ nocht be defendit be force of men. Als sone as
 þir women⁶ war cummyn to the campe, It was schawin be his 25
 familiaris þat ane huge nowmer of women⁶ was cummyn⁷ to him,
 presumyng sen he was nocht brokin fra his purpois be maieste
 of legatis, nor 3it be religioun or reuerence of preistis, þat he suld
 be þe more obstinate aganis þe teris of women.⁶ Belive⁸ ane of
 his familiaris saw Veturia his moder with his wiffe and barnis, for 30
 p. 183. scho was of more hevy⁹ | and dolorus contenance þan þe re-
 manent matronis in hir cumpany, and said to Martius: “leß þan
 myne ene dissaue me, baith thy moder, þi wiffe, and þi barnis
 ar cummyn to oure oist.” Martius þan raisß (as he had bene

¹ decay.³ schairpit.⁵ culd.⁷ cuming.⁹ havy.² horitouris.⁴ petewis.⁶ wemen.⁸ belif.

astonist) fra his seit,¹ and went forthwart to embraið his moder.
 Incontinent þis Veturia turnit hir [about] fra humyl prayeris to²
 maist Ire, and said: "hald abak þi handis, quhil I may se
 quhiddir I am cummyn to my son or to my Inemye, and quhiddir
 5 I am now þi moder, or þi presoner in þi tentis. Vnhappy eild
 has brocht me with lang and miserabill liffe to sic poynt, þat I
 man se þe first banist, & syne Inemye. how mycht þow distroy
 and waist þe land þat has bred and nurist þe? howbeit þow was
 full of mynassing,³ quhy was nocht þi Ire assuageit,⁴ fra þow was
 10 cummyn in thy cuntre? als sone as rome apperit to þi sicht,
 quhy wald þow nocht say, 'wit~~h~~in þone wallis ar my houffs, my
 moder, my wiffe, and my barnis'? Allace, had I neuer bene with
 childe, Rome had neuer bene segeit. war nocht I haue ane son,
 I mycht haue deit in my fre cuntre. And now þare may na thing
 15 be sa miserabil to me bot þe samyn is als schamefull to þe; bot
 I wil nocht leif lang (as I am now) ane Vnhappy creature. þit
 haue piete of þir, thy wiffe & barnis, quhilkis sal nocht fale, gif
 þow procedis ony forthir, owthir to be haistelie slane Or ellis to
 leif in lang miserie and *seruitude*." * Throw þir wourdis Martius (168).
 20 embrasit⁵ his moder, his wife & barnis, and was finalie sa
 brokin be þare continual teris, and be commiseratioun of his
 native cuntre, þat he rasit his campe fra þe sege of rome & depar-
 tit. Sum allegis fra he had rasit his campe fra þe sege, he come
 in sic haterent to his army þat he was slane. Vtheris allegeit
 25 þat he deceissit in ane vthir maner; þit fabius þe richt autentik
 autor sayis he levit quhill he come to extreme age, And usit ane
 proverb,⁶ Saying, "Na thing may be sa displesand to ane agit
 man as to be exilit."⁷ | The romane faderis Invyit [nocht] þe p. 184.
 loving of⁸ þir women *deseruit*; for Ilk man leiffit⁹ in þai dais
 30 but ony detractioun or paring of þare nychtbouris glore. Ane
 tempill was nocht onelie biggit, bot als dedicate to remane in
 perpetual renoun & memorie of þir wemen; þit nochtwit~~h~~stand-
 ing þe departing of martius, þe Equis and Wolchis returnit wit~~h~~
 new incursiouns. bot þir equis wald nocht suffir attius Tullius to

¹ sait.³ minissing.⁵ Imbrassit.⁷ exild.⁹ lewit.² in.⁴ asuagit.⁶ proveirb.⁸ þat.

be ony langare capitane or empriour of þare armye ; throw quhilk
 raif haistelic ane odious¹ seditioun betuix þir two pepil, quhilk
 of þame suld cheif þe capitane to governe baith þe armyis. This
 seditioun was endit be þe swerd ; for It movit baith þe pepill to
 Invaid vthir wth batall. In þe mene tyme þe romanis come 5
 wth displayit baner, and vincust þame baith wth na les dangerus
 þan obstinate batall.

- (169). how Cassius was slane becaus he wald haue conquest
 þe croun ; how þe faderis & smal pepell fel at grete
 contencioun for þe law agrarie ; how þe tempil of 10
 Castor was dedicate ; how fabius dantit baith þe
 tribunis & pepil, & was continewit mony ȝeris in þe
 consulate. Ca. xviiiij.²

Efter this victorie Titus sicinius and gneus Aquillius war made
 Consulis. sicinius was send wth ane army aganis þe Wolchis, 15
 and Aquillius was send aganis þe hernikis ; for baith þir pepill
 war reddy wth grete armyis to Invaid þe romanis. In þis ȝere
 þe hernikis war Vincust, bot þe batall aganis þe wolchis was
 fochtin³ wth equale chance, throw quhilk þai war constrenit⁴ to
 sevir on athir side but ony Victory. (XLI) In þe ȝere following 20
 procunus⁵ Virginus and spurius Cassius war made consulis. In
 þis ȝere pece was made wth hernikis, and þe twa parte of þare
 landis ekit to romane empire. Be avise of Cassius, þe half of
 p. 185. þir landis now conquest war gevin | to Latynis, and þe tothir
 half equalie dividit amang þe pepill. Cassius als ekit to þir 25
 largitions sindri vthir landis, quhilk on þe sammyⁿ maner war
 delt amang þe said pepill ; ffor he thocht þir landis vnwourthelie⁶
 possedit be private men. þis liberalite of Cassius made sindri of
 þe faderis richt astonist for fere of þare gudis, specially þame

¹ a hodie.² xl.³ fochtin.⁴ constranit.⁵ protinus.⁶ unworthe (sic).

quhilk's war possessouris of þir landis for þe tyme. Attour þe
 faderis war richt hevvy in þare myndis, dredand Cassius be þir
 largitiounis to conques sic favoure and riches þat mycht be noy-
 sum to þare liberte. Than was þe law agrarie first promulgate,
 5 quhilk was neuer eftir attemptate but motioun of grete troubil.
 Virginius þe tothir consul resistit to þe largitiounis of Cassius, and
 had nocht onelie þe faderis, bot als ane parte of þe pepill, of his
 opinioun; Be quham It was thocht richt Vnwourthy þat þe
 public landis tane fra nobil citez*anis and faderis suld be gevin (170).
 10 to private persouns. Attoure, þai herd oftymes virginius þe
 tothir consul say in his concionis, The gift and rewarde of
 Cassius his colleig was pestilencius; for þe samyn was nocht
 onelie ane way to thirll þe pepil (þat gat þame) to seruitude, bot
 als was ane crafty slicht to mak him self king. "To quhat effect
 15 desiris Cassius þe assistance baith of latynis and companjeouns
 to his opinioun? to quhat fyne has he sufferit þe hernikis to
 reiose þe thrid parte of þare landis, quhilk's war conquest be þe
 victorie made latelie on þame, bot alanerlie þat he may be maid
 Capitane to þame, as martius Corilianus was afore to þe
 20 Wolchis?" Cassius, abone all þir donatiouns, set him, as he
 had bene ane private man, to cauß þe law agrarie haue place
 and effect amangis þe pepill. finalie baith þe consulis gaif þare
 myndis to conqueß all favoure & benevolence þai mycht afore þe
 pepill. Virginius said he was content þat þe landis conquest be
 25 þare weris war delt to nane vthir bot amang þe cietejanis of
 Rome. Cassius was repute ambitious for parting of þir landis
 amang companjeouns, and was of na estimacioun afore þe
 cietejanis; & for þat cauß he sett his mynde be sum vthir p. 186.
 way¹ to be recounsellit² with þe pepil, And commandit al þe
 30 money þat was tane for selling of þe vttalis of sicil fra þe pepil
 to be frelie deliuerit to þame agane but ony tary. Bot þe pepill
 refusit It, na les þan It had bene bot ane trane to haue conquest
 þare consentis to mak him king. finalie þai tuke sic suspitioun
 aganis him, becaus his giftis war gevin sa haboundantly, þat þai
 35 detestit all his largitiounis atanis, and declarit þame but force or

¹ wayis.² recounsalit.

1. The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and activities. It emphasizes that proper record-keeping is essential for transparency and accountability, particularly in financial matters. The text outlines various methods for organizing and storing data, including digital databases and physical filing systems. It also mentions the need for regular audits and reviews to ensure the integrity of the information.

2. The second section focuses on the role of communication in the organization. It highlights that effective communication is crucial for coordinating efforts and ensuring that all team members are aligned with the organization's goals. The text provides guidelines for both internal and external communication, stressing the importance of clarity, brevity, and timeliness. It also discusses the use of various communication channels, such as email, meetings, and reports.

3. The third part of the document addresses the issue of resource management. It explains that resources, whether human or material, must be allocated efficiently to achieve the organization's objectives. The text offers strategies for identifying resource needs, prioritizing tasks, and monitoring resource usage. It also touches upon the importance of training and development to ensure that the workforce is equipped with the necessary skills and knowledge.

4. The final section discusses the importance of compliance with legal and regulatory requirements. It states that organizations must adhere to all applicable laws and regulations to avoid legal consequences and maintain their reputation. The text provides an overview of common regulatory frameworks and offers advice on how to implement robust compliance programs. It also mentions the importance of staying updated on changes in the legal landscape.

was Votit to þe said god Castor in þe batall fochtin¹ aganis
 þe latynis at þe louch of regill, quhen posthumius was dictator,
 And for þat cauß his son was ordand² to dedicate þe samyn.
 In þe 3ere following þe myndis of small pepill war gretumlie
 5 tane be sweitnes of þe law agrarie. The tribunis of pepill
 defendit þe auctorite popolare be þe law popolare. The faderis,
 beleving þe pepill to haue yneuch³ and oure mekil of Wilfull⁴
 furie, wald *nocht* suffir þame to reiose ony largitionis, or *vthir*
 thingis þat *mycht* persuade þame to folie. Attoure, þe faderis war
 10 sa weil supportit⁵ be þe consulis, þat þai gat þare entent abone
 þe pepill. The houß of fabius reiosit *nocht* onelie þe dignite
 consulare for þat present 3ere, Bot als for þe 3ere following; for
 martius fabius, brother to Ceso fabius, was maid consull, and
 lucius Valerius made his colleig; bot he was gretumlie hatit be
 15 þe pepill becaus he was ac^{*}cusare of spurius Cassius. The (172).
 samyn tyme was ane debait betuix þe faderis and tribunis,
⁶ffor þe faderis allegit þe law of tribunis was vane, and baith þe
 auctouris and doaris þareof vane. The name of fabius was fra
 thens of grete renovne, for þai reiosit þe consulat iii⁷ 3eris con-
 20 tinually eftir following, all of ane opinioun⁸ grete Inemye to the
 auctorite of tribunis. And þarefore na litill honour & loving
 succedit lang tyme to þat houß, as It wele deseruit.

¹ fochtin.² ordanit.³ eneuch.⁴ wilsum.⁵ support.⁶ *The fourth hand in B. resumes here (p. 209).*⁷ thre.⁸ oppinzeoun.

p. 188. | Off new rebelloun made aganis the romanis be
the Wolchis and equis ; how new seditioun raiß
betuix þe faderis and pepil for þe law agrarie ;
how oppia þe Virgin Vestal for hir Incest was
buryit quyk ; how fabius vincust þe veanis con- 5
trare þe myndis of his army ; And how þe princes
of ethrurie come¹ in support of Veanis.

Ca. xix.²

Followit þe batall aganis þe Veanis, and belive followit new
rebellioun of Wolchis. The romanis, howbeit þai³ had super- 10
flew nowmer⁴ of pepill to abandoun þe rage of vncouth
Inemyis, abusit al þare pussance w^{it}h⁵ ciuil contentiouns ; &
suppois þai war [rycht] dreary and pensive in þare myndis for
þir contenciouns afore rehersit, zit abone þat troubil apperit
certane hevinlie⁵ prodigis to þe daly⁶ terroure and mynassing 15
of pepill, als wele to burgh⁷ as land. þe divinouris, in seirche-
ing quhy þe goddis had sic wraith aganis þe pepil, could fynd
na vthir cauß be þare private & public consultaciouns, baith
of foulis & bowellis of beistis, bot alanerlie þat þare sacrifices
war nocht done with dew reuerence and honouris to þare 20
goddis. Thir terrouris movit þe pepil to sic poynt, þat þai³
condampnit Oppia þe virgine vestal⁸ for hir Incest, and berijt
hir quyk. (XLIII) In þe 3ere following quintius fabius and
gneus tullius war maid Consulis. The romanis had in þis 3ere
na letß weris aganis⁹ Vncouth Inemyis þarefurth þan Civile dis- 25
(173). sensioun at hame amang *þame self ; ffor baith þe equis and
Veanis come armit w^{it}h⁵ terribil Incursiouns in þare landis.
The furie of þir pepill ilkday more Increasing causit Ces-
o fabius and spurius furius to be made consulis. The equis
segeit Artona ane toun of latynis, and þe Veanis waistit sa lang 30

¹ cum.

³ þe.

⁵ havinly.

⁷ burgh.

⁹ with.

² xli.

⁴ numbr.

⁶ daylie.

⁸ wirgen vestail.

þe romane landís | without resistance, þat þai¹ made þare p. 189.
 avant² with grete mynassing to sege rome; 3it þe romane
 pepill war more rasi to curage þan astonist be þir terrouris.
 And howbeit þai refusit to gif þare names in writt, 3it
 5 þe samyn procedit *nocht* be þare awne myndis bot erare
 be persuasioun of þir tribunis. ffor spurius lucinius,³ tribune
 of pepill, traisting the tyme *cumming* to constrene þe faderis
 be extreme necessite to appreve⁴ and ratifie þe law agrarie,
 held abak þe pepil fra ony assemblance in armyes.⁵ *Nocht*⁶
 10 þeles þe haill Invie of tribuniciane auctorite⁷ was turnit
 to þe displeßer of þe said latinius.⁸ ffor þe consulis Invait
 nocht⁶ sa cruelly aganis him as did his awne collegis; and be
 þare supporte þe consulis gat ane armye rasi of þe pepill,
 & dividit þe *sammyn* in twa batallis, Of quhilk þe tane was
 15 [delyuerit] to quintius fabius to pas aganis þe veanis & the
 tothir deliuerit to spurius furius to Invaid þe equis. ⁹3it na
 thing was done aganis þe equis⁹ in þis 3ere wourthy to haue
 memorie. fabius þe tothir¹⁰ consull had mare besines ado
 aganis his awne [cetejeanis thane aganis his] Inemyis; *Nocht*⁶
 20 þeles he defendit þe public weil be his onelie manhede and
 prudence, howbeit his armye, sa fer as was in þare power, for
 þe Invy þat þai¹ bure aganis him, wald haue tressonably
 randrit þame self to þare Innemyis. This nobil consul fabius,
 abone mony his Imperiall Vertewis in leding & exhorting his
 25 army for þe tyme, arrayit þe samyn¹¹ in sic wise¹² þat he vin-
 cust his Inemyis, and put þame to flicht be support alanerlie
 of his horsmen. his Oist of futemen (howbeit þare Inemyis
 gaif bakkis) wald *nocht* follow¹³ nor 3it persewe þe chace; for
 þai¹ war sa repugnant¹⁴ to þare awne honoure, þat nowthir
 30 wald þai¹ haisty þare ganging be hortatioun of þare capitane,
 quhom þai Invyit for þe tyme; Nor 3it wald þai haisty¹⁵ þame
 to eschew þare private or public schame; nor 3it *mycht* move¹⁶

¹ þa.² want.³ Latyinius.⁴ appryve.⁵ armis.⁶ Noth.⁷ autorite.⁸ lucinius.⁹⁻⁹ om.¹⁰ vpair.¹¹ sam.¹² wyið.¹³ fallow.¹⁴ repungnant.¹⁵ wald not haiste.¹⁶ wald mofe.

þame þare awne damage,¹ quhilk suld noch^t haue falit² to
 haue cummyn, gif þare Inemyis had returnit wi^th new curage.
 p. 190. forthir³ þai war sa fer | rebelland to þe arte of chevelrie, þat
 þai wald noch^t do samekill for þare capitane as to stand arrayit
 (174). in gude ordoure; bot in his hie contempcioun⁴ þai *direckit⁵ 5
 þare baneris, wi^th na leß hevy & drery contenance þan þai had
 bene miserabilly vincust; syne returnit with grete displeßer to
 þare tentis, wariand baith þare capitane and þe felicity follow-
 ing be his prudence. 3it to⁶ þir pestilentius dissensiouns na
 remede⁷ could be fundin be þis nobil campioun; for þocht he 10
 was dotate wi^th maist souerane Ingyne, 3it he lakit erare pru-
 dence to governe⁸ his ciete3anis þan to vincuß his Inemyis.
 The consul eftir þis victorie returnit to rome, wi^th na leß
 glore of batall þan haterent of his army ekit aganis him; 3it
 nochtwithstanding þare haterent þe faderis causit þe dignite con- 15
 sulare to remane as afore wi^th þe houß of fabius, for martius
 fabius was maid consul and gneus ma^rlius his college. (XLIV)
 The samyn 3ere titus pontificius, tribune of pepill, made him
 to fortifye⁹ þe law Agrarie; and be þe samyn way þat licinius¹⁰
 past afore made him to stop þe faderis, þat þai gat na armye¹¹ 20
 quhil þe foresaid law agrarie was auctorist. Appius Claudius,
 seand þe faderis richt perturbit, said þat all auctorite of tribunis
 was vincust in þe 3ere afore In *presens*¹² of þe public wele;
 And sen þe said auctorite¹³ was dissoluit be þare awne strenth,
 It suld be in tymes cummyng perpetually abrogate. "Sikkirly," 25
 said appius, "It sal neuer fail bot ane sal be found ay amang
 þe tribunis, noch^t onelie to desire victorie abone his collegis,
 bot als to assist to þe faderis and best parte of þe ciete for
 þe proffitt of þe commoun weill. And noch^t onelie sal þe
 consulis fynd ane, bot als sindri, amang þe tribunis to assist 30
 (gif nede beis) to þare opinioun,¹⁴ howbeit ane tribune Is suf-
 ficient ynewch¹⁵ aganis þe auctorite¹⁶ of þe laif; sa þat þe

¹ damage.² fail3eit.³ farthar.⁴ contemp^tioun.⁵ deiekk^tit.⁶ be, *A*.⁷ ramed.⁸ gvberne.⁹ fortyfe.¹⁰ lucinius.¹¹ no armi.¹² precence.¹³ authorite.¹⁴ oppin3eoun.¹⁵ eneuch.¹⁶ authorite.

faderis and consulis lauboure, gif þai may nochȝ purchesȝ every
 ane of þe tribunis of þare opinioun,¹ to be reconseled² ay with
 ane certane | thareof." The faderis, admonist in þis maner be p. 191.
 appius, callit afore þame plesandlie baith þe consullis and
 5 tribunis; And becaus Ilkane of þame had ay sum private Iuris
 to confound³ þe auctorite⁴ of þe tothir, Thay purchest, sum
 parte be favoure & sum parte be auctorite,⁴ þat þe power of
 tribunitiane auctorite⁴ suld be exercit alanerlie for þe proffit
 of þe commoun weill. And sa be supporte of nyne tribunis þe
 10 consullis rasis ane army, contrare þe auctorite⁴ & ⁵ mynde of
 ane tribune þat war postponare⁶ of þe public weill. Sic thingis
 done, the consullis past with this army to mak were *aganis (175).
 þe veanis; ffor sindri princis war cumin out of Ethruria, nochȝ
 onelie to þare supporte and favoure, Bot als traisting þe finale
 15 end cumin of Romane empire be Intestyne dissenciouns þan
 ringand amang þame for þe tyme. Attoure, It was dispute⁷ in
 sindri counsalis amang þe princis of Ethrurie, The romanis had
 sa eternall pissance þat gif þai ragit nochȝ on þame self be
 civil⁸ seditiouns, þare empire culd nochȝ be distroyit; ffor
 20 civil seditioun is þe onelie poisson and rewyne⁹ of all riche
 cieteis; ¹⁰ & be þe samyn¹⁰ all hie empire & kingdomes apperis
 fragil & caduke in þe self. "This odious kingdome" (sade þir
 princis of Ethrurie) "had bene sum parte sustenit be counsell
 of wise faderis, And sum parte be pacience of þe pepill; bot
 25 as now It is cumin to extreme rewyne. for now twa cieteis
 ar made of ane, and euery ane of þame severit fra vther be
 þare awne lawis, auctoriteis, & officis. sum tyme the Romanis
 vsit to rage aganis vtheris in gadering þare armyis; Nochȝ þeis
 þai obeyit weill eftir to þare capitanis þe¹¹ tyme of batall. In
 30 quhatsumeir way þe romane state was, It mycht nevir be Vin-
 cust sa lang as It was governit be ressoun militare; bot now
 þe romane army followis nochȝ þe command of þare capitane

¹ oppinȝeoun.² reconsole (!)³ confund.⁴ autorite.⁵ *The next few pages (213-220) are misplaced in B.*⁶ was posponar.⁷ disputit.⁸ ciueill.⁹ poyssoun and ruine.¹⁰—¹⁰ be quhilkis.¹¹ in.

quhen þai ar campit for batall, as wele apperit be þare last
 armye; for in þe tyme of batall þe victorie be consent of þe
 army was gevin wilfully to þe equis, how beit þai war vincust.
 p. 192. for þe said armye left baith þare capitane & | banerman In
 myddis of þe campe, & returnit but ony command of þare 5
 capitane to þare tentis. herefore apperit, rome may be tane be
 seditioun of þare awne knichtis, gif we persew; ffor na vthir
 difficulte¹ nor lauboure restis now to be done, bot alanerly to
 denunze battall. All vthir chargis sall be plesandlie offerit to
 ws be þe goddis." 10

(176). how the romane army was movit to batall be deri-
 sioun² made on þame be Veanis and Ethruschis;
 how quintius fabius & manilius consul war slane;
 how þe Ethruschis and Veanis war discomfist;³
 how marcius fabius refusit þe glore of tryumphe⁴ 15
 for þe dede of his freyndis. Ca. xx.⁵

The vane beleif of þir and siclike consatis armyt the Ethrus-
 chis aganis þe romanis, for þai war be sindry chancis sum tymes
 vincust & sum tymes victouris.⁶ (XLV) on þe tothir⁷ side The
 consullis dred na thing sa mekill as þe strenth and pussance of 20
 þare awne armye; ffor þe memorie of þe wikkit⁸ exempill schewin
 in þe last batall made þame sa astonist þai durst nocht Ieoperde
 þame to sa doutsum chance, quhare twa armyis occurrit to þare
 huge dredoure. And becaus þai war astonist be þis maist
 dangerus case, thay held þame cloið⁹ within þare tentis to 25
 eschewe euery trubill appering; for þai belevit þare awne army
 within schorte tyme suld soft¹⁰ þare haterent, & Ingener¹¹ sum
 hele in þare myndis. The veanis & Ethruschis, seand þe romanis

¹ difficulte.⁴ tryumphe.⁷ vþair.¹⁰ schorte, *A.*² deresioun.⁵ xliij.⁸ wekit.¹¹ Ingenner.³ disconphist.⁶ wictorius.⁹ cloð.

wald *nocht* Ische out of þare campe, war þe more fervent in desire of batall; And to provoik¹ þare Inemyis þareto, þai prekit afore þare tentis. At last, persaving² sic doingis mycht *nocht* move þe consull nor zit þare army, þai³ began to reproch þame
 5 *with* maist schamefull wourdis,⁴ saying þe feynzeing of civil dissensions was *nocht* bot ane new remede found⁵ amang þame to covir þare febill cowardy. Attour, þai³ knew weil how þe consull[is] had nothir | traist nor zit confidence in þare knichtis. p. 193.
 Apperit þarefore It was ane new maner of seditioun to kepe eif and silence amang þare men of armes. to þe more schame and blasphemacioun of romane lynnage Thay rehersit mony vile & abhominabil wordis, of quhilkis sum parte war trew & vtheris fals. *The consullis war na litil reiosit þat thir odious de- (177).
 tractionis⁶ war said pertlie sa nere þare portis and trinschis of
 15 þare armye; ffor Incontinent þe said armye (howbeit þare myndis war rebelland to þe consullis) sum tyme thocht schame of þe dispitfull detractions said be þare Inemyis, and sum tymes war movit to maist violent Ire for þe samyn, And sum tymes detestit þe damage⁷ following be þare intestyne dissencions;
 20 quhil at last þai war sa flowand in þare myndis, þat þai eschamyt þat þare Inemyis suld departe for þare detractiouns Vnpunyst, and thocht evill þat ony felicite suld succede to þe faderis & consullis be þare vassalege or victorie, throw quhilk þai war vncertane quhidder þai suld be erare revengit on þe faderis or
 25 on þare fais; quhil at last þai war extremelie resoluit to revenge þare haitrent on þare Inemyis for þe derisioun sa proudly rehersit in þe face of þare army. Incontinent þai convenit *with* frequent cumpanyis to þe tentis, quhare þe consulis war, and *with* inflammyt myndis desirit batall and signe⁸ of Ionyng.
 30 Than þe consulis (as þai had bene ful of musing) gaderit al þe capitanis afore þame *with* lang commonyng; and howbeit þai desirit na thing sa mekil as þare armye maist ernistlie⁹ to fecht, zit þai thocht best to tary þe samyn, þat be desire þareof þare

¹ provoke.² laist parsawing.³ þa.⁴ wurdis.⁵ fundin.⁶ detractouris, *A.*⁷ damage.⁸ syng.⁹ ernistfulli.

army suld be þe more ardently inflammyt to batal. And finally þe consulis gaif ansuere, þat nowthir was þe mater reddy nor ȝit þe tyme ganand to gif batall; And commanding þame for þat cauȝt to hald þame within þare tentis and abstene fra batall, and quha faucht and war rebelland to þare command suld be punyst 5

p. 194. na | leȝ þan he war Inemye to þare army. The men of armes, repulsit¹ fra þare petitioun² on þis maner, grewe ay þe more desirus of batall þat þai belevit þe counsulis repugnand þareto. Attour, þare Inemyis war inflammyt þe more feirlie to Invade þame, þat þai herde Inhibitioun made be þe consulis to fecht; for 10 þai belevit to do quhat þai plesit but ony punytioun or resistance following. And becaus na confidence was betuix þe faderis and þe romane armye, þai belevit sic seditioun³ suld rise in þare

(178). armye, þat ane finale end suld be put to romane empire. * The Inemyis, confiding in þare vane consatis, come pertly afore þe 15 portis of þe romane campe, blasphemand þe romanis with maist shamefull Iniuris, and mycht skairslie be severit fra oppugnatioun of þare tentis. Throw quhilk þe romane armye war sa commovit,⁴ þai mycht na langare sustene þare dispitis, bot ran haistely afore þe consulis; for þai wald nocht send (as þai did 20 afore) the princes of þir centurionis to desire batall, but ruschit all atanis with vehement noyis & clamoure desiring batall, Saying þe tyme was than expedient yneuch to þe samyn; ȝit þe consulis denyis⁵ þare desiris. At last fabius consul, seand þe noyis and clamour rysing with sic dyn in þe army, becaus he 25 dred ȝit sum seditioun, gart blaw ane trumpet, be consent of his colleig manilius, and said, "O manilius, I knaw weil þis army may vincuȝ þare Inemyis; bot þai haue borne þame self sa wikkitle⁶ in tymes bigane, þat I wate nocht gif þai haue ony desire of victorie. ⁷ And þarefore I wil gif na signe of Ionyng 30 to þe sade armye, quhil þe samyn be sworne neuer to returne out of þe feild quhil þai haue victorie⁷ of þare Inemyis. This army has dissaut anis þe Romane consul, bot þai⁸ can nocht dissaue be goddis." The principall centurioun of þe army was martius

¹ repulsat.³ sedetioun.⁵ denyit.⁷⁻⁷ om.² petetioun.⁴ commvuit.⁶ vikitle.⁸ þa.

flauoleus, quhilk abone þe romane princes of þis army was sa
 desirus of batall, þat he was þe first | made his aith as followis :¹ p. 195.
 "I sall nocht returne out of þe feild but victorie, And gif I
 failze, I tak þe, fader Iupiter, mars, & vtheris þe remanent goddis
 5 in witnes to punys me." þan þe remanent army made þare
 aithis² in þe samyn maner. Incontinent fabius be sound³ of
 trumpet gaif signe of Ioynng. þe army þan tuke þare wapynnys
 & went fordwart ful of Ire and hope of victorie, desiring now þe
 Ethruschis to mak þare hething and to mete þame in arrayit
 10 batall. abone euery vassalege done þis day owther be þe faderis
 or [be þe] pepil Apperit maist þe souerane manhede of þe hous
 of fabius; ffor þir fabis sett þame þis day be singulare vertew to
 conqueß þe hartis of þe pepill, quhilk stude lang Inemye to þame
 be civell⁴ contentiouns. (XLVI) The romanis war arrayit in
 15 gude ordoure, Bot þe Veanis and Ethruschis na thing schrinkit
 nor eschewit þare cummyng; ffor *þai beleuit nocht onelie þe (179).
 said romanis to fecht nane vthir wayis⁵ aganis þame þan þai
 faucht afore aganis þe equis, bot als belevit, throw þare boldin
 myndis and dissentiouns amang þame self, sum notabil myscheif
 20 haistelie to follow.⁶ howbeit þe mater succedit fer contrare þare
 opinioun⁷; ffor þe romanis war neuer mare feirß nor cruell
 aganis⁸ þare Inemyis þan þai war at þis tyme, becaus þare
 myndis war Inflammyt and boldin baith be Iniure of Inemyis
 and tary of þe consulis. skarß lasere was gevin to þe Ethruschis
 25 to array þare Oist, quhen þe dartis war left vncastin⁹ on athir
 side, and Ionit hand for hand togiddir¹⁰ with scharp and grundin
 swerdis to þe deith. Amang all vthir princis of romanis the
 hous of fabius was þis day ane notable sicht and exempill of
 provin vassalege to þe cietejanis; of quhilkis ane, quintius fabius,
 30 quhilk was consull in þe thrid zere afore, come feirslie quhare
 maist confluence of Veanis war, And Incontinent ane of þe
 Ethruschis, na leß feirß in strenth of body þan craft of chevelrie,
 tuke him vnwarly at avantage¹¹ and persit him throw | the body p. 196.

¹ fallowis.⁴ ciwile.⁷ opinzeoun.⁹ wncassin.² ethis.⁵ na vþir vise.⁸ fers and crewell¹⁰ þe gidder.³ sond.⁶ fallow.

contrar.

¹¹ ane vantage.

with ane swerde. Als sone as þe swerd was pullit furth, he fell dede¹ on his wound to þe ground.² baith þe armyis persaut weill the fall of þis nobil man, bot þe romane army was sa³ astonist þarewith þai fled sum parte abak. Than marcus fabius lap on þe body of his dede brother,⁴ and huvand vp his targe formentis his knichtis, said; "Is this þe aith 3e made, my luffit⁵ men [of armis], to returne fleand to 3oure tentis? Drede 3e more 3oure febill Inemyis þan þe Ire of goddis, be quhilkis 3e ar deiplic sworne? be contrare I am nocht⁶ sworne to þe goddis, and 3it I sal owthir returne Victoure, or ellis I sall here end my life wth my brother quintius fabius." Than gneus fabius (quhilk was Consul in þe last 3ere) said to marcus fabius consul: "belevis þow, brothir, to persuade⁷ þis armye to fecht wth þi wordis?"⁸ Lat þe goddis persuade þame, be quham þai ar sa depelie sworne; And latt ws, as accordis to þe houß of fabius and vthir nobill men, exhorte oure armye to batall erare be Imitacioun and exampill of oure manhede þan be ony patent⁹ wordis." Incontinent þir twa fabis ruschit fordwart on þe first man þat stude aduersare to þame, (180). and be þare feirß curage movit all þe *army to paß fordwart on þe sammy¹⁰ maner. (XLVII) The batall beand in ane parte renewit, manilius Consul faucht na leß Valejeantlie þan he did in ane vthir weyng, quhare almaist siclike fortoun happynnyt as afore. ffor as quintius fabius was slane in þe tothir weyng,¹¹ sa manilius, chasing his Inemyis here & þare with ane cumpany of feirß knichtis following on him, was sa sare woundit¹² þat he was constrenit to departe, as quintius fabius did, out of þe feild. The romanis stude astonist but ony forthir moving, And but dout þai had gevin bakkis, war nocht marcus fabius þe tothir p. 197. consul come on ane spedy horß wth ane certane | turmys of horsmen, schawand his colleig levand and him self Victorious abone his Inemyis. Attoure manilius (how beit he was sa woundit¹³) schew him self present¹⁴ to þe army for þare comforte.

¹ doun.² grond.³ sumthing (!).⁴ bruþair.⁵ luvit.⁶ noth.⁷ parsuaid.⁸ wurdis.⁹ paintit.¹⁰ sam.¹¹ ving.¹² woundit.¹³ vondit.¹⁴ precent.

The *presens*¹ of þe twa consulis rasiþ þe armye to new curage ;
 And als þe oist of þare Inemyis was mare thyn þan afore, ffor
 þai confidit sa mekill in þe multitude of þare pepill, Thay send
 ane large nowmer þareof² to sege þe tentis of romanis. Als sone
 5 as þe Inemyis war Enterit with small difficulte within þe tentis
 and palzeouns of romanis, þai waistit mare tyme be spuleze þan
 be ony honest vassalege ; And Incontinent þe triaris, quhilk
 mycht nocht resist þis feirß Irruption of Inemyis, send þare
 messengeris to aduertise þe consulis of þe huge perrell In quhilk
 10 þai *presentlie*³ stude, Syne gadérit with grete cumpanyis to þe
 pretorie, and be þare awne curage renewit bataill. belive was
 manilius Consul brocht to þe tentis, and at his *cummyng*⁴ he put
 mony garnisouns⁵ of armyt men to þe portis of þare trinschis,
 quhare þai war *presentlie*⁶ campit, to stop þe Inemyis fra ony out-
 15 passage or Isching. The disperacioun movit þe Inemyis mare
 to rage and furie þan to ony hardynes, for quhen þai had as-
 sailezeit to gett ane out-passage, ay ruscheand⁷ here and þare
 quhare ony esperance þareof apperit, thay⁸ had laborit certane
 tyme in vane, ane knott of feirß men cruelly Invadit þe said
 20 Consul schynand with his burnist armour. The first bront of
 Inemyis was schot by him be freyndis for þe tyme standing
 þan about him, bot þe secund dynt þareof mycht nocht be resistit ;
 for he was sa woundit þarewith, he fell dede to þe ground. Than
 war euery ane about him sa effrayit [þat] Thay gaif bakkis, throw
 25 quhilkis raiß nocht alanerlie hie curage to þe Ethruschis, bot
 als | * ane terroure to þe romanis throw all þare tentis. ffinalie
 þai had *cummyn* to vtir discomfitoure,⁹ war nocht þe legatis tuke
 away þe body of þe ~~same~~ consull, and oppynnyt ane porte þat
 þare Inemyis mycht departe. The Inemyis departing at þis
 30 porte come be aventure on þe tothir Consull fabius, quhilk was
 victorius for þe tyme, be quham þe Inemyis was discomfist¹⁰ as
 afore. This was ane glorijs Victorie succeding to romanis, how
 beit It was richt sorowfull throw deith of quintius fabius &
 manilius consul. At last quhen þe senate had decernit ane

p. 198.
(181).

¹ precens.

³ precentli.

⁵ garysonis.

⁷ ruschant.

⁹ discomforting.

² of þame.

⁴ cumin.

⁶ precen[t]ly.

⁸ and.

¹⁰ discomphist.

tryumphe¹ to be gevin to marcius fabius consul, for þe victorie conquest sa valejeantlie be him, he gaif ansuere, saying he wald glaidly ressaue þe glore of tryumphe,¹ gif sic thingis mycht be þat his army mycht tryumphe¹ quhen þai had loist þare emprioure & maister. herefore, sen his houß was soroufull in þe deith of 5 quintius fabius, and þe commoun weill desolate be deith of manilius consul, he wald nocht ressaue þe croun of laurair² to haue þe samyn deformyt with sic public doloure. The denyng of tryumphe³ was more honest to þe consull þan ony vthir tryumphe³ þat was made afore þai dais; for glore ay aboundis⁴ 10 þe more þat it is refusit in dew tyme.

how the woundit knichtis war gevin to the fabis and vthir faderis of þe ciete quhil þai war curit of þare woundis; how þe surname of fabis furnist the batail aganis þe Veanis on þare awne expensis; how þe 15 ethruschis war vincust be lucius Amulius, And how iij^c & v^j fabis war slane. Ca. xxj.⁶

Sic thingis done, marcus fabius made him to bery⁷ þe bodyis p. 199. of manilius consul, his colleig, and of | quintius fabius his brother, and was gretumlie lovit for þe honoure þat he had⁸ to 20 þame; ⁹ ffor þocht he gaif to þame⁹ all þe loving þat he desirit,¹⁰ 3it þe maist parte þareof succedit to him self. Attoure, þis fabius was nocht vnmyndefull of þe purpois þat he tuke in þe begyn- (182). nyng of his consulate, þat is to say, to re*counsel¹¹ the myndis 25 of small pepill to þe faderis. & to conquest þe more favoure þareof, he tuke þe maist parte of þe knichtis quhilkis war woundit in þis last batal, and dividit þame amang þe faderis to be nurist on þare expensis quhil þai war curit of þare

¹ triumph.² laurer, *B.*; laurew, *A.*³ triumph.⁴ abundis.⁵ thre hundredth and.⁶ xliij.⁷ bury.⁸ did.⁹⁻⁹ om.¹⁰ disseruit.¹¹ recounsale.

woundis. mony of þir woundit knichtis war ordorit on þe samin maner amang þe fabis, throw *quhilk* þe fabis began to conquess þe favoure populaire; how beit þare sicht was ay maist direckit¹ to þe *commodite* of public weil. (XLVIII)

5 Be þis way Ceso fabius and titus Virginius war made consulis, als mekle be desire of faderis as be desire of pepil. the consulis thocht nowthir batallis nor rasing of armyis nor zit vthir² besines to be done, quhil þe faderis and pepill war recounsalit togiddir³ be sum concorde.⁴ And for þat caus þai decernit at þe begynnyng of þe nixt ȝere, afore ony tribune was autoure of þe law agrarie, to conquess the favoure of þe small pepill be sum liberalite, and to devide equalie amang þame all þe landis quhilkis war laitlie conquest fra þare Inemyis. ffor þai thocht na thing mare respondent to resson and equite,

15 þan þe pepill to reiose þe landis quhilkis war conquest be þare blude and Ieoperdie of batall. zit þe faderis refusit þir desiris of the consulis, and lamentit hevily þe quyke Ingyne of Ceso fabius began to evanis, growand Insolent be superhabundant⁵ glore. mony ȝeris eftir na Civill factiouns war

20 in þe ciete. At þis tyme þe latynis war vexit with frequent Incursiouns of þe equis, Be quhilk occasioun Ceso fabius was send with ane army to waist þare landis. | At his cummyn þe p. 200. equis held þame cloiþ within þare wallis and townis, throw quhilk na thing mycht be done aganis þame wourthy to haue

25 memorie. On þe tothir side titus Virgineus was send aganis þe Veanis, quhare he fell in sic troubil be his fulich hardines þat his army had bene aluterlie perist, war nocht þe tothir consul Ceso fabius happynnyt to cum þe more haistelie to his support. mony ȝeris eftir nothir was were nor zit pece with

30 Veanis, ffor the Vassalage followit⁶ mare like thift and Rubry⁷ þan ony honest Ieoperdijs. for als sone as þe Veanis fand þe romanis enterit in þare landis, þai returnit haistelie to þare mvnitiouns and townis; And fra þe romanis war departit, þai made ythand hereschippis⁸ in þare landis, scornand þare weris

¹ direct.³ þe gidder.⁵ superhabundand.⁷ rubery.² no wþer.⁴ accord.⁶ efter appetit.⁸ hirschippis.

with pece and þare pece w^{it}h weris. Thus mycht nowthir
þare weris be supersedit nor ȝit clerely dantit. Attoure, mony
(183). vthir ba*tallis presentlie apperit aganis þe romanis; ffor þe
equis and Wolschis wald supersede þare batall na langare ¹bot
quhil¹ þe recent doloure of þare last discomfitoure war *oure* 5
past. On þe samyn maner þe sabynis, quhilkis war ay feirß
Inemyis to romanis, war *nocht* alanerlie reddy for batall, bot
als had drawin al þe pepil of ethrurie to þare supporte. forthir,
the Veanis, quhilkis war ay mare continual than scharpe
Inemyis, assailȝeit oft tymes þe myndis of romanis, mare with 10
dispitefull Iniures þan ony Ieoperdy of armes; throw quhilk
þe romanis war drawin in sic sollicitude & fere, þat þai mycht
nocht transport this batall fra þe veanis on vthir pepill. The
houß of fabis, movit be þir displeseris, past to þe Senate &
made Cesio fabius consul to be forespekare² for þame, quhilk 15
said as followis: "O faderis conscript, þe batall³ of Veanis (as
ȝe know) nedis mare ane ythand and continuall garnisoun þan
p. 201. ony multitude of pepill to were aganis þame. herefore | We
desire þat ȝe, [þe] faderis foresaid, sustene þe chargis of all vthir
batallis, quhilkis ar movit agane youre *commoun* weill [and 20
ceite], and suffir [ws], þe surname and houß of fabis, to were
aganis þe veanis. & beleif⁴ þe maieste of romanis salbe suffi-
cientlie garnist be ws in þat mater; ffor we Intend to lede þis
batall with *oure* awne ⁵expenß and surname alanerlie. Thus
sall ȝoure public weill *nocht* be travellit with ony public ⁵ 25
expensis or armyis for ony besines þat now presentlie occurris."
grete thankis war gevin to þe fabis for þir offeris. Sone eftir
þe consull departit fra þe courte with þe remanent freyndis
of his houß, and returnyt to his lugeing. At his returnyng,
he *commandit* all his freyndis & surname foresaid to mete him 30
on þe nixt morow at his said lugeing, armit on þare best avise.
(XLIX) Als sone as þe pepill war aduertist of þir thythingis, þai
extollit þe houß of fabis to þe hevin, saying ane private houß has
tane on þare bakkis þe charge quhilk þe hale ciete suld haue

¹—¹ nor.² foirsaid spekar (!).³ battallis.⁴ beleve.⁵—⁵ om.

- sustenit. The batall of Veanis was convertit in ane private cure and private armye. gif þai¹ war two vthir houssis in the ciete of siclike manhede and curage as þe fabis war, þat ane mycht be send aganis þe Wolchis and þis vthir aganis þe equis; and
- 5 sa þe romane pepill mycht leif² in sikkir tranquillite, & be dantouris of all pepill liand þame about. On þe day following the³ fabis tuke þare armoure and wappynnys, and con*venit (184). to þe samyn place þat was to þame assignit. Sone eftir þare cummyng, þe consull, clothit in his cote armour and habit
- 10 Imperiall, departit fra his houß and vesyt⁴ all his surname and lynnage, arrayit in gudelie maner afore him. Als sone as he was enterit in myddis of þame, he gart display his baner. Suthlie þare was never ane armye sene afore þai dayis, beand of sa few nowmer,⁵ þat was of mare renovne & admiratioun
- 15 to þe pepill þan was þis foresaid cumpany of fabis; for | þai p. 202. war iij^c and vj knichtis in schynyng⁶ armoure, all patricianis, all of ane houß, and euery ane of þame wourthy to haue bene governoure⁷ of ony nobill army abone the romanis. Thir feirß and Illustir campiouns, all of ane houß, went fordwart mynassing
- 20 grete myscheif⁸ and sorow to Veane pepill.⁸ ffollowit on þame ane cumpany of companjeouns & freyndis, quhilkis had na esperance nor sollicitude of small materis, Bot erare beleving mare glore to succede to þame be knichtlie Vassalege þan euer was herd in ony warld afore. Ane vthir cumpany followit on
- 25 þame, quhilkis war rasit be sollicitude of public⁹ weill, And als war richt astonist be favoure and admiratioun þat þai¹⁰ had to þir¹⁰ nobill men; and bad þame pas fordwart as happy and lusty gallandis¹¹ with gude werde, þat þe end of þare vayage mycht be respondent to þare begynnyng, quharethrow Ilk ane
- 30 of þame mycht beleif nocht alanerlie to be cled with all honouris

¹ þa.⁷ gvbernour.¹¹ *With -andis a new hand (No. 6), very cramped and inelegant, begins in B., on p. 225, and continues only to the foot of p. 226.*² laif.⁸ to þe romane³ thir.

pepill and

⁴ vyseit.

weane (!).

⁵ nomer.⁹ commone.⁶ schinand.¹⁰ þa.

and digniteis of þare ciete, bot als maist excellent tryumphe to succede for þare laubouris. Thir cumpanyis made þare prayeris to þe goddis, quhen þir fabis war passand by þe capitoll & vthir divyne tempillis of þare goddis, to grant þame sic perdoun þat þai mycht hele¹ & fere returne haistely agane to þare cuntre 5 & freyndis; bot þare prayeris war noch^t herde. Than þe fabis departit out² of þe ciete at ane vnchancy porte namyt Carmen-tall, levand þe tempil of Ianus on þare rycht hand, quhill þai come to þe river of Cremera, quhare þai fand [ane] ganand place to garnys ane munitioun of armit men aganis þare Inemyis. 10 quhil þe fabis war gevin to frequent³ direptions in all partis quhare þai come, Thay apperit noch^t onelie sufficient to defend þame self be þare mvnecioun foresaid, bot als throw euery boundis (quhare þe tuskane landis lay conionit to romanis) Thay made al placis quhare þai come, þocht þe samyn war 15 p. 203. noysum and | dangerus, Richt sikkir to þame self be þare fre- (185). quent incursiouns. Noch^tþeles * sic thingis war sufferit bot ane schorte tyme, for þe Veanis brocht ane army out of Ethrurie, and belive assailȝete þis garnisoun, liand for þe tyme at Cremera. In þe mene tyme Lucius Amulius consul past with⁴ certane 20 romane legiouns, and faucht aganis þir Ethruschis; howbeit þe saidis Ethruschis had skarß space to array þare Oistis, ffor at the first assemblance, fra þe baneris war displayit and þe ordoure of armit knichtis enterit in batall, and ane buschement made reddy to cum in þare supporte, ane weyng of horß men 25 come sidlingis þe batall of Veanis, throw quhilk þai war sa astonist, þai had nowthir lasere to begyn batall nor ȝit place to abide, bot war constrenit⁴ to fle abak to þe rede stanis quhare þare campe lay. The Veanis eftir þis discomfitoure petuusly desirit pece, quhilk⁵ wes grantit to þame. Noch^tþeles, 30 be natural inconstance and lichtnes of þare myndis, þai wer sone eftir penitent of þare peace contractit afore the fabis rasit þare campe fra þe rivere of Cremera. (L) Than followit⁶ sone þe batall of fabis aganis þe Veanis, but ony preparatioun of

¹ haill.² furth.³ frequent.⁴ constreanit.⁵ quhilkis, A.⁶ fallowit.

grete weris; ffor noch^t alanerlie war frequent¹ direptiouns on
athir side, bot als sum tymes baith þir armyis met togiddir
with equale batal and arrayit ansenȝeis; howbeit þe fabis war
ay Victori^us of Veos, þe maist riche & pussant ciete þat was
5 in þai dais amang þe Ethruschis. The Veanis war movit to
grete Ire and Indignatioun for þir frequent feliciteis falling to
fabis, and þarefore tuke degest avisement be quhat hie slichtis
þai mycht best confound þare feirð Inemyis; ffor þai allegit þe
fabis grewe ilk day more and more in ferocite & hardyment be
10 þir frequent victoryis. herefore, to dissau^e þe said fabis, as þe
samyn had happynny^t alanerlie be aventure, þai draif ane nowmer
of bestial in þare gate, specialy quhare þai hantit maist incur-
siouns. Als þai causit þe landwart pepill to fle oft tymes be
þare crafty slichtis, throw quhilk mony of þare landis, as It had | p. 204.
15 bene throw fere of þe fabis, war left desert. sic thingis done,
þir Veanis laid ane strang garnison of armyt men in secrete
glennys to recounter þe fabis quhen ony avantage occurrit.
now was þe fabis sa proude for þir sindri victoryis fallin to
þame, þat þai contemnit² þare Inemyis, & belevit þare Invin-

¹ *With -quent begins p. 227 and a new hand (No. 7) in B.*

Quent direptionis on w^her side, Bot als sum tyme baith þir armyis
met togidar with equale bataill and arrayit ansenȝeis; howbeit þe
fabis war ay wictoryus of weris (!), þe maist riche & pussant ciete þat
was in þai dayis amang þe ethruschis. þe weanis war mowit to grit
Ire and Indignation ffor þe frequent filiciteis falling to þe fabis, &
þairfoir tuk degist avisement be quhat hie slychtis þai mycht best con-
found þair feirs ennymeis; for þai allegit þe fabis grew ilk day more
and more in ferocite and hardyment be þir frequent victoryus (!).
Heirfoir to dissau^e þe said fabis, as þe samyn had happinny^t allanerlie
be auenture, þai draif ane novmer of beistiall in þair gait, specialie
quhair þai hantit maist Incursyonis. Als þai caussit þe landwart . . .
to fle oftymis be þair crafty slychtis, Thro^u quhilk mony of þir landis,
as It had bene throw feir of þe fabis, war left decert. sic thingis
done, thir weanis laid ane strange garnisoun off armyt men in secrete
gleⁿnis to recounter þe fabis Quhen ony awantage occurrit. Now
war the fabis sa proude for þir sindry wictoryis falling to þame, that
thay conteny^t thair Ennymeis, and belewit þir vnvictaible armoure

² continewit, A.

cibill armoure & wapynnys mycht nowthir be vincust nor 3it
 (186). resistit in ony tymes cummyng. This vane esperance movit þe
 fabis to de*parte ane lang way fra þare mvnitioun at cremera,
 for wynnyng of certane beistis quhilkis apperit to þare sicht on
 ane montane, with few nowmer of knichtis laid for þare defence. 5
 At last, quhen þai war cummyn Vmprovisitlie and skatterit, as þe
 vse Is, to drive away þe gudis conquest be þare Incursiouns, thir
 buschementis quhilkis war laid vnder covert raif hastelie on
 euery hand about þame; and throw noyis and clamoure rising
 be þir buschementis þe fabis war gretumlie astonist. Incontinent 10
 ane thik schoure of dartis Invadit þame on euery hand. now
 war þe fabis be fast rusching of þe ethruschis Inclusit but ony
 out-passage, & þe more þe Inemyis thristit in on þame, þe more
 straitlie war þai drawin togidder; and ay þe more þe fabis semyt
 of few nowmer, þe more þe Ethruschis apperit of huge multitude. 15
 Than þe fabis, howbeit Ilkane of þame was equalie debating with
 þare Inemyis, left þe chance þareof, and made þame all attanis
 perforce to mak ane out-passage throw þare Inemyis. ffinalie,
 be force of al þare bodyis and wapynnys at anys concurrand,
 þai made ane slop throw þare Inemyis, at þe samyn place quhare 20
 þai made þis first onset. Als sone as þai war departit in þis
 maner, þai fled vp throw ane strate montane, and be straitnes
 þareof made þame to new defence and batall. And becaus þai
 war montit abone þare Inemyis, and sum parte deliuerit, as

and wappinnys mycht nother Be winccust nor 3it resistit In ony tymys
 cuming. This wane esperance mowit the fabis to depart ane lang
 way fra thir Munitioun at cremera, ffor wynnyng off certane beistis
 quhilkis apperit to thair sicht On ane montane, with few nowmer of
 knychtis Laid for þair defence. At last quhen þai war cumin wn-
 promissitlie and scatterit, as þe vse Is, to drywe away þe gudis con-
 queist be þair Incursyonis, thir buchmentis quhilkis war laid wnder
 cowart raif haistelie on euery hand about þame; and throⁿ noyis &
 clamour rysing be þir buschmenttis þe fabis war grittumly astonist.
 Incontinent ane thik schoure of dartis Inwadit þaim on euery side.
 now war þe fabis be fast rusching of þe ethruschis Inlussit but ony
 out passage, & þe more þe Ennymeis thristit in on þaim, þe more
 straitlie war þai drawin to gidar; And ay þe more þe fabis semyt of
 few nowmer, þe moire þe ethruschis appeirrit of huge multitude.

apperit, of þe sorowfull chance In quhilk's þai war presentlie
 falling, þai began to draw new curage and are;¹ syne straik
 doun þare Inemyis [ay] as þai | be force ascendit. throw quhilk p. 205.
 þir few knichtis had vincust and oure thrawin þare Inemyis be
 5 straitnes of ground, war nocht þe Veanis kest þame about the
 montane; and als sone as þai had won² þe hede þareof, þai dis-
 cendit with grete violence on þare bakkis; throw quhilk þe nobill
 fabis, inclusit baith on bak & afore, fechtand wth perseverant³
 manhede to þe deith, war al slane but ony exceptioun, and þare
 10 mvnitions made at Cremera tane. Treuth is iij^e & vj fabis all
 perist at þis tyme, & nane of þare surname left on life Except
 ane 3oung childe, quhilk was left at hame, preseruit be favoure
 of goddis to be ane stok of þare houß, þat þe samyn mycht
 be ane beild to romanis in tymes cummyn⁴ aganis Inemyis
 15 baith in were & pece, quhen maist necessite occurrit.

Of the variant chance of batall succeding betuix (187).
 romanis and Veanis; how Mininius⁵ deceissit for
 þe schame done to him; how Servilius deliuerit him
 self fra þe lugement of pepill; how þe veanis &
 20 Sabinis war discomfist be romanis; how þe Wolchis
 & equis war vincust be latynis, And how þe veanis
 war made tributaris to romanis. Ca. xxij.⁶

(LI) Quhen þis lamentabil myscheif was cumin to þe hous of
 fabis, gneus horacius & titus Mininius war made consullis.
 25 Mininius was send haistelie aganis þir Ethruschis, quhilk's war
 richt pridefull & reiosing of þis victorie; ⁷ how beit he faucht
 wth litill bettir fortoun þan did þe fabis. The Ethruschis eftir
 þis victorie⁷ take mont Ianicle,⁸ & purposit to sege rome, quhilk
 was for þat tyme hevely trublit wth penurite & derth of vittal.

¹ aire.³ sewerand.⁵ Minius.⁷⁻⁷ om.² wyn.⁴ cuming.⁶ xliij.⁸ Ianeckle (and so below).

In þe mene tyme þir Ethruschis come oure tyber, and but dout
 þai had tane Rome, war *nocht* horacius þe tothir consull, quhilk
 was send aganis þe Wolchis, was *brocht* þe more haistelie agane
 to resist þe samyn. This batall was *fochten* sa nere þe wallis of
 rome That Is was first *focht* beside þe tempill of þe goddes 5
 p. 206. namyt spes, *wit* equale chance | of victorie, and eftir þat cruelly
 focht in at porte collyne. And *pocht* þe romanis at þis last
 Ieoperdy had bot smal advantage, zit þe samyn restorit þame to
 þare curage, ffor þarethrow þai war þe more bald eftirwartis in
 batall. sic thingis done, Aulus Virginius and spurius Servilius 10
 war made consullis. The Veanis eftir þis last discomfitoure
 abstenit fra ony sett batell; *Nocht*þeles followit mony here-
 schippis¹ be sindry Incursiouns. and first þai come with sa huge
 preis & mynassing in þe romane landis, þat na thing was saiff,
 for baith landwart pepill and bestiall war made pray to þame. 15
*Nocht*þeles þai war ay tane be þe *sammyn* slichtis of hid busch-
 (188). mentis as þe fabis war tane be þame *afore. ffor the romanis
 drew þare beisteis oft tymes in þe sicht of veanis, and lay
wit grete buschementis hid vnder covert. All wayis þe greter
 multitude of veanis come to þare² Incursiouns, followit ay þe 20
 more slauchter on þame. Throw þir harmes rais sic Ire and
 haterent, þat the samyn was occasioun & begynnnyng of ane grete
 myscheif. for þe said Veanis come our tiber within þe nycht,
 & assalejit³ þe tentis of Servilius consull; bot þai war sone
 discomfist, & *nocht* but grete slauchter returnit to þare tentis. 25
 The consul eftir þis victorie past haistelie oure tiber, & satt down
 with his garnist campe in mont Ianicle. On þe nixt morow (als
 sone as þe licht apperit), howbeit he was richt feirþ throw þis
 last victorie, zit he tuke consultacioun mare how his armye
 mycht be relevit of þe myserabill derth within þe samyn þan of 30
 ony vthir besineß; And becaus þe samyn requirit sa properant
 & haisty releve,⁴ he rasis his army & come fulichly vp þe said
 montane of Ianikill quhare his Inemyis lay, & was dounge down
wit mare schame & displeßer þan war þe Ethruschis⁵ dounge
 down be him in þe day afore.⁵ *Nocht*þeles his army was sauffit⁶ 35

¹ hirschippis.² þir.³ sailzeit.⁴ releif.⁵—⁵ om.⁶ saiffit.

be Intervention of his colleig. The Ethruschis, inclusit on euery hand betuix [þe] twa armyis, gaif bakkis & war discomfist *witʰ* grete slaucher. Thus was þe batell led aganis þe Veanis *witʰ* ane happy folie. (LII) At þe returnyng of þe consullis | to p. 207.

5 rome nocht allanerlie followit gude peace, bot als grete fouth of vittalis, for ane huge haboundance¹ þareof was brocht baith out of champany;² and als fra þe dredoure of derth was tane away, all vthir vittallis (³quhilkis war hid in þe ciete) war brocht to licht. the pepill throw eif & fouth of victualis³ began to be

10 Insolent as afore, Returnyng to þare auld haitrent and displeseris, & seirchit⁴ to Invaid þame self with Iniuris at hame, becaus na vncouth Inemyis apperit þarefurth. ffirst þe trib[un]is began to move þe pepill be evill counsell and be þe law Agrarie aganis þe faderis; 3it þe said faderis nocht alanerlie resistit þame

15 in generall, bot als resistit euery ane of þame in speciall. Quintus Causidius & Titus genutius, autouris of þe law agrarie, assignit ane day to Titus meninius to here him self punyst be Iugement of pepill; becaus, as þai allegit, þe garnisoun þat was laid be þe fabis at Cremera was tynt alanerlie be his sleuth; for

20 he was nocht fer distant fra þe samyn (quhen he was consul) *witʰ* ane grete armye, and *mycht haue recoursit⁵ þe samyn gif (189). he had plesit. At last quhen þe day of Iugement was cummyn the pepill condampnit þis Meninius, howbeit þe faderis lauborit na leß for him þan þai did afore for martius Corilianus, for þe

25 singulare meritis done be agrippa Meninius his fader was nocht as þan out of þare myndis. Nochtþeles þe tribunis war richt merciful in his punytioun; ffor þocht he was condampnit be Iugement of pepill to be hedit, 3it þai assolezeit him þareof, And gart him pay be general edict ij^m brasin pennyis. Meninius tuke

30 sic displeßer for þe schame done to him, þat he fell be malancoly In Irremediabil⁶ infirmite, & sone eftir deceissit. Sic thingis done, Caius nautius and publius Valerius war made consulis. In þe begynnyng of þis 3ere lucius seditius & Titus stautius tribunis of pepill assignit ane day to | seruilius this last consull, p. 208.

¹ aboundance.² champayne.³ *om.*⁴ seirsit.⁵ resscoursit.⁶ irremediable.

to here him punyst be Iugement of pepill. This seruilius wald
 nowth^r defend him be requiest & prayeris of faderis as Meninius
 did afore, bot confiding stoutlie In his Innocence and gude
 dedis, sustenit al þe preiſ¹ and accusatiouns of tribunis led aganis
 him. The cryme þat was Imput to him was þe fulich rasing of 5
 his armye aganis þe straitnes of mont Ianicle, bot he had na leſ
 sprete þis day in his awne private actioun þan he had afore in
 public chargis; ffor nocht allanerlie he reprochit þe tribunis bot
 als reprevit þe pepill with feirſ wourdis, Saying þai wrangwislie²
 condampnit meninius afore rehersit, and was þe cauſ of his 10
 deith,³ Considering his fader Agrippa sa prudently reconsalit
 þame to þe faderis, and als purchest to þe said pepill all þir
 lawis, auctoriteis, and priuilegis of tribunis, quhilkis makis þame
 presentlie sa Insolent & proude. Seruilius be þir feirſ and
 hardy wourdis deliuerit him self honestlie of all dangere. Als 15
 Virginius (quhilk was his colleig for þe tyme) nocht onelie stude
 in testimoniall of his meritis and loving, bot als supportit him
 mony vthir wayis; ȝit na thing changeit þe myndis of pepill, nor
 ȝit causit þame sa mekill to desist fra his accusatioun, as þe
 reproching made to þame for dampnatioun of þis Innocent man 20
 meninius foresaid. (LIII) Thus war all þe civill contentiouns
 finissit in þe ciete. Nocht lang eftir raiſ ane new rebellious of
 veanis be supporte of Sabinis, quhilkis war confederit⁴ to þare
 (190). supporte. And for þat cauſ * publius Valerius consul rasit ane
 army baith of romanis, latinis, and hernikis, to fecht aganis þir 25
 Veanis. And at his first cummyng he assalezit þe tentis of
 Sabinis, for þai war campit to be ane were-wall for defence of
 p. 209. Veanis þare | freynd[is], and made þir sabynis be scharp⁵ assalt
 sa astonist þat þai ran skatterit in sindri buschementis to resist
 his feirſ Irrupcioun. Incontinent þai tuke þe porte of þe sabyne 30
 campe, quhare þe ensenȝe was erekkit, and enterand feirsly
 within þe samyn made ane huge slauchter but ony debate or
 resistance. The fray and noyis was brocht haistely fra þe tentis
 of Sabynis to þe ciete of Veos, & causit þe Veanis to rusche with
 maist preiſ to harnes. for þai war na leſ abasit þan þare ciete 35

¹ preiſ.² wranguslie.³ deid.⁴ confidarit.⁵ schairp.

had bene tane, and parte of þir Veanis haistely Ischit of þare ciete to support þir sabinis, and þe residew þareof ran *witþ* all þare force on þe romanis, quhilkis war þan feirslie occupijt with slauchter and spuleȝe baith of þe Sabynis and þare tentis, throw
 5 quhilkis þe said romanis war gretelie trublit & sum parte put abak; zit fra þare baneris war displait, þai resistit baith þe army of Veanis & Sabynis. quhil baith þir armyis war fechtand maist ernstlie in þis wise, ane cumpany of horsmen come haistelie be command of þe consul to þare supporte, throw quhais terroure
 10 þir twa maist pussant & confederate pepill war baith atanis discomfist & chaist. schort tyme eftir þis victorie the Wolchis & equis sat down with campit Oistis in þe latyne landis, and made na litill hereschippis in þe samyn. Nochtþeles þe latynis but ony capitane, supporte, or ansenȝe of romanis, Vincust
 15 baith þe foresaid pepill allanerlie be supporte of þame self, and hernikis, & wan þare campe. The said latynis conquest be þis victorie ane Incredibil pray, abone al þare awne gudis quhilkis war tynt of before and recouerit at þis tyme, zit nochtwith-
 20 *witþ* ane army aganis þe Wolchis; for þe romanis war na thing content þat þe latinis (quhilkis war þare colonyis & confederate
 • freyndis) suld lede batall aganis þare Inemyis alanerlie be þare awne wayis, but ony avise of romane capitanis. Alwayis na calamyte na kynde of miserie was left vndone to Wolchis; how-
 25 beit na thing mycht | persuade þame to batall. (LIV) Eftir þis p. 210.
 lucius furius & gneus manilius war made consulis. Manilius was send aganis þe Veanis; howbeit he faucht nocht *witþ* * þame, for (191),
 þai gat peace be þare awne desire, paying ȝerelie ane tribute of victualis and monye¹ to þe romane empire.

¹ money.

how genutius tribune arreistit furius and manilius¹
 consulis afore þe pepil, and of his slauchter; how
 volero,² ane of þe commoun pepill, rebellit aganis
 þe faderis; and of þe grete trubill & terroure þat
 rais þarethrow amang þe faderis. Ca. xxij.³ 5

Als sone as peace was made with vncouth Inemyis, followit
 civil contencions at hame amang þe romanis; for the tribunis
 made þe pepill to rage aganis the faderis be Impulsoun of þe
 law agrarie; and howbeit meninius was condampnit afore be
 Iugement of pepill, And als⁴ seruilius eschaping narouly fra 10
 huge dangere in the samyn maner, zit þe consulis, þat is to say,
 furius and manilius afore rehersit,⁵ war na thing effrayit be
 exampil þareof, bot made þame with all autorite and power
 þai mycht to resist⁶ þe desire of pepill. Als sone as þare
 auctorite was experit,⁷ þai war baith arreistit be genucius, tribune 15
 of pepill. In þe menetyne lucius Amulius and opiter Virginius
 war made consulis. bot I fynd in vthir cronikillis⁸ þat Vobiscus
 Iulius was consul in þe place of Virginius. And nochtwithstand-
 ing quhatsumeir consullis war in þis jere, treuth Is baith þir twa 20
 last consullis, lucius furius and gneus manilius, war haldin as
 cryminabill⁹ afore þe pepil; And for [þe] suspitioun (quhilk was
 consaut aganis þame) þai past throw þe ciete In vile and funerall
 habit, Exhorting nocht alanerlie the pepill bot als euery ane of
 þe 3oung faderis to abstene in tyme cummyng fra administratioun
 of al public honouris, and fra sic thingis as concernit the public 25
 p. 211. weil. And made þame be mony resouns vn|derstand þe orna-
 mentis consulare, þat is to say, þe axis, the sadill curall, the
 pretext govne, with all vthir honouris and digniteis pertenyng
 þareto, war nocht bot ane pompe of schynand glore afore þare
 deith. for sic men (as war decorit þarewith) war na leß adiugit 30

¹ mamicius, *A.*³ xlv.⁵ raheirssit.⁷ expyrit.⁹ crimynaille.² walerio.⁴ as, *A.*⁶ sist.⁸ cornicklis.

to þe deith þan ar¹ þe beistis quhilkis *ar¹ to be offerit in sacri- (192).
 fice. The faderis may consider thus gif þe consulate be ane
 plesand office, sen It is² opprest and violate sa mony wayis be
 tribunitiane auctorite. for now þe consul Is sa thirllit þat he
 5 mon³ obey to all empire and charge of tribunis, as he war bot
 ane *seriand* and appar[a.]toure þareto. gif þe consul be nocht
 obeysant to þe tribune, or gif he haue⁴ ony respect to þe
 commoun weil, or desiris ony thing contrare þe commoun mynde
 of pepill, Nocht restis to him bot to remember the proscription
 10 of marcius corilianus, The dampnatioun of meninius, and sikker
 deith afore his ene. The faderis, movit to hie displeseris be þir
 persand wourdis, held sindry dayis eftir mony private consulta-
 tiouns amang þame, sa quietlie þat na men bot þame self had
 cognysance⁵ þareof: And eftir lang consultatioun þai war pro-
 15 foundly resolut to deliuer þir two last consulis fra all fere and
 persecutioun of pepill, othir be Iuste or Iniust way: þat is to
 say, be strang hand or be richt. And þocht þe attemptate þareof
 war neuer sa cruell, zit It plesit þame weil; for mony persouns
 war found amang þame to put þe samyn to haisty executioun.
 20 quhen þe day was cummyn of Iugement, þe pepill stude lang in
 þe courte abiding þe cummyng of genucius, havand na litil admir-
 acioun of his lang tary. And becaus þai saw þe heure peremp-
 toure nere ourepast, and þare tribune nocht compere, Thay
 belevit him to be astonist, and be mynassing of þe faderis durst
 25 nocht compere to þe persute of þare actioun; throw quhilk þai
 began to lament, saying þare public cauß was desert & betrasit.
 At last þe remanent tribunis, quhilkis | stude in þe porchis p. 212.
 quhare þe courte was haldin, schew afore þe pepil how þai fand
 genucius þe tribune slane in his bed. Als sone as þe pepil herd
 30 the murthure of þare tribune, þai skalit here and þare in sindri
 partis, like ane army quhilk is suddanly discomfist fra þare capi-
 tane be slane. Amang þe pepil nane war sa astonist be þis
 troubil as war þe tribunis; for quhen þai saw þe haly autorite
 tribunitiane violate be slauchter of genucius þare colleig, thay
 35 war disparit to mak ony helpe to þe pepil in þis present dangere.

¹ war.² was.³ may (*for* man).⁴ haif.⁵ cognosence.

On þe tothir side þe faderis reiosit with Immoderate blyithnes
 for þe deith of genucius, and schew þame self þarethrow na thing
 (193). penitent for his deith; for * he was punyst Iustlie as þai thocht.
 Apperit þus þe haly autorite tribuniciane to be distroyit be mani-
 fest tyranny. (LV) The faderis seand þame self victorius abone 5
 þe pepil be þis maisterful and wrangwus¹ maner, commandit ane
 army to be rasis, þat þe pepil mycht be þe mare esalie² dantit.
 And becaus þe tribunis war effrayit, The faderis put þare purpois
 to executioun but ony Impediment. Than þe small pepil rais 10
 grete Ire, And war na leß commovit aganis þe tribunis for ob-
 seruacioun of silence in þare public actioun þan þai war for þe
 empire of consulis regnand abone þame, & said Thare liberte
 was endit but recovir; ffor throw þe deith of genucius the haly³
 autorite tribuniciane was endit and buryit atanis. fforß⁴ was
 þarefore, ane thing to think and ane vthir thing to do for resisting 15
 þe faderis. Na thing was left bot þare last refuge, to defend
 þame self (as þai mycht), sen na supporte apperit to þame of
 vthir. "The consulis has xxiiij *seriandis* armit with axis to de-
 fend þare auctorite consulare, and estymeis⁵ na thing leß þan ws
 þat ar descendit of lynage popolare; zit war þare ony amang ws 20
 þat mycht resist or contempne þare auctorite, We suld suddanlie
 rise in grete terroure to þame." quhen þe pepill had movit þame
 self with þir and siclike vane wourdis, ane *seriand* was send be
 p. 213. autorite | of þe consulis to tak ane man þat was amang þame for
 þe tyme, namyt publius Volero⁶; for he wald nochit obey þe 25
 auctorite of faderis, nor zit gif his name in writt, allegiand he
 was ane capitane afore sum vthir tyme in þe romane armyis, And
 for þis cauß he aucht nochit to be as ane private man but ony
 auctorite, bot suld haue bene erare ane capitane as he was afore.
 Alsone as Volero⁷ was teichit In þis maner be þe *seriand*, he 30
 appelit to þe tribunis, And becaus nane of þame assistit to his
 supporte, þe consulis commandit him to be tirvit⁸ nakit and
 skurgit with wandis. Than said Volero⁹: "I appele to þe
 pepill; for þe tribunis had levir¹⁰ ane citejane of rome war scurgit

¹ wrangus.³ haill.⁵ estemys.⁷ waleryo.⁹ walero.² esalie.⁴ force.⁶ waleryus.⁸ tirrit.¹⁰ leware.

afore þare ene þan to haue þame self murdris in þare beddis." The more þis man cryit, þe *seriand* made him to be þe more haistelie tirvit¹ of his claithis. all wayß þis Volero² was wicht and strong³ of body, and obtenit sic helpe that he deliuerit him
 5 self be force out of þe seriandis handis; syne thristit in sturdely quhare he herd maist * clamoure and noyes of pepil applying to (194). his opinioun,⁴ and cryit: "I appele to þe pepill, and askis þare assistance. cum here," (said he) "þe citejanis and nobil com-
 10 panþeouns; now Is na tyme to abide þe helpe of þoure tribunys, ffor þai haue mare myster of þoure supporte þan þe haue of þaris." The pepill, inflammyt be þir wourdis, armyt þame wíth na leß Ire þan þai had bene to fecht aganis þare Inemyis. apperit sa grete
 15 troubil haistelie to follow, þat nowthir halynes, richt, nor ȝit private or public constitution apperit to haue place or reuerence for þe tyme in þe ciete. The consulis, makand þame to resist the furye of pepill rising be þis haisty contentioun, gat sone experience Thare maieste was richt vnsikkir, quhare It was noch
 20 sufficientlie garnist wíth strang power. ffor noch alanerlie war þare axis brokin, þare servandis violate and strikkin,⁵ bot als þame self chasit fra the merket to þe courte, Noch knowing to quhat fyne þis Volero² wald vse his victorie latelie conquest abone þame. At last, quhen þe noyes and clamoure rising be þis bergane was sum parte mesit, The consulis *convenit* þe
 25 senate | to ane counsell, and complenit þe hevy Iniuris done to þame be violence of small pepill, and þe hardy attemptatis of Volero.² eftir lang consultaciouns mony feirß sentence and opinioun war found in þis mater, to dant the rebelloun and pride of small pepill; ȝit be suffrage and votis of agit men | It was found vnproffittabill⁶ þat þe Ire of faderis suld contend
 30 aganis þe furie & wodnes of pepill.

¹ tyrit.² walero.³ strang.⁴ oppinþeoun.⁵ weolait & straikin.⁶ vnproftytable.

- (195). how þe faderis opponyt¹ þame aganis þe law made
 be Volero,² tribune of pepill; Of grete contentioun
 betuix lectorius tribune and appius consul, And
 how þe trubill appering þarethrow was mesit be
 quintius consull, and þe nowmer of tribunys ekit. 5
 Ca. xxiiij.³

(LVI) The pepill, havand victorie on þis wise, embrasit
 volero⁴ and creat him tribune in þare nixt *commitis*. In þis
 3ere lucius pinarius and publius furius war made consulis, and
 þocht ilk man belevit þis volero⁵ suld exerce his office alan- 10
 erlie to troubill the consullis of þis last 3ere, 3it contrare þe
 opinioun of pepill, fra he was cled ⁶*with* public honouris, he
 had sic private doloure þat⁶ he neuer movit ane displesant
 worde aganis þe consulis, bot made ane law In favoure of
 small pepill, þat all officis & digniteis pertinand to þame sall 15
 be chosin in tymes *cummyng* be *commitis* alanerlie of tribunis.
 howbeit þis law apperit of litill force or effect in þe first face,
 3it It made plane derogatioun to þe faderis to creat ony trib-
 unis in tymes *cummyng* be votis of þare assessouris or clientis.
 The faderis, knowing þe *dammage* thareof, opponit þame ferslie 20
with vtir⁷ power⁸ to resist þe said law; 3it nane was found
 amang þe faderis or consullis þat durst ⁹particularly oppone
 þame þareto, nor 3it stop þe *sammyn*. Nochtþeles the thing
 þat was sa strang and pussant in þe self, be revolution of
 p. 215. diuerß tretyis was¹⁰ differrit to þe begynnyng of | þe nixt 3ere. 25
 the pepill at þe begynnyng þareof continewit Volero tribune
 as afore. The faderis, seing grete trubill appere, and traisting
 þe *sammyn* to be endit be þe swerde alanerlie, chesit appius
 Claudius afore rehersit to be consul, and made titus quintius
 his colleig. This appius was hatit and evil luffit with þe small 30

¹ apponyt.⁴ walero.⁷ wter, *B.*; vthir,⁹ *The second hand begins*² walerio.⁵ waleryo.*A.**again in B. (p. 241).*³ xlvj.⁶—*om.*⁸ poware.¹⁰ wes, *B.*; war, *A.*

pepill, for¹ sindri contentionis | and debatis sustenit be his
 fader contrare þare auctorite. At þe begynnynge of þe nixt ȝere
 þe pepill tuke na sollicitude bot alanerlie for sic thingis as
 mycht erast fortifie þis new law made be Volero in þare fav-
 5 oure. This lectorius was mare feirß² and afald * to put þis (196).
 new law to executioun þan was Volero þe first auctoure þareof.
 The huge fame and glore of batall (be quhilk he was gretum-
 lie estymeit³) made him þe mare bald to follow his mater.
 This lectorius, seand Volero his colleig speik na thing bot
 10 onelie of þe law foresaid, began to speke aganis þe hous and
 familie of Ap. Claudius, saying þe faderis has create and
 ordanit þe said Appius nocht to be consul, bot erare to be
 ane flescheoure for vexacioun and troubil of small pepill. this
 lectorius was sa rude off his langage, as men of armes vsis to
 15 be, þat he culd nocht declare perfitelie his mynde, and for þat
 cauß he said to þe pepill: "O quiritis, sen sa Is I can nocht
 schaw my mynde vthir wayis þan I haue done, I pray ȝow be
 on þis nixt morow reddy, & owthir sall I de in ȝoure sicht, or
 ellis I sall haue þe law establit." The tribunis on þe nixt
 20 morow tuke þe tempill for establing of þe said law, bot þe
 consullis and nobillis come to empesche þe sammyn. Incon-
 tinent þe tribune⁴ commandit Ilk man to departe, Except sa
 mony as wald gif þare votis for confirmacioun of þe said law.
 mony of þe ȝoung nobillis wald gif na place, nor ȝit obey to
 25 þe viator. þan lectorius commandit ane certane of þir ȝong⁵
 nobillis to be tane be þe viator, bot Appius allegit the tribunis
 had na Iurisdiction bot onelie of þe plebeanis; for þe office
 of tribunis mycht nocht haue ony power abone þe pepill, bot
 onelie on þe plebeanis. Thus mycht þe tribunis haue na
 30 power to remove þe ȝoung | nobillis fra⁶ ony assemblance or p. 216.
 conventioun. The tribunis mycht haue said, "O quiritis,
 departe gif ȝe pleiß out of þis place." The consul mycht
 haue eith perturbat⁷ þe tribune in decisioun of þe richt. In-
 continent the tribune lectorius, Inflammyt with Ire, send þe

¹ be, *A.*³ estemit.⁵ ȝoung.⁷ perturbat.² ferce.⁴ tribunis.⁶ for, *A.*

viator to tak þe consul, and þe consul send þe lictor to tak
 þe tribune, & cryit þe tribune was ane private man but
 empire or ony auctorite. thus had þe tribune bene violate
 and slane, war *nocht* þe pepill ruschit with huge effray out of
 all partis of þe ciete to þe merkett; and assistit with þe tribune 5
 aganis þe consull. ȝit Appius sustenit all þis debate &
 dangerus trubil sa stoutlie, þat þe batall had nocht ceissit but
 effusioun of blude, war *nocht* quintius þe tothir consull gaif
 command to þe faderis to bring Appius perforce out of þe
 merkett, gif þai mycht nocht bring him vthir wayis. this 10
 quintius began sum tyme to meiß þe small pepil *wit* swete
 (197). word*is*; * sum tyme he prayit þe tribunis to skaill þare *con*-
 ventioun and supersede þare Ire, sen þe delaying of þare
 purpoiß for ane tyme mycht tak na pissance¹ fra þame, bot
 erare fortify þame *wit* mare strenth. for as þe faderis war 15
 vnder power of þe pepill, sa war þe consullis vnder þe power
 of fader*is*. (LVII) The pepill was nocht mesit but grete
 difficulte be quintius, and with mare difficulte was appius
 mesit be þe faderis. Als sone as þe conventioun of pepill
 was skalit, the consullis convenit the senatouris; and becaus 20
 þai war inflammyt with huge Ire on þe ta parte, and had grete
 dredoure of þe pepill on þe tothir parte, þai war dividit in
 sindri opiniouns; and ay þe mare laser þai tuke for con-
 sultatioun in þis mater, The mare war þare mynd*is* drawin
 fra all contentioun, and gaif þarefore na litill thankis to quin- 25
 tius consul, for þe discorde was mesit be his lauboure. Appius
 desirit þe maieste of consullis to be of na leß estimatioun at
 þis tyme þan It mycht be in ony tymes² of concorde. quhil
 the ciete was drawin on þis wise be consullis & tribunis in
 p. 217. sindri opiniouns,³ *Nocht* onelie apperit na pussance⁴ | left in 30
 þe ciete, bot als þe *commoun* weill sa hurte and dividit in
 contrarius factiouns, þat It was ether to spere quha⁵ had þe
 gouernance of *commoun* weill þan to Inquire gif þe *commoun*
 wele was haill and weill gouernit. Be contrare Appius tuke
 baith þe godd*is* and men in witnes, The public weill was 35

¹ passance.² tyme.³ appinionis.⁴ passance.⁵ quhay.

desertit and cowardlie betrasit; & þe causþ þareof was *nocht*
 þat þe consullis falezeit to þe senate, bot erare þat þe senate
 falezeit to þe consullis; for at þat tyme war acceptit be þame
 may wikkit¹ & sorouffull lawis þan evir war acceptit be
 5 secessioun of pepill to þe sacrate montane. finalie Appius
 be request of faderis was vincust, and left his persute; And
 Incontinent þe law was pronuncit. (LVIII) This was þe first
 tyme þat ony tribunis war create be *commites* tribuniciane.
 Thre tribunis war create at þis tyme to be ekit to þe two
 10 tribunis þat war create afore, as piso historiographoure writis.
 The names of þir tribunis followis. G. sicinius, L. numitorius,
 M. duellius, spu. Illicius & lu. metilius.

how appius Claudius was sa vnplesand emprioure to (198).
 his army, þat þai sufferit þame self to be vincust
 15 be þe wolchis; And how he punist þame for þare
 fleing; how quintius consul made grete hereschippis
 on þe equis, & returnit *witʰ* grete honoure to rome.
 Ca. xxv.²

This seditioun continewing betuix þe consullis and tribunis
 20 gaif occasioun to þe wolchis to Invaide þe romanis with batall,
 and mak sindri Incursions in þare landis, *witʰ* purpois gif þe
 small pepill departit as afore to þe sacrate montane, þai suld be
 plesandlie supportit and haue þare assistance. The Inemyis,
 seand all seditioun and trubil pecifyit in þe ciete, drew abak
 25 þare tentis, & past hame. sone eftir, be consultatioun of þe
 senate was *commandit* þat Appius consul sal pas aganis the
 Wolches, & quintius consull to pas | aganis þe equis. The samyn p. 218.
 cruelte þat Appius had in his chevelrie at hame remanit *witʰ*
 him of feild; for he apperit þe more cruell þat he was deliuerit
 30 of all fere of tribunis. This Appius bure mare Implacabill

¹ mony wekit.² xlvij.

haterent aganis þe pepill þan bure his fader, becaus he was
 ourethrawin at þis tyme be þe tribunis. Als he was þe more
 commovit þat he beand consul, alanerlie obiekkand aganis þe
 auctorite of tribunis, The law was pronuncit quhilk was em-
 peschit be vthir consullis afore *wit* leß difficulte and lauboure. 5
 This Ire & Indignatioun movit appius to greif¹ his armye *wit*
 sa feirß commandmentis, þat It mycht na wayiß be mesit; for
 þe armye consaut na litill Ire and Indignatioun in þare myndis
 aganis him, and did all thingis sa thrawartlie be sleuth and
 negligence,² þat nowthir schame nor fere of þare Inemyis mycht 10
 refrene þame. gif Appius desirit þame to haisty þare passage,
 þai past³ huly. gif he wald exhort þame to array, þai wilfully
 past³ sindri, & deiekkit þare ene to þe erde. quhen he past³
 by þame, þai waryit⁴ him þat his mynde (quhilk was sa Invin-
 sibil⁵ with hatrent of plebeans) suld be sum tyme commovit. 15
 (199). At last þis Appius, seand his bitter wourdis nocht ava*lit, and
 þat he mycht do na thing be þe sammyn, he said þe armye was
 corruppit be þe centuriouns, and callit þame sum tyme tribunys
 of pepill and sum tyme callit þame Voleronis. (LIX) The
 Wolchis knew weil⁶ all þir dissensiouns, and haistyt⁷ þame *wit* 20
 al diligence þai mycht, traisting þe armye to rebell aganis appius
 on þe samyn maner as þai did afore aganis Sabynis. howbeit
 fabius army desirit ay to be victouris⁸ and chace þare Inemyis,
 zit þis armye desirit nocht bot to be vincust. for als sone as
 þis armye was arrayit formentis⁹ þare Inemyis, þai fled schame- 25
 fully but ony straik [to þair tentis], And schupe neuer to mak
 resistance, quhil þai saw þe ansenßeis of Inemyis erekkit at þe
 trynschis of þare tentis, and þe vtir skirtis of þare armye dis-
 p. 219. comfist with grete slauchter. and zit þai desirit | na vthir victorie
 bot alanerlie þare tentis nocht to be tane be Inemyis. mony of 30
 þame war glade¹⁰ for þe calamyte and troubil falling to þame
 self; and zit þe feirß spreit of Appius was na thing brokin be
 þir Iniuris, bot callit his army to ane concioun to haue reprochit
 þame of þare cowartry & febilnes; and in þe mene tyme þe

¹ greve.³ jid.⁵ Invincible.⁷ haistit.⁹ fornence.² negligence.⁴ warit.⁶ vele.⁸ victorius.¹⁰ gled.

legatis and tribunys come to him, praying him to assaleȝe *nocht* þe power of his empire, for all þe vertew þareof stude alanerly in þe obedience of his subdittis.¹ Attoure þe armye denyit to *convene* to ony concioun at his *command*. thus was *nocht* herde
 5 in þe army bot ane noyis and clamour desiring þame to be transportit out of þe wolchis landis in sum province of romanis; for *nocht* alanerlie was þe Inemyis almaist victor within þe trynschis and portis of þare tentis, bot throw þe *sammyn*² þai had ane suspioun of ane greter schame and displesure following.
 10 Appius, seand finalie his rigor³ and feirþ wourdis *nocht* availl, and na furthir in his purpois bot alanerlie tynsell of tyme, left þe calling of his armye to ane concioun, and *commandit* þame on þe nixt morow to mak þame reddy to *départé* at þe first sound of trumpett.⁴ on þe morow arely, als sone as romanis war de-
 15 parting, the wolchis, awalknit be sound of trumpett,⁴ followit feirsly on þe lattir⁵ skirtis of þare armye. þe effray and noyis rissyn þarethrow come fra þe hyndmest parte of þe armye to þe formest bront⁶ þareof, and made sic troubill baith amang þe ordouris and þe *ansenȝeis*,⁷ þat nowthir mycht þe empire of þe
 20 capitane be herd Nor ȝit mycht the battall be * put in dew array; (200). throw quhilk na man tuke sicht to ony vthir thing, bot alanerly to fle. Thus war þe romanis discomfitt⁸ & chasit sa continually, þat þe wolchis war first Irkit of þe chace or þe romanis ceissit of þare fleing. The consull, seing he mycht na way⁹ stop þe fleing
 25 of his army, colleckit þame eftir þare discomfitoure, and sett doun þare tentis within þe romane landis; & eftir | þat he had p. 220. callit þame to ane concioun, he began to reproche þame of þare fleing, and passing fra þe ordinance of chevalrie: syne demandit Ilkane of þame quhare was þare wappynnys,¹⁰ thare armoure, and
 30 þare *ansenȝeis*, & Incontinent tuke all þe vnarmyt men þat he fand amang his army, *wit* sindri vtheris, sic as wer banermen and had left þe *ansenȝeis* behynd þame, and first he gart skourge¹¹ þame with wandis & syne he gart¹² hede þame *wit* ane ax. The

¹ subdettis.⁴ trumpett.⁷ *ansenȝeis*.¹⁰ wappingis.² same.⁵ *lettir*.⁸ disconfist.¹¹ skairge.³ regourus.⁶ brount.⁹ wayis.¹² grat.

residew of al his discomfist armye war tane be him, and Ilk tent man hedit be cavil for þare fleing. (LX) The tothir consul Titus quintius (quhilk was send aganis þe equis) bure him in ane vthir sorte; for þocht þe said quintius was be natur of swete and plesand maneris, zit abone þe samyn The vnhappy cruelte of 5 his colleig gaif occasioun to him to reiose in his awne¹ Ingine and soft maneris. The equis, seand þis grete concorde betuix quintius and his armye, durst nocht aventure þame self to þe chance of batall, bot sufferit þare Inemyis to evaig² and pas but ony resistance in depopulation and hereschip of þare landis, 10 in sic wise³ þat neuer afore þai dayis was won mare pray of richeß be ony chance of batall; and al þe said pray was delt liberally be quintius amang þe armye. abone all þir largitiouns þe consull⁴ gaif þame grete loving, In quhilk þe sprete and curage of men reiosis na leß than in largitiouns of gudis and 15 richeß. sone eftir, þis army returnit to rome, & was richt acceptabil to þe faderis for quintius saik, and to his grete loving þai said he bure him *nocht* as emprioure bot as fader abone þame, howbeit Appius Claudius bure him as ane maister abone the tothir armye. 20

(201). how ane day of Jugement was sett to Appius, and
p. 221. of his deith; how Valerius and amilius consullis
made grete hereschippis on þe equis and Sabinis;
how þe sabynis and Wolchis war sindry tymes vin-
custe be romanis & þe toun of antium tane. 25
Ca. xxvj.⁵

(LXI) In the 3ere following L. valerius & ti[tus] Amilius⁶ war made consulis. this 3ere was richt notable, baith for þe contencioun of ordouris concernyng þe law Agrarie, and for þe Jugement of Appius Claudius; for he was grete aduersare to 30

¹ awyne. ² evage. ³ wyið. ⁴ consulis, A. ⁵ xlvij. ⁶ Amulius, A.

þe law agrarie, and debatit þe actioun of al þame þat possedit the public landis; and þarefore þe tribunys of pepil, namyt gneus siccius & M[arcus] duellius,¹ set ane day to þe said appius, to here him criminalie accusit afore þe pepil. treuth Is þat
 5 neuer afore þai dayis was ony man summond to Iugement sa hatit *wit* þe pepil; for þe pepil bure aganis him extreme Indignatioun and Ire, baith for his fader and for his awne saik. On þe tothir side þe faderis set þame stoutly to defend him; for he was *nocht* onelie defendoure of þe senate, bot als re-
 10 couerare of þare maieste, ay feirslie opponyng him aganis all noyis & trubil of tribunys & pepill. This appius Claudius, beand allone amang þe faderis, sett baith þe tribunis, þe pepill, and all þare Iugement at *nocht*; and was sa stout in his opinioun² þat nouthir *mycht* þe mynassing³ of pepil, nor ȝit
 15 þe prayeris of faderis, move him sa mekil as to change his habit, [or⁴ to meyne him petuslie to þe pepill], Or⁵ ȝit *mycht* move him quhen his actioun was to be discussit afore þe pepil to soft or humyl ony thing in seuerite of his orisoun. [ffor the same spreit wes in his orisone,] þe samyn⁶ contenance was in
 20 his visage, The *sammyn*⁶ maner of saying was in him now, quhen he was private, as⁷ was afore quhen he was consul. he purgit⁸ bot anys⁹ him self⁹ afore þe pepill *wit* maist awfull and constant sprete, & made þe tribunis & pepill sa astonist þat þai war glade¹⁰ to haue his day of Iugement als lang delayit as he
 25 plesit. Nochtþeles, afore þe day come, he deceissit be | suddane p. 222.
 * infirmite; and how beit þe tribunis of pepill sett þame to em- (202).
 pesch þe loving þat was accustumate to be gevin to nobil men in þare deith, ȝit þe small pepil wald *nocht* suffir him to be defraudit¹¹ þareof, and hard þarefore þe blasonyng & predica-
 30 tioun of his loving als plesandlie þan, quhen he was dede, as þai herd his loving afore quhen he was quyk; and did his funerale obsequies *wit* grete solempnite. (LXII) In þis ȝere Valerius consul was send *wit* ane army aganis þe equis; &

¹ duillius, *A*.⁴ ȝit *in MS*.⁷ at.¹⁰ glede.² apinioun.⁶ nor.⁸ schew.¹¹ defraud.³ manassing.⁶ same.⁹—⁹ his caus.

becaus he culd *nocht* *provoik*¹ þe Inemyis to batall, he sett
 him to assailze þare tentis, & Incontinent fell sa hevy tempest
*wit*h slete and snawis out of þe are, þat he was empeschet;
 & to þe greter admiratioun and wounder, fra he had *commandit*
 his army to *retere*² abak fra þe tentis of Inemyis and come to 5
 his standart, followit sic serenite þat *nocht* was traistit bot þe
 tentis of Inemyis defendit be sum divyne power. Thus was all
 þe *preis* of batall convertit alanerlie in depopulacio~~m~~ of þe
 landis of equis. The tothir consul Amylius led batell aganis þe
 Sabinis, and waistit þare landis becauþ þai wald *nocht* gif batall, 10
 bot held þame within þare strenthis. at last þe sabinis, seand
 þare landis and townis cruelly brynt, raif in grete cumpanyis,
 and quhen þai had fochtin aganis þare Inemyis *wit*h vncertane
 victorie, Thay drew þare tentis abak to mare sikkir boundis.
 The consul *thocht* he did his devore sufficientlie, sen he had 15
 put his Inemyis abak and waistit þare landis. (LXIII) during
 þir batallis was grete discentioun at hame amang þe romanis,
 and in þe mene tyme ti. numicius³ & Au. Virginius war made
 consullis. apperit weill þe pepill wald suffir na langare þe
 delatioun of þe law agrarie; and quhen þai war maist forcelie 20
 gevin to þe executioun þareof, Tithingis come þat þe Wolches
 war cummand *wit*h strang armyis to Invaide þe ciete. The reik
 of village[s] & townis adiacent, and þe fleing of landwart⁴ pepil
 to þe ciete, schew weil þir novellis of verite. The sedition
 p. 223. | rising be mocion of þe law foresade was suddanlie repressit 25
 be þir novellis. the consullis departit haistely be command of
 þe senate with mony young and lusty gallandis of þe ciete, and
 made þe small pepil mare peciabil⁵ þan afore. The Inemyis
 did nane other thing bot astonist þe romanis with vane dredoure
 (203). & haistely departit. Numilius⁶ was send * aganis þe wolchis of 30
 antium, and Virginius aganis þe equis; bot his army sufferit
 grete damage be Isching of hid buschmentis liand vnder wate.
*Nocht*þeles þe manhede & wisdom of his knichtis recouert þe
 thing þat was tynt be negligence of þe consul. The tothir con-

¹ provoke.² returne.³ titull mimilius (!).⁴ lanwart.⁵ peceable.⁶ So also in B.

sul Numilius¹ prosperit bettir aganis þe Wolchis, for þai war
 discomfist & chasit to þe toun of antium,² þe maist riche ciete
 amang þame in þai dayis; And becaus þe consull mycht nocht
 presentlie assege þe said toun of Antium,² he tuke ane vthir small
 5 toun pertenand to þare dominioun namit Cenon. quhil þe wolchis
 and equis on þis wise be þe romanis war Invadit, The sabinis
 come with maist auful Incursiouns to þe portis of rome.
 Nochtþeles þe two consullis met þame within few dayis eftir,
 and opprest þame with more hereschippis³ and slauchter þan
 10 þai did afore to romanis. (LXIV) In þe end of þe ȝere sum
 tranquillite & peace was. Nochtþeles þe samyn (as oft afore
 occurrit) was trublit be contentioun betuix þe faderis & smal
 pepil. Thus was þe small pepill sa commovit, þat þai wald
 nocht cum to þe commitis & eleccioun of consullis; & nocht-
 15 withstanding þare absence, ȝit be auctorite of þe faderis & þare
 clientis, pub. quintius & quintius seruilus war made consullis.
 This ȝere was nocht vnlike to þe ȝere afore, for all seditiouns
 rising in þe beginyng þareof war repressit be feir of Inemyis.
 The sabinis cum with ane haisty armye throw þe landis of
 20 Crustumianis; & eftir þai had rasit fire with huge slauchter
 beside þe river of Anien, þai come to porte collyne; & howbeit
 þai war doung fra þe said porte & wallis of Rome, ȝit þai drave⁴
 ane huge pray of men & gudis hame to þare cuntre. Incon-
 tinent seruilus consull followit on þame with ane army; bot he
 25 mycht nocht tak þame at ganand place, and þarefore he made sa
 cruell hereschip in þare landis þat na thing was left | Vnassail- p. 224.
 ȝeit be batall, and returnit hame with infinite pray. on þe samyn
 maner all thing was done with grete felicite aganis þe Wolchis,
 be wisdom of pub. quintius consul and his army. first It was
 30 fochtin⁵ in plane feild with displayit baneris, and grete slauchter
 made on euery side. The romanis (becaus þai war in fewe
 nowmer) had bene put abak, war nocht quinzti⁶ þe consul be
 ane proffittabil lesing cryit þat þe Inemyis war fleand on ane
 vthir weyng;⁶ throw quhilk the romanis ruschit on þare Inemyis

¹ So also in B.
² om.

³ heirschippis.
⁴ draif.

⁵ focht.
⁶ wyng.

(204). *witȝ* sic * *preisȝ*, þat quhare þai belevit to haue bene vincust, þai war victorius. The consul, dredand batall to be renewit gif his knichtis followit oure fer in þe chace, callit þame be sound of trumpett to þe standart. ffollowit certane dayis In *quhilkis* baith þe armyis war at quiet, as certane trewis war takin betuix 5 þame; And in þe mene tyme come ane huge multitude of Wolchis and equis, and adionit þame to þe tentis of sabynis, and purposit (als sone as þe romanis war departing) to Invaid þare tentis at þe thrid Vigill. Als sone as quintius had mesit the noyisȝ and trubil of þis effray, he *commandit* þe knichtis to 10 hald þame cloisȝ within þare tentis, and put furth ane buschment of hernikis to kepe þe watche afore þe tentis; & causit horsmen with swasche,¹ and taberne² to play all nycht about þe trynschis, to hald þare Inemyis walkand to þe morow. The remanent of þis nycht was in sic quiet with romanis, þat þai slepit at þare 15 plesere. On þe tothir side þe Wolchis war effrayit be noyisȝ of armit futemen, quham þai belevit in grete nowmer. Attoure, þe neyng of horȝ, becaus vncouth men war apoun þare bakkis, with þe noyisȝ of swasche¹ and tawberon,³ held þe wolchis ay on flocht, as þare Inemyis had bene *cummyn* on þame. (LXV) on 20 þe nixt morow arelie the romanis (eftir þai had slepit wele and war refreschit) went to array, and sett on þe wolchis wery & forwalkit, and put þame abak. ⁴howbeit It apperit þai went erare abak ⁴*witȝ* þare awne will þan to be discomfist, for at þare bakkis was ane strait montane or cleuch; In *quhilkis* þai war 25 surelie garnist *witȝ* al þare ordouris. þe consul, seand þe place vnganand for batall, styntit his army, howbeit þe samyn *mycht* p. 225. *nocht* be haldin fra | batall but grete difficulte, Ay cryand and desirand to Invaid þare astonist Inemyis. The horsmen Incontinent ran feirsleie about þare capitanis, cryand gif þai gatt na 30 licence, þai suld afore the sound of trumpett gif batell; and as þai cryit sa followit, for þai affix⁵ haistelie þare dartis in þe erde, þat þai *mycht* þe more lichtlie clym vp þe cleuch. Incontinent þe wolchis schot at þame all þare dartis atanis, & eftir schot doun grete stanis on þe fute men ay as þai clam vp, and *witȝ* ythand 35

¹ swache.² taburn.³ tauburn.⁴—⁴ om.⁵ effexit.

strakis put þame fra þe hichtis. Thus was þe left wyng of þe romanis sa ouresett *witʰ* dynt of stanys, þat þai had past abak, war *nocht* þe consul reprochit þame first of þare fule hardyment & *syne of þare cowardy,¹ and eschamit þame in sic wise þat he (205).
 5 put all þare dredoure aside. The romanis resistit first þare Inemyis *witʰ* obstinate myndis; bot fra þare strenth and aynd was a litil refreschit, þai past² fordwart *witʰ* gude will, and finalie wan þe difficillest³ and maist strate parte of þe said montane. Now war þe romanis cummyn to þe hicht of all þe montane,
 10 quhen þe Inemyis fled and gaif bakkis. Incontinent þe romanis followit on þame, in sic wise þat baith þe flearis and followaris wyde skatterit [and] vnder ane cumpany come atanis to þe tentis. Thus war þe tentis of Inemyis tane. sa mony of þe wolchis (as *mycht* fle) ran feirslie to þe toun of Antium, On
 15 quham followit al þe romane armye; and estir þat It was segeit certane dayis, It was tane but ony new violence, bot only becauð þare curage was loist for taking of þare tentis throw þis vnhappy batall. And sa endis here þe secund buke of Leuius.⁴

¹ cowerte.² ȝeid.³ difficlest.⁴ Titus liuius.

(206).
p. 227.

Here begynnys the thrid buke of titus Livius.

how the debate rising betuix þe faderis and tribunys
of pepill concernyng the law agrarie was mesit be
prudence of fabius ; how þe equis was discomfist ;
and of þe nowmer of romane pepill within rome.

Ca. primum.¹ 5

Quhen the toun of Antium was tane in þis maner, Titus
Amulus and quintus fabius war made consulis. This was þe
samyn fabius þat was left onelie on live behind þe remanent
surname of fabis slane at Cremera. Amulus in his first con-
sulate lauborit stronglie þat þe landis conquest fra Inemyis suld 10
be dividit amang þe small pepill ; And þarefore in his secound
consulate all þe fauoraris of þe said law agrarie rasis þare curage
in esperance of þe said law. fforthir þe tribunis, beleving þat
throw supporte of þe said consul þai mycht estabil þe said law,
began to trete surelie þe mater þat was sa oft be þame afore 15
assailþete. The consul Amulus stude constant at his purpois.
(207). In þe mene tyme baith* þe possessouris of public landis and
ane grete parte of þe faderis, seand þame self hevily² trublit
be actiouns of tribunis, complenit þat þe prince³ of þe ciete
be largitiouns of vthir mennys landis and gudis war become 20
populare ; And be þis lament þai turnit al Invy & haterent þat
þai had afore aganis þe tribunis on þe said consul. Thus⁴ grete
seditioun and debate suld haue haistelie rissin,⁵ war noch þe
samyn was pecifijt be prudence of þe nobill fabius, quhais counsel

¹ xlix.

² hevaly.

³ prence.

⁴ This.

⁵ rysyn.

was sa moderate þat It was nouthir displesand to þe ta parte¹
nor þe tothir; ffor he said his colleig Amulius mycht divide
amang þe small pepil ane parte of þe landis pertenyng to þe
toun of antium, quhilk was tane in þe 3ere afore fra þe wolchis
5 be victorie of lucius quintius. & becauþ þe toun of antium
was nere approcheand to þame, & | stude stranglie² on þe p. 228.
marchis, It mycht þefore be made ane colonie of romanis;
And be þis way nocht onelie mycht þe smal pepill reiose sum
parte of new landis, but ony Impediment of þe possessouris,
10 bot als þe ciete mycht haue stand in pece & concorde. this
sentence of fabius was plesand to al partis,³ and þefore thre
prudent men, namyt titus quintius, Aulus Virginius, and pub.
furius, war chosin to parte þe said landis; be quhais auctorite
ane edict was made, commanding al persouns þat wald haue
15 ony of þir landis afore rehersit to gif þare names in writt. 3it
(as oft occurris) plente generis contemptioun. als sone as þe
smal pepill saw þai mycht haue þir landis dividit at þare pleßer,
þai refusit to haue ony parte þareof. Thus war þe names of
þame sa fewe þat desirit þir landis, þat sindri Wolchis was⁴
20 brocht to duell within þe said toun of Antium; for þe residew
of romane pepill had lever (as þai confessit) ask landis in rome,
howbeit þai gat na possessioun þareof, þan to possede landis
in ony vthir parte. Sic thingis done, quintius fabius was send
with ane armye aganis the equis, bot sone eftir his cummyn þe
25 equis send to him þare legatis for peace; and þocht þis pece
was grantit It endurit nocht, for þe samyn was brokin be þare
suddane Incursioun on þe latynis. (II) The nixt 3ere q[uintius]
Seruilius and spurius posthumius war made consull[is]. seruilius
was send aganis þe equis, and sat doun with his tentis in þe latyne
30 landis. Than fel sa mony infirmiteis amang his army, þat he was
constrenit to tak rest. Thus was þe * batell þat was movit aganis (208).
þe equis supersedit to þe thrid 3ere; & in þe begynnyn þareof
quintius fabius and titus quintius war made consullis. ffabius was
ordanit to pas aganis þe equis, for he (as victorius emprioure) gaif
35 to þame pece afore. þis fabius, traisting fermelie þe maieste &

¹ party.² stronglie.³ partyis.⁴ wer.

renoun of his estate (becaus he was victorius afore) suld pecifye
all trubill amang þe equis, send his legatis saying to þame as
followis: "Quintius fabius dois 3ow vnderstand, he Is þe samyn
man þat brocht pece afore fra þe equis to rome, and bringis
p. 229. now battall fra rome | to þe equis, with þis samyn armit hand 5
þat gaif peace to þame afore; and takis¹ þe goddis In witnes
to punys all þame þat has violatē or brokin þare faith be periure.²
In quhatsumeir sorte þe mater standis, he desiris þe equis erare
to be penitent of þare rebellioun aganis þe maieste and faith of
goddis, þan to suffir ony vengeance following on þame be þe 10
swerd. fforthir gif þe said equis will be penitent, þai sall be
ressauit to his provin clemence; and gif þai will continewe in
þare periurie, force was to þame to fecht erare aganis þe wraith
and Ire of goddis þan aganis his weris." The equis war sa
inflammyt be þir wordis, þat skarslie mycht þai be refrenit fra 15
violatioun of Romane legatis. belive ane army was send be þame
aganis þe romanis, and sett doun þare tentis At Algidum. Als
sone as þir novellis war brocht to rome, þe tothir consull Titus
quintius departit with ane new armye, for he was more inflammyt
for þe contempcion done be his Inemyis þan for ony dangere 20
be þame appering. Thus past þe twa consullis with two strang
Oistis to gif batall to þe equis. At þare cummyng fornente þare
Inemyis the licht was nere gane³; And in þe mene tyme ane
of þe equis cryit skornefully, It was propir to romanis erare to
mak ane vane manassing, þan to gif batall. "3e array 3ow" 25
(said he) "now within þe nycht; how beit 3e haue nede of more
licht þan now apperis to perfurnes 3oure batall. herefore array
3ow aganis þe nixt morow, and haue na dreddowr bot 3e sall haue
als⁴ mekil fechtung as 3e desire." The Romane armyis, in-
flammyt to grete Ire be þir wourdis, returnit to þare tentis, 30
thinkand þe nycht to lang þat made sic tary to þare batall,
(209). and sone eftir refreschit þare bodyis with mete and slepe. * Als
sone as licht apperit on þe morow, the romanis come forrest⁵ to
þe feild, And noch lang eftir þare cummyng come þe equis.

¹ takkes.² periurie.³ gone.⁴ sa.⁵ formaist.

followit haistellie ane batall cruelly fochtin ¹ on all sidis. The romanis faucht þe more stranglie, þat þai war Inflammyt *with* Ire & haterent of þare Inemyis; And þe equis, disparit to haue ony creditt *with* [þe] romanis in tymes cummyng (becaus þai failzete
 5 in tymes bigane), enforcit þame to assailze þe last chance & Ieoperdie | of armes. finalie þai mycht *nocht* sustene þe preið p. 230.
 of romanis, and war chasit *with* grete slauchter quhil þai wer returnit within þare awne landis. And howbeit the equis war discomfist in þis wise, ȝit þai wald nowthir seik nor desire pece
 10 of þare Inemyis; bot reprochit hevily þare capitannis, quhilkis Ieoperde þare *commoun* wele aganis þe romanis in arrayit and sett batall, Considering þe romanis war maist crafty in sic maner of fechtin; be contrare þai, þe saidis Equis, war maist crafty to distroye þare Inemyis be haisty & suddane Incursiouns, and
 15 couth leid batall bettir quhen þai war skatterit in mony handis þan quhen þai war all Ionit togiddir vnder ane body. (III) for þir ressouns þe equis Ischit fra þare campe, levand behynd þame ane garrisoun of armit men in defence þareof; Syne enterit *with* sic cruelte within þe bordouris of romane landis, þat þe tumult
 20 and effray þareof was brocht to rome. Thir novellis made ane

¹ *The eighth hand in B. begins here (p. 257).*

On all sydis. þe Romanis faucht þe more stranglie, þat tha wer inflammyt *with* Ire and hatrent off *þair* ennymeis; And þe equis, disparit to haue ony credeit *with* þe Romanis in tymes *cuming* becaus þa failzeit in tymes bigane, enforsit þame to assailze þe last chance and geoperdie of armes. finalie tha mycht *nocht* sustene þe press of Romanis, and wer chasyt *with* greit slauchter quhill tha wer Returnyt *within* *þair* awin landis. And houbet þe equis wer disconfist in þis wise, ȝit tha wald *noþir* seik nor desyre peace of *þair* ennymeis; bot reproche hevalie *þair* capitannis, quhilkis Ieoperdie *þair* *commone* weill aganis þe Romanis in arrayit and set battell, considering þe Romanis wer maist crafty in sic *maner* of fechtin; be contrair þai, þe said equis, wer maist crafty to distroy *þair* ennymeis be haisty and suddane incursionys, and couth leid battell better quhen tha wer scatterit in mony handis þan quhen tha wer all Ioynit þe gidder vnder ane body. ffor þir resonis þe equis Ischit fro *þair* camp, levand behynd þame ane garesoun of armyt men in defence *þair* off; syne enterit *with* sic creualtie *within* þe bordouris of Romane landis þat þe tumult and affray *þair* off wes brocht to Rome. Thir novellis maid ane huge

huge terroure in þe ciete; for þe romanis belevit na thing leß þan
 þare Inemyis (quhilkis war vincust and nere spulejit of þare
 tentis) to resorte haistelie with new power *with*in þare landis. þe
 landwart pepill come richt effrayitlie to rome, augmentand euery
 thingis *with* vane terroure, and saying þe Inemyis war ap- 5
 procheand to þe portis, *nocht* as afore to Invaid þe cuntre with
 suddane Incursiouns, bot erare garnist with mony arrayit legiouns
 cummand with grete force to tak þe ciete. thus was þe ciete
 brocht in mare terroure þan afore be vane novellis, quhilkis
 sprang sa fer be reporting of ane ¹ to ane vthir, þat þe dyn 10
 & clamoure þareof made Ilk man to ¹ rusche haistelie to harnes
with na less dredoure ² þan þare ciete war Instantlie to be tane be
 Inemyis. quhill sic terroure was in rome, quintius fabius returnit
 with his army fra algidum; quhais *cum*ing was grete comforting
 to þe effrayit ³ ciete. Als sone as he had mesit all troubill ⁴ 15
 (210). þareof, he reprevit þe *romanis becaus þai tuke fere and dredoure
 of þare vincust Inemyis. Incontinent he lade ⁵ ane buschment of
 armit men to þe portis. Sic thingis done, he convenit þe senate,
 [And] be auctorite of þe faderis *com*mandit all ministratioun
 of lawis to ⁶ ceis; and past haistely *with* mony strang knychtis to 20
 p. 231. defend þe fronteris & bordouris | of romane landis; and left
 quintius seruilus to be president of his ciete to his returnyng.
 At his *cum*myng he fand na Inemyis in þe feildis. The tothir
 consul wrocht his besines with souerane manhede and wisdom;e
 for als sone as he vnderstude be quhat wayis ⁷ his Inemyis war 25
 returnyng hame, ladin with sa Infinite pray of men and gudis þat
 þe samyn made na litill Impediment to þare viage, ⁸ he assailzete
 þame *with* sa suddane batall þat he spulezete þame atanis baith of
 þare livis and gudis. few eschapid, and the pray was halely
 recoverit. At þe returnyng of quintius the administratioun of 30
 lawis began agane as þai war wount ⁹; for þe vacance þareof

terrour in þe ciete; ffor þe Romanys belevit na thing les þan þair
 ennymeis, quhilkis wer vincust And neir spulzeit of þair tenttis, to
 resort haistely *with* new powar *with*in þair landis.

¹—1 om.² derdour.³ affrayit.⁴ tribill.⁵ laid.⁶ till.⁷ way.⁸ vayage.⁹ wont.

endurit bot iiij dayis.¹ Than war þe romane pepill nowmerit,
 and þe sacrifice lustrale made be quintius consul in þe honoꝝr of
 goddis. The romane citejanis being nowmerit in þis wise come
 to ane hundreth xxiiij^m ² ij^c xxiiij persouns, Except pupillis and
 5 wedois. Na thing was done be þe³ equis eftir þis wourthy to
 haue memorie; for þai defendit þame self within þare mvnitiouns
 & strenthis, and sufferit al þare landis & gudis to paß in direp-
 tioun & pray of Inemyis. At last quhen þe consul had lang
 tyme lyin⁴ in þare landis to þe vtir hereschip⁵ and confisking of
 10 þare gudis, he returnit with grete honoure and pray of men
 & gudis to rome.

how þe hernikis aduertist þe romanis of þe batall (211).
 appering be wolchis & equis; how spurius furius
 consull was discomfist be þe wolchis and equis, &
 15 was rescoursit eftir be quintius proconsul, & how
 þe wolchis & equis war discomfist. Ca. ij.⁶

(IV) In the nixt ȝere posthumius albus and spurius furius war
 made consullis. fabius with vthir writaris sais þe consullis of
 þis ȝere war namyt spuriij & fusij; ȝit howbeit þe namys be
 20 changit, na alteratioun Is in þe persouns. na dout Is bot þir
 two consullis was to leid batall aganis þe equis, and for þat
 cauß þe equis war constrenit to seik helpe fra þe wolchis namyt
 ecetranis; quhilk being richt plesandly grantit, | for all pepill p. 232.
 and townis liand about rome had extreme Invie and hattrent
 25 aganis þe romanis, thir two pepill, þe wolchis and equis, maid
 þame to Invaid the romanis In maist awfull maner. als sone
 as þe hernikis war aduertist hereof, thay send þare messingeris
 to rome, schewand noch onelie how the Ecetranis war rebellit
 and alliat with þe equis, bot als Antium þe colone of romanis

¹ four dais.² thousand.³ þis.⁴ lying, *A.*⁵ heirschep.⁶ *L.*

was suspect; ffor quhen It was tane, mony of þe cieteneris¹ þareof fled to þe equis, and war ane scharpe Inemye to [þe] romanis, as was provin in þe last batall focht in be þe equis In supporte of Wolchis. for eftir þat þe said equis war vincust & drevin abak to þare townis, mony of þir Wolchis quhilkis fled 5 afore to þe equis returnit to antium, And be þare persuasiouns drew þe remanent² vnfaithful pepill þareof to þare opinioun, how beit þe mater succedit nocht with felicite. Als sone as þare rebelloun was patent to þe senate, þe charge þareof was committit to þe consulis, commanding þame to bring þe princis 10 of Antium to rome, to be Inquirit of sic thingis as þe senate thocht expedient. Thir princis, eftir [þat] þai war brocht finalie to rome with small difficulte,³ made sic ansuere to þe senate þat þai war repute mare suspicious at þare departing þan þai (212). war * repute afore þare cummyn.⁴ Thus war þe consullis surelie 15 aduertist of batall appering. Than spurius furius consul, to quham þe province of equis fell, passand aganis þe said equis, fand þame makand direpciouns & spuleze in þe hernyke landis; and becaus he knewe nocht þe multitude and pussance of his Inemyis, for þare army apperit nocht attanis to his sicht, he 20 gaif batall fulichlie,⁵ for at þe first Ioynnyng he was discomfist and chasit to his tentis. This discomfitoure put nocht ane end to⁶ his trubill, for baith þe nycht & day following his tentis war sa strait environnyt⁷ be sege of Inemyis, þat he culd nocht gett ane man furth of his army to aduertis þe romanis of his 25 troubill.⁸ Nochtþeles þe affray⁹ thareof was brocht to rome be p. 233. þe hernikis, for thay | schew þe consull discomfist, and baith his self & his army segeit be Inemyis. thir novellis made þe faderis sa astonist, þat þai vsit þe samyn deliuerance þat þai vsit in¹⁰ extreme necessite. þe charge of þis present¹¹ besines was 30 committit to posthumius consul, to sauf¹² þe public weill fra Iniure of Inemyis. thus was It found expedient þat posthumius consul remane in rome to put all þe names of þame in writt

¹ cetejanis.² Romane (!).³ difficulte.⁴ cuming.⁵ fulischly.⁶ till.⁷ invironyt.⁸ tribill.⁹ effray.¹⁰ into þe.¹¹ extreme.¹² saif.

þat may bere wappynnys and armoure, And als to send titus
 quintius proconsul *witþ* ane power baith of Romanis and vtheris
 þare confederate freyndis In support of spurius consul. to per-
 furnis þis batall, baith þe latynis, hernikis, and cietezanis of
 5 antium war *commandit* to gif þare maist reddy¹ support. (V)
 mony motiouns & grete assaltis war maid in þare dayis, baith
 on þe ta² parte and þe tothir; for þe Inemyis, confiding in þare
 multitude, assalezet be mony slichtis and wayis þe Romane
 pussance, as Insufficient³ to resist þare Invasions. for *nocht*
 10 alanerlie þai assegeit⁴ þe romane tentis, bot als held baith ane
 power to spuleþe ythandlie the romane landis, and sustenit ane
 garnisoun of armit men to tak þe ciete, gif ony gude fortoun
 had occurrit. Thus was lu. valerius left in rome to defend þe
 toвне, and posthumius consul send to⁵ resist þe Incursions of
 15 Inemyis; And sa na thing was pretermittit þat mycht proffitt or
 avaunce þe ciete be Ingyne and lauboure. within þe ciete was
 walking, and vtouth þe portis stude garnisouns of armyt men
 arrayit on þe wallis. Attowr, þe thing þat was necessare in sic
 effray, þat Is to say, þe vacance * of lawis was *commandit*. (213).
 20 quhill sic thingis occurrit, spurius furius þe consul held him
 quiet in þe begynnyng, and sufferit him to be segeit *witþ*
 Inemyis; bot at last he Ischit at þe grete porte of his tentis,
 and spuleþete his Inemyis liand but ordoure. And howbeit he
 mycht haue diffait⁶ þame eselie, he tuke sic fere þat he persewit
 25 na forther, in aventure his tentis war left in dangere or tane be
 Inemyis. In þe mene tyme furius, legate and brothir to þe
 consul, followit sa feirsleie on⁷ þe chace, þat he considerit
 nowthir | how his freyndis desisting fra þe chace war returnit p. 234.
 to þare tentis, Nor ȝit how Inemyis war following on his bak.
 30 ffurius, on þis wise excludit fra all supporte, eftir þat he had
 assailȝit mony wayis to returne to þe tentis, was slane fechtand
 with grete manhede to þe dede. Als sone as furius consul was
 aduertist of his brotheris slauchter, he enforcit him self to batall,
 and with mare folie þan⁸ wisdomes Ieoperde him self amyð his

¹ Rady.² vnsufficient.³ till.⁴ vpoun.⁵ tone.⁶ segit.⁷ dissaut (!).⁸ nor.

Inemyis; for he was hurte at þis Ieoperde, and nocht but grete
 difficulte¹ rescoursit. this mysaventure deieckit the curage of
 his army, and made his Inemyis mare feirþ and bald þan afore.
 The Inemyis, enragit In maist furie be slauchter of þe legate
 and hurting of þe consul, mycht na wayis be resistit. thus þe 5
 romanis, nowthir equale to þare Inemyis in curage nor pussance,
 war segeit agane with new violence; and so þare commoun wele
 had cummyñ in extreme dangere, war nocht þai war rescoursit be
 titus quintius; for he come to þame with ane army of latynis
 and hernikis. quintius eftir his cummyñ sett on þe bakkis of 10
 þe equis, quhilkis war feirsly segeand þe romane tentis, and
 schawin with grete derisioun þe hede of þe legate. finalie, throw
 ane signe þat quintius made² on dreich, þe romanis Ischit fra
 þare tentis, and be haisty discomfitoure slew ane grete nowmer
 of Inemyis. In þe samyn tyme the equis liand for spuleze of þe 15
 romane landis war discomfist with lang chace; bot þe slauchter
 was litill; for posthumius consul discomfist þame be sindri hid
 buschementis, quhilkis war laid³ in ganand place⁴ be him afore,⁴
 eftir þat þai war skatterit & drivand away grete pray of gudis.
 So quhen þir equis war skatterit here and þare in sindri cum- 20
 panyis, þai come be aventure on quintius returnand eftir his
 victorie fra þe woundit consul. Thus quintius revengeit lustelie
 (214). baith þe hurting of þe consul & [þe] *slauchter of þe legate and
 vthir cumpanjeons slane with him for þe tyme. mony slauchteris,
 feirþ fechting, & discomfitouris occurrit in þir dayis on athir 25
 side. It is difficil til⁵ afferme with sikkir nowmer in sa anciant
 p. 235. historie | how mony war slane or tane. Ancias valerius historio-
 graphoure sayis þare was slane of romanis [in þe hernik landis]
 j^m iiij^c,⁶ of equis þat spulezete þe romane landis slane be posthu-
 mius consul iiij^c,⁷ and of þe said equis war slane be quintius 30
 iiij^m ij^cxxx.⁸

¹ deficulte.² *The rest of this quair in B. (pp. 261-272) is supplied by the writer of Books IV. and V. : see**the Introduction.*⁴—⁴ before him.⁶ ane thowsand foure hundreth.⁷ foure hundreth.⁸ foure thowsand twa hundreth and thretty.³ liand.⁵ to.

Of sindry prodiges and of grete mortalite among þe
 romanis; how the hernikis & latynis cummand in
 supporte of romanis aganis þe wolchis and equis
 war slane in grete nowmer, And of þe pietuous
 5 lament of romanis to þare goddis. Ca. iij.¹

At the returnyng of quintius to rome, the vacance of lawis
 ceissit. In þis tyme the hevynnys apperit birmand with mony
 flammys²; mony vncouth & strange mervellis apperit, terribill to
 þe sight of man, and be vane mynassing made þe pepill astonist.
 10 to remove þir terrouris war institute þe feries continewing thre
 dayis togidder. the tempillis war replete w^{it}h men and women
 makand humyll supplicatioun to þare goddis to gif pece and
 perdoun to þare offence. Eftir þis þe hernikis & latynis war
 plesandlie rewardit be þe senate for þare faithfull and honest
 15 vassalege³ done in defence of romanis, and returnit hame. the
 thowsand armyt men, quhilkis come fra Antium in supporte of
 romanis, war send hame w^{it}h dishonour, for þai come to late.
 (VI) At þe begynnyng of þe nixt ȝere the comitis war haldin in
 kalendis of sextile. Lucius Ebucius and paulus seruilius war
 20 made consulis. the tyme was richt sorowfull, & þe ȝere richt
 pestilentius baith to burgh & land, to na leß mortalite of man
 þan beist. The pest raiß in þe ciete throw fere of vncouth
 Inemyis, Invading þe cuntre with * continuall Iniuris; for þe (215).
 landwart pepill for fere þareof come to duell within þe ciete
 25 with þare bestial & gudis. And sa þe corruptioun and filth of
 sindri beistis, quhilkis war walkit and kepit togidder in narrow
 houß⁴ and stretis within þe ciete during þe hete of somer,
 opprest baith þe citejanis & landwart pepill with vncouth and
 Insufferabill odoure. als þare frequent and contagius cumpanyis,
 30 Ilkane be commixtioun | of vthir, spred þe Infirmitis Ilk day p. 236.
 mare and mare. quhil þe romanis war soroufull, and of skarß

¹ om.² flambis.³ wassilaige.⁴ housis.

pussance to sustene þir Calamyteis, come haistelie þe legatis of herykis, schewing how þe wolchis and equis war enterit with two strang armyis in þare landis, and has waistit þare fronteris & bordouris with grete cruelteis; and war nocht þe thyn conuencioun of senate to consell was ane sikkir testimonial þat þe 5 ciete was in troubil, thair ansuer¹ had bene more displesand þan It was. for be þe samyn ansuere baith þe herykis and latynis war commandit to defend þare landis be þare awne² pussance; for the romanis be suddane Ire of goddis war afflikkit and trublit *with* maist sorowfull infirmiteis. Nochtþeles, gif þe pest slakit 10 ane litill, þai suld glaidly send support (as þai usit afore) to þe³ confederate freyndis. Thir legatis, departing fra þe hernikis and latynis with sorouful message, brocht ane mare sorouful ansuere, þat hernikis and latynis sall sustene be þare awne² pussance þe batall aganis þe wolchis and equis, quhilk þai *mycht* evil sustene, 15 howbeit þe hale romane power war concurrand with þame. The Inemyis maid na tary in þe hernik landis, bot *with* awfull buschementis come in þe romane landis, and waistit þe samyn but ony Iniure of batall or resistance. The Inemyis, seand na man armit nor vnarmit⁴ to resist þame, & þe feildis desert, but ony garnisoun 20 or manuring of landwart pepill, come to þe third stane in þe gabyne way. Than was Ebucius, ane of þe consullis, dede in þe ciete, and his colleig seruilius sa wery þat he *mycht* skarsly draw his aynd. the maist parte of all þe faderis & princis of þe ciete war dede in þe pest, and þe men of armes sa halelie distroyit, þat 25 þai war nocht onelie Insufficient to raise sic ane armye aganes⁵ þare Inemyis as⁶ þe danger presentlie requirit, bot als *mycht* skarsly mak quiet staciouns in þe ciete. The senaturis bure þe (216). charge of walking* be þameself, specially sic as war 30 young and p. 237. vnbrokin with infirmiteis. Thir⁷ circui/cioun and charge þat was wont to be gevin to the edilis war gevin to small pepill. Siclike þe maieste of þe office consulare was gevin to þe pepill. (VII) every thingis war desert In þe ciete but ony hede or pussance. Nochtþeles fortoun and vthir goddis of þe ciete made sic

¹ thir ansueris, *A.*² awne.³ pair.⁴ onarmit.⁵ as, *A.*⁶ & as, *A.*⁷ þe.

defence, þat þai made þe myndis of Wolchis and equis gevin
 erare to spuleȝe than to vther conqueß or knichtlie vassaleȝe;¹
 for *nocht* onelie þe saidis wolchis & equis war disparit to tak
 the ciete be assalt, bot als had na curage to cum towart þe
 5 wallis. for þe nobill palacis and towris musturit so aufully
 within þe ciete, þat þai drewe þe myndis of equis and wolchis
 fra all segeing, In sic wise þat ane huge clamoure raif amang
 þare tentis, Ilkane saying to vthir: "to quhat effect remane we
 here, waistand oure tyme amang vile cariouns of men and beistis,
 10 sen we may Invaid þe hale landis of tusculanis, quhilkis are
 ane pepil full of riches and gudis?" Incontinent þai rasis þare
 baneris, & *witȝ* thortour passage come throw þe labicanis to þe
 tusculane montanis. thus was all þe preiße and ordinance of
 þare batall turnit fra þe romanis alanerlie on þe tusculanis.
 15 The hernikis and latynis, no thing knowing þe departing of
 wolchis and equis fra rome, war movit *nocht* onelie with com-
 miseratioun and piete, bot als havand grete schame in þare
 myndis þat þai *nocht* resistit þe commoun Inemyis Invading þe
 romane ciete, nor ȝit made þame supporte quhen þai war segeit;
 20 & þarefore þai come with þare awfull armyis to rome, & finding
 na Inemyis at þare cummyng þare,² þai followit on þe said
 Inemyis in all partis quhare þare fame & fute-steppis schew; and
 finalie met þame descending fra þe tusculane montanis to þe
 Albane vail. þocht þis batail was fochtyn with equale power
 25 on all sidis, ȝit þe felicite of latynis and hernikis was na thing
 fortunate to þare confederate freyndis. of romanis was na leß
 nowmer perist in þe ciete be þis soroufull pest, þan was slane
 of þare confederate freyndis in þis forésaid batall. The tothir
 consul seruilius | was also deceissit, with mony of all þe nobill p. 238.
 30 men in þe ciete, sic as marcius vallerius, Titus Virginius,
 divinouris; seruilius sulpitius, principale³ of þe courte; And of
 small estatis deceissit innoumerabill. sa fer sprang þe rage of
 þis * mortalite, that þe senate was disparit of ony mortale remeid, (217).
 & þarefore commandit þe cietezanis to pas *witȝ* þare wyiffis &
 35 barnis to þe templis to convert þare hartis with suffrage and

¹ wassilaige.² cumming to rome.³ principalis, *botȝ*.

votis to þare goddis, þat þai mycht be humyll suplicationoun
 purches þe peace of goddis. to þis effect, becaus Ilk persoun
 was trublit *witʰ* propir infirmitie, þe pepill war sa halelie brocht
 out be public auctorite, þat all þe tempillis in þe ciete war
 replete. The soroufull moderis fell grufelingis to þe ground, 5
 sowpand þe templis *witʰ* þare hare, pietuously¹ desiring þe goddis
 to fynys þare celestiall wraith, and put ane end to þis pest.
 (VIII) fra thens þe pepill began Ilk day pece & pece² to con-
 valeis in þare bodyis fra all maledyis,³ owther becaus þe peace of
 goddis was þan purchest, or ellis becaus [þe] venemuß⁴ are & 10
 wikkit seson⁵ war ourepast. And þarefore þai sett þare myndis
 for administracioun of public materis. ffinally quhen certane
 Interregnis war past, publius Valerius publicola, on þe thrid⁶
 day eftir þat he was made regent, was chosin consul, & publius
 lucresius tricipitinus made his colleig before þe thrid Idis of 15
 sextile.

how þe Wolchis war discomfist and slane in grete
 nowmer be Veturius and Lucresius, Romane con-
 sullis⁷; and how grete dissension rais betuix þe
 tribunis & consullis of rome. Ca. iiij.⁸ 20

Now was the romane ciete nocht onelie pussant enewch⁹ to
 resist, bot als to persew þare Inemyis *witʰ* batell; and þarefore
 þai *promittit* haisty support to hernikis, quhilk schew þe Inemyis
cummyng in þare landis. sone eftir, baith þe consullis went
witʰ twa armyis. veturius was send to Invaid þe wolchis, and 25
 tricipitinus was ordanit to resist þe Incursiouns made be Inemyis
 p. 239. on þe freyndis of romane pepil; | and for þat cauß he past na
 forther than þe hernik landis. Veturius at his first batall dis-
 comfist and chasit the Wolchis; Bot lucresius, quhilk abade

¹ petuisly.² malideis.³ vekit sessoun.⁴ capitanis.⁵ ynewch.⁶ peiß and peiß.⁷ venomouß.⁸ ferd.⁹ om.

with þe hernikis, was dissaut be ane cum*pany of thevis. Thir (218).
 thevis musturit so to his sicht, þat he followit on þame, quhil he
 was cummyn abone þe montanis namyt prenestyne; and eftir
 [þat] he was discendit in þe law valis, þai waistit þe landis
 5 prenestyne and gabyne w^{it}h Importabil hereschippis; And dis-
 cending fra þe gabine landis, þai waistit þe montanis tusculanis on
 þe samyn maner. Thus was ane huge terroure brocht to rome;
 nocht þat romanis war Insufficient to resist þe Invasioun of
 Inemyis, bot erare throw þe suddane effray. quintius fabius,
 10 quhilk was left president in þe ciete, be garnisouns of 3ounge
 Vailjeant men, weil arrayit for euery aventuris, made all thing
 sikkir w^{it}h gude tranquillite in þe ciete. for fere hereof the
 Inemyis chargit þame full of pray and gudis reft from sindri
 landis adiacent, & durst nocht approche to þe ciete. ffinalie,
 15 quhen þai war returnyng hame, chargit (as said Is) w^{it}h infinite
 pray of riches, scatterit in sindri buschement[is], for ay þe ferrer
 þai war departit fra rome þai tuke þe leß respect to þare array, þai
 come vnwerlie¹ on lucresius armye, quhilk was baith aduertist of
 all þare Iornayis² & weill arrayit to gif þame batall. And þocht
 20 lucresius was in few nowmer In compare of þe huge nowmer
 & multitude of Inemyis, 3it becaus þai war astonist be þis
 suddane affray, he assale3et³ þame feirsleie, & brocht þame to sa
 hie discomfitoure, þat he chasit þame quhil þai war inclusit within
 ane vale but ony esy outpassage, quhare þe name of wolchis was
 25 nere vterlie distroyit, for of þame was slane x^m iiij^e lxx, þat is to
 say, baith in þe batall and chais⁴, and j^m ij^e l.⁵ tane presonar.
 xiiij standartis war won, as sum autouris writis. alwayis, how-
 beit sum thing be ekit abone þe Iuste mesure, þe slauchter was
 grete. The consull eftir þis victorie returnit with huge pray of
 30 riches to his tentis. Sone eftir, þe consullis met togiddir w^{it}h
 baith þare armyis. The Wolchis & equis eftir þir afflictious
 colleckit þe residew of þare pussance togiddir. This was the
 thrid | batall þat was strikkin be romanis in þe said 3ere, & þe p. 240.
 victorie succedit⁶ ay vnder ane fortoun, for þare Inemyis war ay

¹ onwarly.³ assail3et.⁵ ane thowsand twa hundreth and fyfty.² Iornaiß.⁴ chase.⁶ succeding, A.

- vincust and þare tentis tane. (IX) thus war þe romanis brocht to þare old estate. Thir feliciteis succeding continually amang þe romanis rasit haistelie grete seditioun in þe ciete. In þis 3ere gneus tirentillus was tribune of pepil, quhilk, traisting þe tyme ganand to dref all materis pertenand to þe actioun tribuniciane 5
- (219). (becaus þe consullis war nocht * present in þe ciete), began sindri dayis to accuse þe pride of faderis afore þe pepill, oft tymes Invaying aganis þe empire of consullis, and said þare auctorite was oure hie & nocht to be sufferit in ony fre ciete; for þocht þe names of consullis war nocht sa odius as þe names of kingis, ¹ 3it 10 þare empire & auctorite was mare cruell þan is ony empire of kingis; ¹ for afore was bot ane ² king regnand abone þe pepill, bot þan rang two with sa Inmoderate and infinite power, þat becaus þai haue opin renzeis at þare awne plessour, ³ þai exerce þe lawis to þe grete dredoure, punytioun, and fere alanerlie of þe 15 small pepill. herefore þat þis superflew licence of consullis sall nocht remane perpetuall, nor 3it noysum to þe pepill, he wald promulgate ane law be quhilk five men sall be create to lymyt þe power of consullis, with sic ressouns ⁴ þat quhatsumeir law þe pepil ordanis for þare commodite, þe samyn sall be vsit alanerlie 20 be þe consulis, and sa þe will and licence of consullis sal nocht be repute in tymes cummyng for ony lawis to þe pepill. Als sone as þis law was promulgate, becaus þe faderis dred to ressaue ony 3oik ⁵ of scrutide in absence of þe consullis, quintius fabius, president of þe ciete, convenit þe senate, and in þare presence 25 Invayit sa cruelly baith aganis þe law foresaid and aganis þe makare þareof, þat na leß manassing and ferefull terrouris was done to þis tribune be fabius him allane þan baith þe consullis had bene present. for he allegeit þis tribune lay in wait quhill he saw his tyme, and þan Invadit þe commoun weill. forthir, 30
- p. 241. gif þe goddis in þare wraith | had gevin ⁶ ony sik seditious ane man ⁶ (as he was) during the tyme þat þe ciete was Invadit baith with pest and externe weris, thare ciete mycht nocht haue bene of pussance to haue resist ⁷ þare Inemyis; for quhen þare ciete

¹—¹ om.² a.³ pleseir.⁴ ressone.⁵ 3ok.⁷ resistit.⁶—⁶ als sedicious a man.

was opprest with contagiis infirmiteis, & þare consulis deceissit, he mycht haue bene ane sikkir gide to þe wolchis & equis to haue segeit þe ciete. als he mycht haue made lawis in þat tyme at his plesure¹ to haue abrogate the dignite consular. "fforthir
 5 as þe mater presently occurrit,² quhat thing is³ vnlefull to him? for gif þe consullis attempt ony thing throw arrogance or cruelte aganis ony ane of þe cietezanis, Than sall this tribune sett ane day to þe consull to accuse him criminably afore þe pepill. Thus sal þe pepill be Iuge in þare awne * mater, Nochtwithstanding (220).
 10 þat þe offence Is committit aganis sum of þame self. Thir and mony sic thingis ar odius and Importabill be superflew power of þe auctorite tribuniciane, & nocht be ony power of dignite consulare; for þocht þe trubil þat þe tribunis rasis afore be pecifijt, and þe pepill reconseld⁴ to þe faderis, zit þis tribune
 15 Intendis to bring þe samyn trubil In quhilk It was afore. Nochtwithstanding I will nocht require him to desist fra þe purpois þat he has assailzeit, Bot I desire 3ow, þe residewe of tribunis" (said fabius) "first to considder þis auctorite tribuniciane was devisit to þe vniuersall proffitt and supporte of þe ciete, and
 20 nocht to þe vniuersale damage þareof. 3e ar create tribunis to be supportaris of pepill, and nocht to be Inemyis to þe faderis. It is richt miserabil to ws, and odius to 3ow, to suffer oure public weill to be Invadit. herefore we desire 3ow nocht to miniß 3our richtis, bot erare to mynys 3oure Invy, and to concur sa with
 25 3oure colleig, þat þis mater þat Is be him attemptit be deferrit to þe cummyng of consulis; to þat fyne þat þe Wolchis and equis oure perpetual Inemyis Invade ws nocht þe erare with feirß batall, þat oure consullis ar perrist in þe pest þe 3ere afore past." Than þe remanent tribunis began to dresß þis mater with tirintillus
 30 þare colleig, & continewit þe samyn to þe cummyng of consullis. Sone eftir, bayth þe consullis returnit to rome. (X) lucretius returnit with | huge pray of gudis and Infinite honour. his glore p. 242. was þe more ekit, þat eftir his returnyng þe hale pray of gudis conquest be him was left thre dais in þe place callit campus
 35 martius, to þat fyne þat þe samyn beand patent to þe sicht of

¹ plesoir.² occurrit.³ thingis salbe finally.⁴ reconsellit.

pepill, Ilk man mycht haue knowlege of his awne gudis & tak
 away þe samy. The residew of þe saidis gudis, quilkis had na
 Iuste awnaris, war sald and þe proffitt þareof confiskit¹ to þe
 public tressoure. Ane tryumphe was decernit be generall consent
 to lucretius; Nochtþeles It was deferrit certane dayis throw 5
 persute þat þe tribune made twiching þe law tirintill. thus was
 þe [said] law postponit ane quhill afore þe senate and pepill,
 Bot at last þe tribune gaif place to þe maieste of consulis. Sone
 eftir þe glore of tryumphe was gevin baith to seruilus and his
 army; for he tryumphit of þe wolchis and equis, and mony 10
 (221). legiouns followit him in þe said tryumphe. * It was grantit to
 þe tothir consul to pas reiosand throw þe ciete but ony band of
 armyt men in his cumpany.

Off vncouth and terribil prodigies, and of þe Inter-
 pretatioun of þame be divinouris. Of feirß con- 15
 tentiouns betuix þe consullis and tribunis concer-
 nyng þe law Tirintill, and rasing of armyis aganis
 þe wolchis and Equis; how Cesio quintius for his
 persute aganis þe pepill in fauoure of þe faderis
 was banist, and all his faderis gudis confiscate 20
 amang þe tribunys. Ca. v.

In the 3ere following the law tirintill was renewit be consent
 of þe hale collegis² of tribunis, & made publius volumnius and
 seruilus sulpicius þe new consulis astonist. In þis 3ere þe
 hevynnis apperit birnand; The erde trymblit with grete mo- 25
 tioun; men trowis ane kow spak, howbeit na credit was gevin
 [þairto], In þe 3ere afore. amang vthir prodigies mony lumpis
 of flesch fel out of þe are In maner of [ane] schoure. þe maist
 parte þareof war consumyt haistely be ane huge nowmer of
 p. 243. fowlis. The residew of þis flesch lay mony | dayis eftir skatterit 30

¹ confiscat.² colleige.

in¹ þe erde, but ony corrupcioun or hevy odoure following. for
 fere of þir prodigies, the solempne preistis, namyt the two men,
 war *commandit* to serche þe werkis of Cibil,² be quhilke³ was
 foundin³ þat þe ciete sall ressaue *damme* be convention of
 5 vncouth pepil. ffor thir responsis þe romane pepil war *com-*
mandit to ceif³ fra all seditioun, to þat fyne þat na slaughter
 nor feirþ persute war made in þe hie partis of þe ciete. The
 tribunis belevit nocht bot þir doingis alanerlie wrocht to em-
 pesch þare lawis; throw quhilke apperit na litil contentioun to
 10 follow. And þat þe samyn trubil sall continew þere in þere,
 was schewin be ambassiatouris⁴ of hernikis þat þe equis &
 wolchis (howbeit þare pussance was latelie brokin) war makand
 new provisioun of batall, & has send þe maist parte of þare
 power to Antium. Als þe remanent anciatis and Inhabitantis
 15 þareof made public consellis* and conventiouns amang þame (222).
 self, And þarefore antium was þe begynnyng of all rebelloun
 made be equis & wolchis aganis þe romanis. Sone eftir þat
 þir wourdis war said afore the senate, ane army was rasis with
 diligence, & the charge of batall ressaute be þe consullis, þat
 20 ane to pas aganis þe wolchis and þis vthir aganis þe Equis. on
 þe contrare parte was allegit be þe tribunis þat þir novellis con-
 cernyng þe weris of wolchis war nocht bot vane fabillis, and þe
 hernikis war nocht bot subornate be þare affectioun. Apperit
 þarefore nocht onelie þe romane liberte to be depressit⁵ with
 25 force of violence, bot als be crafty slichtis. It was forther
 nocht to be traistit þat þe wolchis and equis, sen sa huge
 slaughter bene recentlie made on þame, may frelie move ony
 were aganis þe romanis. Apperis þarefore na weris without
 þe romanis serche new Inemyis. It is nocht to be traistit þat
 30 be wolchis and equis ony perrell may occur. It is þarefore
 grete Iniure to hald þe toun of Antium suspect and Infamit, It
 beand þare faithful and trewe Colonie. Thus has þe consullis
 denuocit batell wrangwisly on þe Innocent anciatis, & ledis
 þarefore batall nocht aganis þare Inemyis bot aganis | the p. 244.
 35 romane pepill, and chasis þame be manifest violence out of

¹ one.² bukis of sibill.³ funding.⁴ ambassatouris.⁵ deprest.

þare ciete, to þat fyne þat þe consullis may revenge þe haterent
 þat þai bare aganis þe tribunis be *proscriptioun* onelie of romane
 cietezanis. forthir þe consullis gevis þame to na *vthir* besineß
 bot to empesch þe law tirintill, & þarefore prayit þe pepill sen
 þai stude Peciably¹ in þare awne houß² with þare beltit govnis, 5
 to suffir nowthir þame self to be eieckit fra possessioun of þe
 ciete, nor zit ressaue þe 3oik³ of *seruitude*. And gif þare curage
 war nocht decaid⁴ þai sall want na supporte; for all þe
 tribunis sall stand hale at þare opinioun. Na dangere nor
 perrell was appering be fere of vncouth Inemyis, for þe goddis 10
 made sic purviance in þe 3ere afore, þat þe romane liberte was
 surelie defendit. (XI) þus was said be þe tribunis. On þe
 tothir side war þe consullis sitting afore þe tribunis, and gadder-
 ing the knichtis for ane armye. than come þe tribunis with
 grete cumpanyis to empesch þe rasing of þir armyis. belive ane 15
 certane of þame war summound be þe consulis to haue experi-
 ence of⁵ þe mater. followit sone ane deforcement, for euery
 (223). man þat was * tane be þe *seriand* at command of þe consullis
 was put to liberte be þe tribunis. Thus mycht Iustice haue na
 place, bot Ilkman castand him to execute his purpois alanerlie 20
 be way of dede. All wayis, in sa fer as þe tribunis empeschit
 þe rasing of þe army, In safer þe consullis empeschit þe law
 tirintill during al þe *commitiall* dayis. Thus began þe debate
 more feirß; for quhen the tribunis had commandit the pepill
 to departe, the consullis commandit þame to tary. Attoure, 25
 þe wise and agit faderis wald nocht mell with þis besines; for
 apperandlie It was nocht done be prudent consell, bot erare be
 fuliche audacite. Than þe consullis tuke diligent keping þat
 þare maieste within þis trubill suld nocht be patent to Iniuris.
 The sammyn tyme was in þe ciete ane feirß and hardy childe, 30
 namyt Ceso quintius, discending of Illuster lynnage, wicht of
 body and stout of curage; and beside mony his excellent giftis
 of nature, he did mony notabil and valezeant dedis with his
 p. 245. handis, | And had sic eloquence that nane vthir was mare

¹ peaceably.² housis.³ 3ok.⁴ deokayit.⁵ Here a portion of the text is wanting
in B.: see the Introduction.

reddy of wit and hand to ony purpois in Iugement. Quhen
 his nobill Cesó was enterit in þe courte amang þe agit faderis,
 he stude vp apperandlie of mare preemynence þan was ony of
 þe laif; for he semyt as he war berand all þe dictaturies and
 5 digniteis consulare in his onelie voce & pussance, and be þe
 samyn sustenit baith all þe haterent of tribunis and þe preis of
 pepill. be vassalege of his Illuster campioune oft tymes war þe
 tribunis dounge out of Iugement, and þe small pepill chasit
 & put fra þare purpois. quhat euer he was þat met him (gif
 10 he war of þe opinioun of tribunis or þe ¹ pepill) he departit weill
 basit,² and depulezeit of his clething. Apperit þus, gif sic thingis
 war sufferit be him, þe law made latelie be þe tribune suld fynys
 & expire. Aulus Virginius, þe principall man of þe colleig of
 tribunis, seand þe residewe of þe tribunis astonist & violentlie
 15 strikkin be Cesó,³ assignit ane day to þe said Cesó to be accusit
 criminably ⁴ afore the pepill; And zit þe feirs sprete of Cesó
 was mare inflammyt þan affrayit be þir doingis. for he sett him
 þan mare feirslie þan afore to resist þe said law; And noch
 allanerly he rebutit oft tymes þe small pepill, bot als persewit
 20 þe tribunis as It had bene w^{it} Iust batall. Than þe tribunis
 sufferit him frelie to do quhat him list, That ilk Iniure beand
 accumulate abone vthir mycht nuriß ane mater of mare Invy
 and haterent afore þe pepill; And in þe mene tyme þai be*gan (224).
 to publis þe law Tirintill, erare to provoik þe audacite⁵ of Cesó
 25 to ma displesouris þan in ony esperance⁶ to pecify þe samyn.
 mony thingis war done and said be 3ounge men vnprudentie
 aganis Cesó; zit þe law was resistit. þan said Aulus Virginius
 in þis wise: "3e may consider weill (O quirites), ⁷ 3e may noch
 haue 3oure law establit⁷ sa lang as Cesó Is 3oure cite3ane. To
 30 quhat purpois speik I of ony law? Se 3e noch how Cesó
 resistis to 3our liberte, and passis þe terquinis in pride? Abide
 quhil he be create dictator or consull, and þan sal he be fundin
 richt noysum to 3oure ciete, sen he now beand bot ane private

¹ *B. begins again (p. 273);
 the hand is No. 3.*

² baist.

³ seso.

⁴ -abillie.

⁵ audicite.

⁶ asperance.

⁷ — þat 3oure law sall
 never be astablit.

- p. 246. man regnis now *wit* sa proude | empire abone 3ow." mony of
 þe small pepill affirmit þir wourdis of þe tribune, complenyng
 þame self oft tymes violentlie strikin and rebutit be þis Cesó,
 and þarefore persuadit þe tribune þe more feirsly to persew his
 accioun. (XII) now was þe day of Iugement þat was sett to 5
 cesó¹ *cummyn*. þan apperit to þe pepill þat þare liberte de-
 pendit onlie on þe dampnatioun of Cesó. Thus was Cesó¹ con-
 strenit to seik supporte of freyndis. mony grete princis of þe
 ciete assistit to him, amang quham was titus quintius capitól-
 inus, his tendir Cousing, quhilk was thryis consul afore. This 10
 ti. quint[i]us began to reherß afore þe pepill mony vailþeant &
 wourthy² dedis done be cesó,¹ Affirmand eik þat in al þe
 lynage and houß of quintius nor 3it in þe romane ciete was nane
 of sa hie and provin vertewe as þe said Cesó; allegiand als þat
 þe said cesó was first made man of armis vnder him, & in his 15
 presence oft tymes has fochtín vailþeantlie³ in defence of his
 armye. Attoure, þe said Cesó rescoursit be his singular man-
 hede spurius furius fra extreme leoperdie and dangere of Inemyis.
 fforther nane was amang all þe romane ciete3anis þat has decorit
 þe *commoun* weill *wit* mare honest vassalege þan has þe said 20
 Cesó. amang sindri vtheris (quhilk3 assistit to Cesó) was pub-
 lius lucesius, consul in þe 3ere afore, schynand 3it *wit* recent
 glore of his tryumphe and victorie abone the wolchis. This
 lucesius began to gif ane parte of his loving to cesó, rehersand
 þe batallis and vale3eand dedis done be him baith in þare ex- 25
 peditiouns and in þe front of batall; and sen þe said Cesó was
 dotate *wit* sa mony excellent giftis of fortoun and nature, he
 exhortit⁴ þe pepill to suffir him to be erar3 ciete3ane of þare
 (225). ciete þan of ony vthir townis or landis adiacent; * for he sal
 nocht fail to be ane sikkir targe to quhatsumeuir ciete or pepil 30
 quhare he *cummys*. Attoure,¹ his grete audacite & feirß
 sprete (for þe quhilk he Is maist hatit afore þe pepil) sal ay
 decreß be *cummyn* of age, and in place of his ferocite sal rise
- p. 247. Ilk day gude counsel mare and mare, as | thing maist desirit to

¹ seso.² wailþeand & vorthy.³ fouchtin wailþeandlie.⁴ exharttit.

þame; and sen vertew¹ euery day raiß mare and mare in him, and all vice evanissing,² he prayit þe pepill to suffir þis Ceso to leif in þe ciete quhil he war temperate be age. amang sindri vthir þat lauborit for this Ceso was lu. quintius Citynnatus³

5 his fader, quhilk wald *nocht* repete⁴ the vailþeant dedis done be his son, in aventure þe samyn suld haue renewit more Indignacioʷn afore þe pepill þan afore, bot desirit alanerlie mercy and perdoun to his errouris⁵ and his þoutheid, and so to saif his liffe for his saik, sen he neuer offendit to þame in worde nor

10 dede. Nochtþeles þe haterent and dredour þat þai consauit aganis þis Ceso war sa Ingravit⁶ in þare myndis, þat þai war repugnant to his desiris, sum parte for schame, and sum parte for fere. mony of þame complenit baith þame self and þare freyndis violentlie strikkin be him, and þarefore desirit him to

15 be Iugeit to þe deith. (XIII) abone þe *commoun* Invie of pepill ane cryme was allegeit aganis him richt noysum, quhilk marcus wolchius,⁷ sum tyme tribune of pepill, testifyt, allegeand quhen þe grete rage of pest began to ceiß in þe ciete, he come be aventure on ane cumpanye of þoung vndantit men, amang

20 quhom was Ceso, liand (as apperit) vnder wait for reif or ellis slauchter of passingeris in ane place namyt subura; and þis Ceso Incontinent with his curst cumpany sett on him & his eldest brother, quhilk was *nocht* wele conualescit eftir his maladie, and straik him sa violentlie þat he *within* few dayis

25 eftir deceissit.⁸ howbeit þis wolchius durst *nocht* persew þis accioun for fere of þe consullis, quhilk[is] favorit þe said Ceso, This wolchius made þe pepill sa *commov*it be þir wordis, þat Ceso eschapit narrolie vnslane be þare furie. Incontinent Virgineus *commandit* the *seri*and to apprehend Ceso, and put

30 him in Irnis. Nochtþeles þe faderis and grete princis of þe ciete refusit. þan said ti[tus] quintius in þis maner. "Ane man to quham þe day of Jugement is sett suld *nocht* be violet⁹ quhill he war convickit and condampnit." Virgineus ansuerit, "I

¹ wertu.² wise avanasing.³ citinnatis.⁴ repute.⁵ aroris.⁶ Ingrame (!).⁷ mertius Bolchius.⁸ desesit.⁹ wiolait.

wil *nocht* slay him, becaus he Is *nocht* condampnit; bot I will
 (226). *kepe him in [ane] festynens, quhil þe day be cummyn þat he
 p. 248. may be punyst & slane afore þe pepill, as he | þat slew ane
 romane citezane." the residew of tribunis (quhilkis war as-
 semblit in þis mater) temperat þare sentence be ane mydway, 5
 defending þat Ceso suld be put in Irnys, bot þat he sall fynd
 plegeis vnder sowmes of monye to bring him agane to Iugement
 afore the pepill at þe day assignit. 3it It was in dout how mekill
 þe sowme was þat þe pepill wald haue plege for; bot at last It
 was referrit to þe senate. þus was Ceso kepit quhil þe faderis¹ 10
 war consultit. the faderis¹ commandit þat ane plege sal be
 gevin to þe tribunis to entir him at þe day assignit vnder pane of
 iij^m brasin pennyis; [and] finalie þai ordanit x plegis to be takin
 for þis sovme. Ceso was þe first man þat euer gaif plegeis for
 ony offence in rome. Als sone as Ceso was deliuerit in þis 15
 maner fra Iugement of tribunis, he departit be avise of þe con-
 sullis in exile amang þe tuschis. quhen þe day of Iugement was
 cummyn, he was accusit *Nochtwithstanding* his absence; and
 þocht his freyndis schew in Iugement þat he was frelie departit
 of his awne will in exile, 3it þare excusacioun na thing avalit; 20
 for virginus and þe remanent tribunis tuke þis money afore
 plegit sa halely² þat þai but ony mercy apprissit³ and sauld all
 þe gudis pertenant to lu[tius] quintius Citinnatus, fader to
 Ceso, throw quhilk þe said lu[tius] quintius was for pouerte
 constrainit⁴ to duell certane tyme be3ound tyber as ane banist 25
 man.

¹ fatherris.² haistelic.³ apricit.⁴ proverte costranit (!).

how þe faderis postponit þe law tirintil be mony (227).
 slichtis; how Appius herdonius,¹ sabyne, *witȝ*
 grete nowmer of *servandis* tuke þe capitoll; how
 mamilius, prince of latynis, come *witȝ* ane army in
 5 supporte of romanis; how herdonius¹ was slane
witȝ all his complicis, and þe capitoll rescoursit.
 Ca. vj.²

(XIV) The Iugement & proceß of þir tribuniciane lawis held
 þe ciete in sic continuall exercicioun, þat na extern weris followit
 10 in þis ȝere. the tribunis havand victorie | in þis maner, and p. 249.
 seand the faderis³ abasit be *proscriptioun* of Cesó, traistit þe
 tyme expedient to estabil eselie þe law tirintill; for þe maist
 parte of þe agit faderis has left (as apperit) þe possessioun of
 public landis. on þe tothir side, þe ȝoung faderis,⁸ sic as war
 15 companȝeouns to Cesó, nowthir parit nor ȝit mynyst þare curage.
 All wayis It came to þe grete proffitt of þe ciete, þat þai tem-
 perate⁴ in sum maner þe preið of þare violence. treuth Is, in
 þe begynnyng of þis ȝere, quhen þe law suld haue bene first
 pecifyit Eftir þe *proscriptioun* of Cesó, the ȝoung faderis⁶ war
 20 armit *witȝ* grete Oistis aganis þe tribunis, and assailȝit þame in
 sic wise þat nane of þe said tribunis myȝt do ony thing þat was
 owther wourthy to haue grete glore, Or ȝit grete haterent afore þe
 pepil. the pepill complenit, sayand ane thowsand Cesois war
 rising⁶ in þe place of ane; ȝit mony dayis eftir (sa lang as na
 25 mentioun was made of þe said law) na thing was mare soft nor
 plesand to þe pepill þan war þe faderis⁷; for þai baith salust
 þe pepill tendirly and tretit þame *witȝ* grete humanite in þare
 lugeing, And *noȝt* onelie sufferit þe tribunis to pas to þe *merket*,
 bot als to hald baith þare public & private consultatiouns quhare
 30 þai plesit but ony Interruptioun, and nowther schew þame cruell

¹ ardonius.³ *faderis*.⁵ *fatherris*.⁷ *fatheris*.² liiij.⁴ *temperrit*.⁶ *giffin*.

nor malicius to ony of þe said tribunis, bot war favoraris of þe pepill sa lang as þai wald *nocht* speik ony thing concernyng þe said law. And *nocht* alanerlie did þe tribunis all vthir besines (228) but ony trubill, bot als war *continewit* in þare officis * to þe nixt 3ere. The faderis¹ did nouthir Iniuris to the tribunis in 5 worde nor dede, & be swete behavingis² softit þe myndis of þe pepill. be þir and siclike slichtis þe law tirintill was postponit all þe 3ere following. (XV) In þe nixt 3ere þe ciete was in more tranquillite, and þan Cayus appius & pub[lius] valerius war made consullis. Na Nouellis occurrit in þis 3ere, *þocht* þe pepill tuke 10 grete sollicitude & cure to pecifye þe said law. 3it þe more þat þe 3oung faderis humyllit þame to þe pepill, þe more feirslie raiß þe

p. 250. tribunis aganis þame, to þat fyne þat be þare | criminal accusatioun þai suld mak þe said faderis þe more suspect to þe pepil; and said ane new conspiratioun was rissin, and Cesio was ressett 15 within þe cite, and daly consellis³ haldin baith to slay þe tribunis and to distroy þe pepil, and charge gevin to þe 3oung faderis be avise⁴ of þe agit faderis to abrogate and expell þe auctorige tribuniciane out of þe ciete, þat þe ciete may be brocht to þe samyn estate and gouernance as It was afore þe secessioun⁵ of 20 [þe] pepill to þe sacrate montane. and *þocht* þe romanis dred þe batell of Wolchis and equis 3erelie appering aganis þame with awful manassing,⁶ 3it þare was ane⁷ vthir new damage⁸ approcheand, howbeit It was *nocht* belevit; for appius herdonius⁹ sabyne, with ane cumpany of iiij^m v^c *servandis* and 25 banist men, tuke þe Capitoll vnder nycht, and slew euery persouns fundin in þe samyn, specially sic men as wald *nocht* tak wappynnys nor assist to his opinioun. mony pepil during þis effray ran sa effrayitlie to þe merkett, þat þe noyis and tumult þareof raiß fra ane to other, Exhorting¹⁰ þe pepil to harnes, saying 30 þe Inemyis war in þe ciete. þe consulis durst nowthir arme þe pepill for defence of þe ciete, Nor 3it durst leif thame vnarmyt; for þai knew *nocht* quhiddir¹¹ þis trubil was cummyne be externe

¹ faderis.² havyngis.³ dayly counsalis.⁴ awise, *B.*; avisit, *A.*⁵ cesessioun.⁶ minassing.⁷ a.⁸ dampnage.⁹ ardonius.¹⁰ exorting.¹¹ quheper.

- and vncouth weris or be seditioun Intestyne, nor ȝit wist quhiddir¹ þare ciete was Invadit be haterent of þare awne pepill or dissate of servandis. at last þai made þame to meis þis effray, bot þe troubil spred ay more and more be þare lauboure ;
- 5 for þe multitude of pepill was strikkin with sic dredoure þat It mycht nocht be gouernit be ony empire. ȝit finalie þe pepill tuke þare wappynnys, to þat fyne þat how beit þai knew nocht þe sikkir nowmer of Inemyis, þai mycht haue sufficient garnisoun² of armit men aganis quhatsumeuir perrell occurring. The * con- (229).
- 10 sulis richt wery, and nocht knawing quhat Inemyis þir war þan present in þe ciete, nor ȝit in quhat nowmer [þai var], past þe residew of þe nycht makand watching and garnisoun of armyt men in all partis ganand for þe sammyn. als sone as licht apperit, baith þe batall and capitane þareof war patent ; for | þan herdonius³ cryit p. 251.
- 15 furth of þe capitoll, calland þe servandis to þare liberte, and confessit him self to haue tane þe actioun of euery miserabill creature, þat all þe persouns quhilkis ar wranguisly exilit, may be recounseld agane to þe ciete, and þe servandis on þe samyn maner brocht to þare liberte ; bot he wald þe sammyn war done
- 20 erare frelie be romanis þan ony vthir wayis. and gif he couth⁴ purches nocht but repulß in þir desiris, he suld move þe wolchis and equis aganis þame, and assailþe þame with extreme Ieoperdie. (XVI) the trubill of þis damage⁵ appering was ripelie considerit be þe faderis and consulis. forthir, abone thir thingis quhilkis
- 25 occurrit presentlie, þai dred þat þir Inemyis war cummyn in þe ciete be industrie of veanis & sabinis ; for sen sa grete nowmer of Inemyis war þan present in þe ciete, þai dred þat þe sabinis & hethruschis suld cum haistelie with mony armit legiouns, & in þe menetyme þe wolchis and equis (quhilkis bene þare perpetuale
- 30 Inemyis) suld cum nocht as afore to waist þare marchis and fronteris, bot erare to tak þe ciete, quhilk for þe ta half Is nere tane ellis. mony and sindri terrouris raisß in þis mater. amang vtheris apperit maist þe terroure of servandis, Ilk man dredand to haue Inemye within his houß, to quham he mycht nocht surelie
- 35 gif credit ; and als he durst nocht haue him in defiance, In

¹ quheþer.² garmesene.³ hardonius.⁴ culd.⁵ dampnage.

aventure he war mare noysum þan afore. apperit þis present
 troubill mycht nochȝt be weill mesit be concorde. throw thir
 and mony vthir dammagis, Ilkane rising abone vthir, nowthir
 was þe tribunys dred, nor þe pepill. Thir first dammagis,¹
 rising ay mare and mare be tollerance of vthir evillis, apperit 5
 nochȝt to be mesit bot alanerlie be externe weris; ȝit abone þir
 displeseris Raiß ane vthir trubil mare Importabil and soroufull
 to þe ciete. sic furie was in þe tribunis, þat þai belevit nochȝt ony
 batall approcheand be Inemyis, bot alanerlie þe samyn to be
 ane vane ymaginacioun of faderis, feneȝeand be þare dissate þat 10
 Inemyis war enterit in þe capitoll, to draw away þe myndis of
 (230). * pepill fra persute of þe law foresaid. fforthir gif þe patricianis²
 with þare clientis and freyndis had fundin þis law afore rehersit
 anis establit,³ and sene þat all þe trubil and lauboure þat þai
 p. 252. made to emþesche þe said law was in vane, þai suld departe 15
 haistely with leß noyis þan þai come. for þir ressouns þe
 tribunis tuke counsell to estabill þe said law, & to draw þe pepill
 fra harnes. quhil sic thingis war done be þe tribunis, þe con-
 sullis convenit þe senate, for þai war mare astonist be þe tribunis
 þan be ony affray þat come in þe nycht be vncouth Inemyis. 20
 (XVII) als sone as It was schewin þat þe men of armes had left
 þare wappynnys and stacionis, publius valerius consul left his
 colleig ca[yus] claudius to Intertenye⁴ þe senate, and departit
 haistelie to þe tempillis quhare þe tribunis war, and said in þis
 wise: "O tribunis, quhat besines is þis þat ȝe Intend? ar ȝe 25
 sett to distroye the commoun weil be mocion of publius her-
 donius? Is he sa ganand to corrupt ȝow, þat has skars⁵ power
 to corrupt þe servandis? Is it plesand to ȝow to pronunce
 lawis, and to paß fra ȝoure wappynnys now quhen ȝoure Inemyis
 ar abone ȝoure hedis?" Eftir this he turnit his Orisoun fra þe 30
 tribunis to þe pepil, and said: "O quirites, gif ȝe haue na cure
 of ȝour self nor of ȝoure ciete, at leist quhy ar ȝe nochȝt commovit
 þat ȝoure goddis ar vincust and tane presoneris be ȝoure Inemyis?
 The richt hie and pussant Iupiter,⁶ þe souerane lady quene Iuno,

¹ dampnagis.² pitritianis.³ estabillit.⁴ Intertene.⁵ skers.⁶ Iubiter.

mynerva, and þe remanent goddis and goddeß¹ ar segeit. The
 tentis & garnisons of *servandis* occupijs 3oure public houß.² ar
 þir signis of ane sickir ciete, quhen sa mony Inemyis ar nocht
 allanerlie within 3oure wallis, bot als garnist in 3our touris abone
 5 3oure merket and courtis? The *commites* ar haldin in þe
 merket, and þe senate sittis in þe courte redde to gif sentence,
 as þe ciete war in pece.³ Ane vthir parte of [þe] pepill gevis⁴
 þare consultacioun as þai wald support ws be þare suffragis and
 votis. war It *nocht* bettir þat all þe power within þe ciete, þat is
 10 to say, þe faderis, þe pepill, þe consullis, þe tribunis, þe goddis
 and men, ruschit armit atanis to þe capitoll for supporte þareof,
 to deliuer and pacifye⁵ þe Illuster houß of Iupiter? O fader
 Romulus, gif to ws thy posterite, þe samyn curage and sprete, be
 quhilk þow sum tyme recoverite this houß of goddis, quhen It
 15 was tane with gold be sabynis. *command* ws to enter þe samyn
 | way as thow sum tyme enterit with * þi armye. I, *lucresius* p. 253.
 consul, sall be þe first sal follow þi futesteppis, sa fer as mortall (231).
 man may." þe last parte of his orisoun was þat he wald tak his
 wappynnys⁶ and call þe romanis to harnes; and gif ony persoun
 20 empeschis his purpoiß, quhatsumeuir he be, he has nowthir sicht
 to þe maieste of þe consulis nor 3it to power of tribunys, and is
 vnmyndefull of þe sacrate lawis. quhat euir he be þat dois þus,
 he sall be repute as Inemye of þe ciete. "quhy *commandis*
 nocht þe tribunis wapynnys⁷ to be rasis aganis herdonius þare
 25 Inemye? beleif *nocht* bot I dar do þe samyn displesoure⁸ to
 þe tribunis þat þe prince of my houß sum tyme did to the
 terquynis?" Apperit þus na thing bot extreme violence on athir
 side, and þe sedicioun of romanis to be in derisioun of Inemyis.
 Thus⁹ mycht nowthir þe law tyrintill be establith, Nor 3it mycht
 30 þe consull pas to defend þe capitoll, quhil at last þe nycht put
 end to þare debate. the tribunis gaif place to the nycht for fere
 of þe consulis. Als sone as þe authouris of þis sedicioun war
 tane away, the faderis satt doun in maner of ane round cirkill,

¹ godessis.² houffis (*sic*).³ pace.⁴ giffis.⁵ specify (1).⁶ wappingis.⁷ wappingis.⁸ displesar.⁹ þis.

and began to aduertis þe pepill in quhat extreme danger þai
 haue brocht þare public weill; ffor þe trubil rais nocht throw þe
 contentioun þat was þan betuix þe faderis and pepill, bot erare
 becaus þe faderis, the pepill, þe capitoll, þe tempill of goddis,
 and baith þare public and private hous¹ war tressonably randerit 5
 in þare Inemyis handis. quhil sic thingis war done in þe merket
 to meis all seditioun, The consullis past to þe portis and wallis
 of þe ciete to resist þe veanis and sabinis, gif ony of þame wald
 mufe² troubil for þe tyme. (XVIII) The samyn tyme come
 messengeris to³ þe toun of tusculum, schawin[g] how þe capitoll 10
 was tane and grete troubil rising in þe ciete. Than was lu[tius]
 manilius dictator abone þe tusculanis, quhilk herand þir novellis
 assemblit his pepill to ane counsell, and quhen he had brocht
 p. 254. afore þame thir messengeris, he | said It was nocht ganand to
 tary quhil þe romane legatis war send fra rome to seik supporte 15
 for the troubill occurring, sen baith þe perrell and dangere fore-
 said, þare sociall goddis, þare faithfull allyance desiris þe samyn.
 "Attoure, þe goddis sall neur gif to ws in tymes cummyng sa
 gude occasioun to conquere⁴ perpetuale amyte and kyndenes of
 sa pussant and nere ciete to ws, as we may haue at þis tyme." 20
 (232). Thus war⁵ It decernit* to send haisty support to [þe] romanis.
 Incontinent all þe 30ung and lusty men of þe ciete went to
 harnes, and on þe nixt morow come arelie to rome. At þare
 first cummyng þe romanis belevit þame to be wolchis and equis,
 cumand to tak þe ciete. fra þe vane terroure was put away, þai 25
 enterit with grete buschementis in þe ciete, & come to þe merket,
 quhare publius valerius was arrayand his Oistis, Eftir þat he
 had left his college to defend þe portis. The auctorite of
 valerius movit gretumlie þe pepill; for he promittit, als sone as
 þe capitoll was recoverit and þe ciete pecifyit,⁶ he suld nocht 30
 empesche þe counsell of pepill, sa þai wald vnderstand quhat
 hid tressoun and dissate was lurkand be tribunis in þis law þat
 þai wald establ. for It was native to him, as to his predeces-
 souris, to persew þe pepill with all humanite & kyndenes

¹ houssis.² move.³ fra, both.⁴ con[q]uyre.⁵ þis was.⁶ pacifyit.

he mycht. The pepill, *nochtwithstanding* þe reclamacioun of tribunis, followit valerius as þare capitane to þe capitoll, & in þe law discence þareof rasiþ þare ensenȝeis¹ *with* gude array, & *with* þame² followit þe tusculanis. than contendit þe romanis
 5 and þare confederate freyndis, quhilk of þame mycht conquest maist honoure, Or do maist wourthely þare devore. Athir of þir capitanis exhortit þare knichtis feirsly to batell. Than þare Inemyis began to be effrayit, havand þare confidence in na thing sa mekill as in þe strenthis of þe capitoll. quhil þe Inemyis war
 10 in þis effray, baith þe romanis and þare confederate freyndis come fordwart³ *with* ensenȝeis¹ and baneris. Now war þai enterit in the porchis of þe tempil, quhare pub[lius] valerius, fechtand in þe first bront amang þe preiȝ of Inemyis, was | slane. p. 255.
 Als sone as Claudius, the tothir Consul, saw him fall he com-
 15 mandit his body to be coverit, & Incontinent lap in þe samyn place quhare he fell. the Ire and haterent of [þe] romanis and þare confederate freyndis, ruscheand feirslie in þe capitoll, was sa boldin and vehement þat þai gatt victorie or euir þai wist þat þare capitane was slane. mony of þe banist men war slane, &
 20 defoulit þe tempile *with* þare blude; mony war tane quyk, and herdonius slane. Thus was þe capitoll recouerit. The residew of þame, quhilk war found in the capitoll, but ony defference (quhidder þai wer fremen or *servandis*) war slane.

¹ ansenȝeis.² schame (!).³ forthuart.

- (233). Of the orisoun made be lu[tius] q[ui]ntius citumatus¹ aganis þe tribunis; of grete contencioun betuix him and þe pepil for þe law tirintill; how þe tribunis war continewit in þare office contrare þe decrete of [þe] senate, and how lu[tius] quintius⁵ eftir he was made consul renuncit his office.

Ca. vij.²

Grete thankis war gevin to þe tusculanis, & sone eftir þe capitoll was purgit be þe sacrifice lustrale. It is said þat ilk man went to Valerius hous, and left ane quadrent in 10 It, to cauþ him be þe more richely buryit. (XIX) Als sone as þe ciete was brocht in quiet³ in þis maner, the tribunis requirit þe faderis to kepe þe promiss⁴ made to þame be valerius consul; and siclike requirit Claudius to deliuer þe saul of his colleig fra all falset, and to suffir þame to estabil þe law. 15 The consull denyit to do ony thing concernyng þe said law, quhil he had surrogate⁵ ane colleig in þe place of Valerius þat was deceissit. Thir contentiouns frustrate the tribunis to þe commitis and new electioun of consullis. In þe moneth of december nixt following, be grete lauboure and menys of þe 20 faderis, lu[tius] quintius Citumatus, fader to þe valezeant Ces afore banist, was create consul In þe place of Valerius. Als sone as he began to vse his office, the pepill was richt effrayit, beleving p. 256. him | armit with grete haterent aganis þame; and seand him noch onelie richt pussant be favoure of þe faderis, bot als strang 25 baith throw his awne pussance & his barnis, for he had thre sonnys, wise & valljeand men, of na leþ curage and manhede þan was Ces his other son afore barnyst, baith reddy of wit and hand to gif þare consultacioun in euery mater quhare ony grete chargis occurrit. Als sone as quintius was made consull, he 30 sat doun in Iugement, and was richt vehement in his concioun,

¹ citimatus.

² [l]v.

³ quyete.

⁴ promeis.

⁵ suregat.

na les to dant þe pepil þan to chaistise¹ þe senate, saying throw
þare perpetuale sleuth þe * tribunis of pepil rang *witʰ* oure lang (234).
auctorite in damage of þe common weil, reiosing in þare crymes
& flurissing tounge*s*. Apperit þus all vertew, all constance, & al
5 honest vassalege of ʒoung lusty men banist & fled *witʰ* Ceso his
son out of þe ciete, And in þare plac*s* left ane cumpany of
clatterand tribunis, seditious lymmaris, sawaris of discorde, and
regnand with mare odius empire abone þe pepill þan did euer
þe kingis. “has Aulus Virginius tribune (howbeit he was nocht
10 in þe capitoll *witʰ* þe remanent conspiratour*s*) deseruit ony
leß punyissement þan herdonius? for quhay wil regarde þis
mater treulie sall fynd þat he deseruit mekil mare, for her-
donius did na other thing bot denuncit batell as ʒoure con-
fest Inemye, þat ʒe mycht tak ʒoure armour and wapynnys.
15 Be contrare, Virginius gart ʒow vnderstand na batell nor
danger was occurring, & tuke fra ʒow baith ʒoure armoure
and wapynnys,² To bring ʒow nakit and wapinles in ʒoure
Inemyis handis. ffordre vnder [þe] reuerence of Claudius
& valerius, now deceissit,³ I say ʒe war enterit *witʰ* vic-
20 torius ensenʒeis in þe capitoll, or euir ʒoure Inemyis war
doug fra þe merket. Is it nocht schame to þe goddis and
men, þat Inemyis beand baith in þe toure and Capitoll of
rome, and herdonius, þe capitane of banist men, duelling
proudlie in þe tempil of Jupiter, polluing⁴ and defouling
25 euery thing in It? þat þe tusculanis suld raiff þare wap-
pynnys and come soner þan þe romanis to þe defence of
rome? It is in dout quhid|der⁵ the capitoll was recoverit p. 257.
more be lu. manilius, prince of tusculanis, or be claudius or
Valerius consulis. [And] how beit we mycht nocht support
30 þe latynis afore, quhen þai war Invadit be Inemyis, ʒit þe
latynis of þare only benevolence sa plesandlie come to oure
supporte, þat we had bene aluterly distroyit gif þai had
nocht cummyn. Attoure, þe supple þat þe tribunis makis to
þe pepil Is to Ieoperd and expone þame nakit but wapynnys⁶

¹ chaistify (!).² wappingis.³ dissessit.⁴ polloving.⁵ quheþar.⁶ vappingis.

to be slane *with* þare Inemyis. suthlie þare Is na man sa
vile in þis ciete, havand his hous segeit *with* men of armes,
bot 3e wald haue made him supporte. Is þan Iubiter, þe
maist excellent and mychty god, quhen he was segeit with
banist men and *servandis*, [*un*]wourthy to tak ony supporte 5
of man? fforthir, þir tribunis desiris þame to be haldin in
reuerence¹ as haly creaturis, howbeit þe goddis ar *nocht*
(235). haldin in halynes nor venera*cioun afore þame." And þan
turnand his orisoun to þe senatouris he said: "3e say 3e
wil promitte in þis 3ere ane law in plane oppressioun to þe 10
law of goddis and men. Soithlie þe public weill was evil
gouernit þat day þat I was create consul; and gif 3e publis
þe said law, It sall be wer gouernit þan It was quhen pub-
lius valerius consul deceissit. Vnderstand herefore, O quirites,²
It is now þe mynde of me and my colleig, abone ony vthir 15
besines, to pas *with* legiouns of armit men aganis þe wol-
chis & equis. It is vncertane to know be quhat fortoun
It is þat we haue þe goddis mare *propiciant* to ws quhen
we ar fechtand þan quhen we ar pecifyit. Bettir Is to ws
to coniecture in oure myndis quhat *dammage mycht* haue 20
followit in þe ciete, gif oure Inemyis had knawin the capi-
toll takin be *servandis* and banist men, þan to haue experi-
ence þareof in dede." (XX) This orisoun of þe consul movit
þe pepill. Than þe faderis war ereckit in sic esperance, þat
þai belevit þe *commoun* weill restorit. Claudius þe toþir 25
consul, ane man mare pussant in curage þan in dede, suf-
ferit eselie quintius his colleig to bere þe charge of þis
difficil besines, and made himself appere doing all vthir
chargis pertenyng to þe office consulare. þan the tribunis
began to mak þe wourdis of þe consul as þai had bene in 30
vane, and Inquirit be quhat maner þai mycht lede ony army,
sen na man wald gif þare names nor zit suffir þe samyn to
p. 258. be gevin in writt. þan said | quintius: "It is *nocht* neces-
sare to ws to haue þare names in writt; for þe samyn tyme
þat publius Valerius gaif wapynnys to þe pepill to recovir 35

¹ reuerentlie.² quyreteis.

þe capitoll, all þe pepill war sworne vnder ane mynde to
 assembl togiddir *wit* armoure and wappynnys at þe con-
 sullis command; and siclike war all sworne *nocht* to departe
 but his licence and conditt. and þarefore we command þat
 5 euery ane of 3ow (quhilkis wer sworne on þis wise to þe
 consul) to convene þe nixt morow at þe loch¹ of regill."
 þan the tribunis² sett þame be galen3eis³ to exoner & dis-
 charge þe pepill of þe aith be þame made, and allegit þat
 Valerius was bot ane private man in þe tyme þat þis aith
 10 was maid, and be þat ressoun þai⁴ aucht *nocht* be astrikit
 to him. bot þir ressouns *nocht* avalit, for þe pepil war
*nocht*⁵ sa negligent in þai dayis (as þai ar * now) to man- (236).
 swere þare goddis, or to fals þare worde. And als þai wald
nocht þan Interpret þare aithis, nor 3it draw þe law con-
 15 forme to þare maneris, bot erare conforme þare maneris and
 leving to þe lawis. The tribunis, seand þare laubouris frus-
 trate, began to lauboure for þe rasing of þe armye, þe more
 ferventlie þat þe divinouris (as þe fame was) war commandit
 to hallow & consecrate þe place foresaid, þat all thingis
 20 mycht be dressin⁶ in grete felicite to⁷ þe pepill; ffor ilk
 thing þat was afore done in rome be violence of tribunis
 mycht þan be abrogate and revoke be public commites.
 Attour, the tribunis knewe þe pepill eftir þare conventioun
 to þe louch of regill wald obey euery chargis commandit be
 25 þe consull; and eftir þare conventioun to þe said louch all
 þe appellatiouns war fryvole, becaus þe auctorite tribuniciane
 Is of na valoure nor effect bot alanerly within þe ciete, or
 ellis vtouth þe ciete j^m paiß. Thus fra þe tribunis war
 cummyn to þe said loch, þai behuvit to obey þe empire of
 30 consullis. þocht þir and mony vthir thingis made the tribunis
 effrayit, 3it ane thing was þat effrayit þame mare, becaus þai
 herd quintius oft tymes say he wald mak na commites for
 new electiouns of consullis, for þe ciete was *nocht* sa very
 þat It mycht be dantit *wit* sic remedis as It was wont to

¹ louch.² galen3eiris.⁵ noucht.⁷ fyletite wich (!).² consullis, *both*.⁴ he, *both*.⁶ dressit.

be. Nessaire was þarefore to create ane dictator to governe
 þe commoun weil, to þat fyne gif ony persoun wald attempt
 p. 259. ony troubil he | sall vndirstand, fra þe dictator Is na pro-
 vocatioun. (XXI) the senate at þis tyme was convenit in
 þe capitoll, & to þame come haistely the tribunis *wit* mony 5
 effrayit cumpanyis of pepill, *wit* grete noyis and clamoure,
 sum tyme makand Intercessioun to consullis, & sum tyme
 to þe faderis, to create na dictator. ȝit þe consul wald nocht
 change his purpois, quhil þe tribunis war sworne to be sub-
 mittit to þe auctorite of þe faderis. Als sone as þir desiris 10
 of þe tribunis war rehersit afore þe pepill, It was concludit
 be avise of þe senate, þat nowthir sall þe tribunys pronunce
 þe law tirintil for þis ȝere, nor ȝit sall þe consullis within
 þe samyn leid ony armye vtouth þe ciete. It was decernit
 be þe senate, þe continuatioun of consullis and tribunis in 15
 þare office for þat ȝere was aganis þe commoun weil. þe
 consullis obeyit þe constitucioun of senate, bot þe tribunis
 (237). *nochtwitting* ony reclamatioun of con*sullis war continewit
 in þare office. Than þe faderis (þat þai suld nocht gif place
 to þe pepill) continuit lu[tius] quintius in þe consulate. Thare 20
 was na actioun sa vehement in all þis ȝere as þe continu-
 atioun of quintius in his office. "I mervel *nocht*, O faderis
conscriptj" (saide quintius) "*þocht* ȝoure autorite be vane
 and of litil estimatioun afore þe pepill. ȝe extoll and mag-
 nifijs þe pepill the more þat þai ar rebelland and brekis 25
 ȝoure constitutiouns. Apperis ȝe desire ȝoure decrete wil-
 fully brokin, þat na power suld be to ȝow abone þe pepil,
 as It war lefull he þat *mycht* maist vsurpe be violence &
 force suld be maist authorist. It is mare facil to ony pepill
 to brek þare awne constitutiouns and lawis than to brek þe 30
 lawis of vthir pepill. ȝe, faderis *conscripti*, ¹ar like ane vane
 cumpany of pepill Inconsultit and fuliche. ȝe, þat suld be
 ane myrroure of doctrine to vthir, ȝe decline forthir fra gude
 dedis be evil exampil of vtheris þan vtheris ar rasit be

¹ *A new hand (No. 10) begins in B. (p. 289); the orthography is much the same as in A.*

304r Imitatioun to do gude. As for my self I wil nowthir
 follow þe tribunis in þare constitutiouns, Nor 3it wil I suffir
 my self to be maid consul aganis þe decrete of senate.
 herefore I exhorte þe, ca. claudius, to refrene þe romane
 5 pepill fra þis besines þai seik on me. for I am to ressaue
 þe consulate in sic wise þat my honoure sal na wayis be
 empeschit be the, bot erare þat | my glore, becaus I refusit p. 260.
 honoure, sall be þe more ekit; and al Invie þat mycht haue
 followit be continuation of me in þe office sall be þe more
 10 Iniuste." þan was It constitute þat na man gif þare votis to
 create lu[cius] quintius consul; and gif ony votis war gevin,
 þe samyⁿ to haue nane¹ effect.

how the tribunis continewit in þare contentioun, (238).
 persewing þe law terintill; how þe equis war
 15 discomfist be q[uintius] fabius, & brocht to grete
 miserie; and of þe contentioun of tribunis aganis
 þe consulis and faderis. Ca. viij.²

(XXII) At the nixt *commites*³ quintus fabius and lu[cius]
 Cornelius war made consullis. the pepill was nowmerit in þis
 20 3ere, and þe sacrifice lustrale was maid in þe samyn 3ere, becaus
 þe capitoll was tane and þe consull slane. At þe begynnyng of
 þis nixt 3ere raiß sindri trublis, for baith þe tribunis movit þe
 pepill to persew þe law tirintill, and þe messengeris of hernikis
 & latynis schew ane maist dangerus battell approcheing be þe
 25 wolchis and equis. the romanis war richt astonist, & dred,
 becaus mony legiouns of wolchis war liand at Antium, þat It
 suld þarefore be randerit to Inemyis. the consulis purchest
 nocht but grete difficulte at þe tribunis to raiß ane army. þan
 was It commandit be þe senate þat fabius sall pas with sindri
 30 legiouns to Antium, and Cornelius his colleig sall remane at

¹ na.² lvj.³ *Comices*.

hame for defence of þe ciete, & to resist þe equis fra direptioun
of þe cuntre as þai war accustumate. the hernikis and latinis be
tenoure of þare alliance war *commandit* to supporte fabius *wit*
armit knichtis. the thrid parte of þis batall was rasit of romane
cietejanis, and þe twa parte þareof was of þare confederate 5
freyndis. Alssone as þe hernikis & latinis war *cumming* to þe
day assignit, þe consul sat doun with his tentis bezond porte
Capene, & quhen he had purgit þame be [þe] sacrifice lustrale,
he past to Antium and campit him nocht fer fra [þe] sicht of
Inemyis. the wolchis (becaus þe equis war *nocht* as þan 10
cummyn to þare supporte) durst *nocht* gif batell, and þarefore
defendit þame within þare tentis. ffabius on þe nixt morow
p. 261. assailzeit *nocht* his Inemyis onelie *wit* ane army, | bot come
(239). with thre armyis of thre sindri pepill * seuerit fra vther, and beltit
on euery side þe tentis of wolchis; and in þe myddis of þir thre 15
armyis was himself with þe romane legiouns. than gaif he þame
command to obserue ane signne of trumpet; and als sone as þai
herde the signne, to assailze þare Inemyis atanis; and to fle to
þare tentis gif he made þame ony signne þareof be blast of
trumpet. sic thingis done, he arrayit certane. nowmer of horsmen 20
behynd Ilk cumpanye. Thus on sindri wise assalejit he þe
tentis of wolchis with sic force þat þai mycht *nocht* sustene þe
preis þareof. Incontinent þe romanis come oure all þare
mvnicioun and trinchis, & eftir þat þai had won þare tentis,
followit haistelie on þame þe horsmen; and howbeit þai had na 25
litol Impediment to ourepaß þe fowsyis and trinschis, 3it fra þai
gat þe wolchis fleand on þe plane, þai made slauchter but ony
recounter. þus was grete slauchter made on þe wolchis baith in
þe chace and in þe batall. The pray of gudis was mekil, for þe
wolchis war sa wery þai mycht skarsly turß *wit* þame þare 30
wappynnys, throw quhilk þai had bene aluterlie discomfist war
nocht þai war hid in þe woddis. (XXIII) sic thingis done At
Antium, þe equis send within þe *nycht* ane cumpany of 3ounge
men, and tuke þe castell of tusculanis, and campit þe residew of
þare armye nere þe wallis þareof, to resist þe Incursioun of 35
Inemyis, gif ony occurrit. Thir novellis war brocht haistelie

to rome, and fra rome war brocht haistelie to þe campe
of romanis (quhilk was liand for þat tyme at Antium). The
romanis war na les movit for þis offence done to tusculanis,
þan þare capitol had bene tane; for þe grete humanite and
5 kyndenes done afore be tusculanis was ȝit recent and grene in to
þare myndis, and requirit supporte on þe samyn wise as þai did
þame afore. þan fabius left all his other besines, and brocht þe
hail pray of men & gudis þat was conquest in þis last batall
to Antium, & quhen he had put ane sobir¹ garnisoun to þe
10 defence þareof, he past sa diligentlie to rescourß þe castell of
tusculan^{is}, that he sufferit nocht his armye to turß ony thing p. 262.
with þame, bot alanerlie þare wappynnys with ane smal portioun
of victalis² quhilkis war reddiest for þe time. ȝit to supporte his
armye come vittalis² in grete plente, send be cornelius fra rome.
15 sindri skarmissingis war at þis tyme beside þe castell of tusculum.
fabius Consul segeit þe tentis of *equis with ane parte of his (240).
army; syne left þe residew þareof to þe tusculanis to recover þare
castell. ȝit he culd neuer dant þe equis be force, bot alanerlie be
hunger; & quhen þai war cummyn to þe vter miserie þareof, þai
20 randerit þame self; Syne come nakit and wapinles vnder ȝoik of
tuscalanis. ffinalie þe romane consul followit on þame at Algi-
dum, quhen þai war returnand hame with schameful flicht, and
left nane of þame on life.³ The consul eftir þis victorie campit
his army on ane place namyt Columen. The tothir consul,
25 cornelius, seing his Inemyis vincust, and na danger appering,
come fra rome to fabius. þan enterit baith þir consullis with
doubil armyis in þare Inemyis landis, and with huge battellis
waistit & hery[i]t sum tyme þe landis of equis, and sum tyme þe
landis of wolchis. I fynd be mony authouris þe ancienes rebellit
30 in þis zere. Nochtþeles þai war dantit, and þare ciete recoverit
be cornelius; bot I will na thing afferme þareintill, becaus na
sickir mencion is made þareof be autentik authouris. (XXIV)
þis batell beand endit in þis wise, the tribunis began to move
domestic batall aganis þe saderis, cryand þe army was haldin out
35 of þe ciete be tressoun and falsset alanerlie of þe consullis, to

¹ sober.² victualis.³ liwe.

frustrate þe law tirintill; and said nocht ~~wit~~standing þe absence
of consullis þai wald execute þare purpois. ȝit nocht ~~wit~~standing
þare Inoportune debate, pub[lius] lucretius consul, president in
þe ciete, purchest þat al actiouns of tribunis suld be deferrit to þe
cummyng of þe consullis. In þe mene tyme rais ane new trubil; 5
for A. Cornelius & q[uintius] servilius, questouris, assignit ane
day to marchus Wolchius, sum tyme tribune of pepill, for his fals
deposition in [con]dampnatioun of Ceso. for It apperit be
p. 263. mony | evident signes, þat the brother of þis Wolchius, fra he
fel anys in infirmite, was neuer sene in public place, nor [ȝit] 10
rais neuer eftir þe first takin[g] of his maladie, bot lay bedderell¹
fra þe first taking þareof quhil he deceissit. Attoure, It was
provin be mony famous men þat Ceso was nocht in rome in þe
tyme þat þis Wolchius allegit his brothir strikin. Attoure, sindri
men of armes quhilkis war with him vnder ane banar testifyit 15
Ceso was ~~wit~~ þame at þe said tyme, but ony congey or pasport
to depart. at þe day assignit, howbeit Wolchius nocht apperit,
all þe witnes quhilkis war brocht þat day aganis him testifyit als
(241). clere*lie his dampnacioun as he testifyt afore þe dampnacioun of
Ceso; bot ȝit the tribunis stoppit þare Iugement, for þai wald 20
nocht suffir þe questouris to haue ony commites for Iugement of
wolchius quhil þare law war first establith.² thus war baith þir³
materis deferrit to þe cummyn of consullis. als sone as þe
consulis enterit ~~wit~~ þare victorius oistis in þe ciete, sindri
belevit þe tribunis effrayit. nochtþeles þe tribunis (becaus It was 25
þan þe Ischey⁴ of þe ȝere) desirit þame to be continewit þe fourt
tyme in þare auctorite. Thus was all contentioun concernyng þe
said law postponit to þe desceptatioun of commites; and howbeit
þe consullis resistit na les þe continuacion of tribunis þan þe law
sa oft be þame desirit had bene establith, ȝit þe victorie stude all 30
wayis ~~wit~~ þe tribunis. The samyn ȝere þe equis send þare
legatis to þe romanis, and purchest peace.⁵ þe nowmeration of
pepill (quhilk was begunnyn in þe ȝere afore) was endit in þis
ȝere, and was þe tent lustir fra þe begynnyn of rome; for all þe
cietejanis of rome war nowmerit, & extendit to j^o xxxij^m iiij^o xix 35

¹ bedderall.² establith.³ þare, A.⁴ Ische.⁵ pace.

persouns. þe consullis war in þis ȝere of hie renoun and glore,
baith at hame & at feild. Thay gat baith victorie and peace of
Inemyis. And how beit þai mycht noch trete sikkir pece and
concorde at hame, ȝit þe ciete was in leß troubill þan afore.

- 5 how Clelius prince of equis Invadit þe latynis and (242).
 tusculanis; Of þe message send to him be
 romanis, & of his ansuere; | how naucius consull p. 264.
 waistit þe equis; how minucius his colleig was
 segeit be equis, and rescoursit be lucius quincius
10 dictator, and of þe said quincius tryumphe in þe
 ciete. Ca. ix.¹

- (XXV) At þe nixt *commites* l[utius] minutius and l[ucius]
nautius war made consullis, before quham war brocht haistely
þir two actiouns afore depending, twiching þe law tirintil
15 and Iugement of Wolchius; and as þe consullis stoppit þe
law tirintill, sa þe tribunis stoppit þe Iugement of Wolchius.
The new questouris war in þis ȝere of mare auctorite þan
afore; for t[ytus] q[uintius] capitolinus, quhilk was thryis con-
sull afore, and M.² Valerius, þe son of Valesus, war made
20 consullis. þis ti[tus] quintius, seand þat nowther mycht his
cousing Cesó be restorit to þe houß of quintius (Of quhilk
he was descendit), nor ȝit reiose ony autorite within þe ciete,
kest him þe more feirslie³ to persewe þis Wolchius, quhilk
be fals depositioun was occasioun to condampne þe Inno-
25 cent man cesó. quhen A. Virginius, tribune, was dressing
him to procede in þis law, he gaif to þe consullis twa
monethis lasere⁴ to serche and ripe þe samyn, to þat fyne
þat quhen þai had schewin to þe pepill quhat dissate or
fraude was in þe said law, the said pepill suld be sufferit
30 to mak þare suffrage as þai plesit. þis dilatioun of twa

¹ lvij.² maister (!).³ freslie.⁴ lasar.

monethis brocht þe ciete in quiete; ȝit It endurit schort
 tyme, ffor þe equis, *Nochtwith*standing þare band of confed-
 eratioun made in þe ȝere afore with romanis, rebellit and
 chesit Clelius graccus, þe gretest prince of þare cuntre, to
 be gouernoure. This Clelius, sone eftir his electioun, come 5
with maist awful Incursiouns baith in þe landis of latynis
 and tusculanis, and sett doun his¹ tentis, ful of pray and
 (243) richeß, at Algidum. *In þe mene tyme come to him thre
 legatis out of rome, þat is to say, q[ui]ntius] fabius, p[ub]lius]
 Volumnius, A[ulus] posthumius, first complenyng þe Iniuriis 10
 done be the Equis; syne desiring þare gudis eftir þe tenoure
 of þare band of pece to be restorit. Clelius commandit þir
 p. 265. legatis (gif þai had ony chargis fra þe romane | senate) to
 schaw þe samyn to ane aik, for he wald do sum vthir
 besines for þe tyme. than stude ane huge aik *nocht* fer dis- 15
 tant fra þe tentis of Clelius, quhais schaddow² made þe
 place about þe samyn sum parte dirk and obscure. Incon-
 tinent ane of þir legatis past to þis aik and said in þis
 wise: "þis haly aik and all þe goddis of hevin may here
 now, how þe pece Is brokin be ȝow equis, beseking here- 20
 fore þe goddis first to be favorabil to oure complante, &
 syne to oure army; for we will persew *our* richt to tak
 pvnicioun on þame þat has violate baith þe law of god &
 man." Thir wourdis being said, Thir legatis returnit to rome.
 sone eftir was commandit be þe senate, þat þe ta consull 25
 suld pas *with* ane army aganis þis Clelius to Algidum, and
 þe tothir consul to mak Incursiouns in þe landis of equis.
 þe tribunis (as þai war ay accustumate) made þame to stop
 þe rasing of þir armyis; and perchance þai had stoppit þe
 samyn be way of dede, war *nocht* ane new trubil haistelie 30
 followit. (XXVI) The sabynis come *with* mony arrayit le-
 giouns, in grete cruelte baith of fyre and swerde, nere þe
 wallis of rome. throw slauchter[is] and hereschippis haistelie
 be þame committit, ane huge terroure was brocht to rome,
 and constrenit þe pepil to tak gladelie þare wappynnys. *Nocht-* 35

¹ þare, A.² schaddo.

withstanding ony reclamacioun of tribunis, twa strang armyis
 belive war rasis. Nausius consul past with þe tane to were
 aganis þe sabinis, and sett doun his tentis At Eretum; And
 finalie be frequent and werelie Incursiouns he waistit sa
 5 vterlie þe landis of equis, þat þe fronteris and bordouris of
 romanis gat litill or ellis na damage In compare of þe
 hevy damage & herschippis made on þe said ¹equis. The
 tothir consul Minutius had nowthir sa gude fortoun, nor ȝit
 sa gude curage in leding his army as had naucius. Alssone
 10 as þir thingis war patent, þai raiß (as oft occurris) in grete
 audacite and sprete be febilness of þare Inemyis, And Incon-
 tinent assailȝit to tak þe tentis of Minutius perforce; ȝit
 seing þare opin violence² na thing proffittit,³ þai beltit þe
 tentis of romanis on þe nixt morrow * on euery side with (244).
 15 strong sege. | Nochtþeles afore þe romanis war Inclusit in þis p. 266.
 wise, Ischit fra þare tentis five horsmen, and with grete
 diligence schew at rome how þe consul and his armye war
 segeit. Na thing mycht haue happyñnit þat was les belevit
 þan þe samyn, And þarefore followit na les dredoure amang
 20 þe romanis þan Inemyis had nocht bene⁴ segeand þare tentis,
 bot erare reddy to tak þe ciete. Naucius consul was brocht
 þan afore þe senate, and becaus litill helpe apperit in him,
 na thing was found sa profitable to mete þis haisty trubil
 as to create ane dictator; and sa be generale consent
 25 l[utius] q[uintius] cincinnatus⁵ was made dictator. Now is
 ganand þat þis historie following war notit⁶ with sic per-
 souns þat contempnis all wardly thingis in compare of riches,
 traisting na place to hie honoure or vertew bot onelie quhare
 richeß aboundis. l[ucius] q[uintius] cincinnatus, ane pure
 30 man havand na richeß bot onelie foure oxin gang of land
 bebound tyber fornens þe commoun havin, was at þis tyme
 þe onelie esperance of romane empire. þe romane legatis
 (quhilkis war send to [þis] lu[cius] quincius) fand him owthir
 makand ane sewch⁷ or ellis haldand þe pleuch. In quhat-

¹ *The third hand resumes*
in B. (p. 295, line 15).

² veolence.
³ proffet.

⁴ beand, *both*.
⁵ citimatus.

⁶ notat.
⁷ a seuch.

sumeir sorte It happynyt, treuth is, he was gevin to land-
wart besynes. als sone as þe salutacions war made on athir
side, þe legatis desirit him to put on his govne, and here
þe command of þe senate, praying to þe goddis þat þe samyn
may turne to the weill of him and þe commoun weill. 5
Quintius, havand na litill admiracioun, Inquirit gif all thingis
war saif in þe ciete; and sone eftir commandit Racilia his
wiffe to bring his govne ¹fra þe somer schele quhare he
duelt. Als sone as his govne ¹was dicht fra suete ²and
duste of pow[d]er, he clothit him þarewith, and went ford- 10
wert. Than þe legatis salust him dictator, and desirit him
to pas to þe ciete, schawand quhat effray and trubil was in
þe samyn. Belive ane bait was brocht to rome to bring him
oure tyber. At his oure cummyng met him his thre sonnys
p. 267. *with* mony ³vtheris his gude-willaris and | freyndis; and eftir 15
⁴all met him ⁴þe maist parte of þe senate. Quintius was
convoyit with this cumpany, and þe *seriandis* passand afore
him, quhil he come to his houß. grete buschementis of
pepill come out of all partis of þe ciete to vesy him, na
thing glade of his cummyng, and traisting þat he suld be 20
(245). baith oure feirß in his aucto*rite, and oure desirus of em-
pire. Na thing was done in þe nycht following Except ⁵
onelie þe pepill walkit in all partis of þe ciete. (XXVII)
On þe nixt morow, afore þe licht, þe consul come to þe
merket, and made lu[cius] terquinius maister of chevelrie, for 25
he was discendit of þe lynnage patriciane, how beit he was
in sic pouerte for þe tyme þat he tuke bot ane fute mannis
place; 3it he passit all þe 3oung men in rome in manhede
and proveß. Sone eftir þe dictator come *with* þe maister
of chevelry to þe concioun, and commandit þe ministracioun 30
of lawis to ceiß, and na buthis to be opynyt ⁶to his re-
turnyng, þat na private besines suld be done, bot alanerly
sic thingis as concernis þe ordinance of battale. Sic thingis
done, he commandit all þe 3oung & lusty men of þe ciete,
and all vtheris þat mycht weild ony wappynys, to mete 35

¹—¹ om. ² sute, *both*. ³ may. ⁴ met him all. ⁵ excep. ⁶ opnit.

him in campus martius afore þe son ganging to, Ilk man havand with him five dayis vittalis¹ and ane stake of xij fute lang. vtheris (quhilkis war past þe date of weiris) war commandit to remane at hame, to mak provisioun for vittal⁵ talis and vtheris necessare² thingis for þe army. belive all þe 3oung men of þe ciete ran to þe nixt wod, and cuttit doun þe staikis bot ony Impediment, and at þe houre affixt³ war all reddy at þe dictatoris command. The army beand þus weill arrayit, Na les to travell⁴ and Iornay þan to batell,
 10 The dictator past fordwart with his legiouns, & þe maister of chevelrie with his horsmen. euery ane of þare cumpanyis made hortacioun to þare knichtis (as þe tyme requirit) to haisty þare passage, þat þai mycht cum þat sammyn nycht to þare Inemyis; for þat was þe thrid day sen | the con- p. 268.
 15 sull and his army was segeit, and vncertane quhat was done, for oft tymes grete materis ar turnit vp and doun in ane moment. thus passit fordwarte⁵ þe armye, Criand in plesere of þare capitanis: "thow banerman, haist þi passage, & þow man of armes, fast follow." At mydnycht þai come to Algidum, and sett doun þare tentis in sicht of Inemyis. (XXVIII) than þe dictator (sa fer as he mycht behald within þe nycht) rade about þe army of equis, and vesyit baith þare tentis, þare trensches, and mvnicioun of þare campe. Syne commandit the tribunis militare to cauß þe burdingis and cariage
 25 of romane armye to be laid togidder, þat þe army mycht cum to array with þare wappynys. And as þe dictator commandit all was done. þan þe dictator arrayit his oist endlang þe tentis of equis, on þe * samyn maner as þai (246). come in þare viage⁶; syne commandit þame, (als sone as þai
 30 herd þe sound of trumpett) to cry all attanis, and within þe said cry Ilk man to mak ane fowsy afore him self, & to affix his staik fast behynd þe said fowsie. belive was þe signe gevin, and Incontinent was Ilk thing done as was commandit. The cry come throw þe tentis of equis to þe

¹ wictualis.² vþer necesarris.³ assignit.⁴ trewell.⁵ forwart.⁶ weaige.

tentis of Minucius in diuerß maneris; for It effrayit þe
equis, and maid þe romanis reiosit. The romanis, knowing
weill þis clamoure rasit be þare freyndis, reiosit amang þame
self in esperance of supporte; and be wilfull eruptiouns fra
þare statiouns and vigilis¹ effrayit þe equis. The consull 5
thocht nocht proffittabill to tary, for be þis cry nocht only
apperit þe cummyn of his army, bot als þe batell begvn:
grete mervell was þarefore gif þe tentis of Inemyis war
nocht segeit at þare vtémaist² partis. Incontinent þe dictator
commandit ilk man to tak þare wappynnyß, and follow him. 10
The batall beand on þis wise begvn within þe nycht, The
romanis legiouns schew be þare huge clamour and noyis þe
parte in grete dangere quhare þai assailzeit. Now war þe
p. 269. equis gevand extreme besines | to saif þame self fra Closing
of romanis on þare outmest side, quhen þai war feirsleie 15
Invaidit be þe consull in þare Inwarte partis, throw quhilk
þe equis war enforcit³ to leif al resistance þat þai made
afore aganis þe dictatouris army to resist þe consulis armye.
þus spendit þai þe nycht fechtand aganis þe consul quhil þe
morow; and in þe menetyme þe dictator inclusit þame on 20
euery side with fowsyis; and howbeit þai mycht scarslie resist
þe consul, þai war nochtþeles Invadit be þe dictator. the
equis beand thus finalie inclusit & seand sa mony dangeris
approcheing, war convertit fra batal to maist humyll prayeris,
sum tyme requiring þe dictator and sum tyme þe consul to 25
vse nocht þis present victorie to þare vter destructioun, bot
erare suffir þame departe wappynles. þe consul referrit þe
mater to the dictator. þe dictator ekit þare dishonoure
with more schame, for he commandit Clelius prince of equis,
with [þe] remanent capitanis of þare army, to be brocht to 30
him bvnd,⁴ & þe toun of Corbio to be randerit. Sic thingis
beand done, he wald nocht be desirus of þare blude nor
slauchter, bot wald suffir þame to departe vnder 30ik,⁵ To
mak It knawin þai war subdewit. This 30ik⁶ was made of
(247). thre speris, * of quhilkis twa war dentit in þe erde, and þe 35

¹ wigelis.² maist ovt.³ Inforcit.⁴ bound.⁵ 30k.⁶ 30ke.

thrid laid thortoure þare hedis. Vnder þis 3oik¹ departit the equis, (XXIX) and eftir þare departing þe dictator ressaut þare tentis full of riches & gudis, and dividit² þe pray þareof Alanerlie amang his avne army, and said to þe consul:

5 "þow sal ressaue na *parte* of þis pray, becaus þow had almaist bene ane pray to þi Inemyis. And þow l[utius] minutius for þi vnprudence³ may *nocht* reiose þe office of consul. þow sal be þarefore bot legate⁴ abone þe legiouns, quhil þe tyme þow haue sic çurage as requiris to þe consul." þan Minutius exonerit him self of þe consulat, and was made legate⁴

10 of þe armye. The çurage of knichtis was sa obesant⁵ in þai dayis to al empire & command of þare capitane,⁶ þat þai remembrit erare þe honorabill dedis done be him þan to remember ony thingis þat mycht reproche his honoure. The

15 army gaif to þe dictator ane croun of gold weyand j^{li} 7 wecht, and callit | him þare patroun in all partis quhare þai come. p. 270. afore his cummyrn to rome q[uintius] fabius convenit þe senate, be quham was decernit þat þe dictator sal enter tryumphand with his armye in þe ciete, on þe samyn maner

20 as þai past⁸ be þe gate. þe capitanis and princis of equis (quhilk war takin be him in þe said batall) w^{it}h þare banaris and ensençeis, war led afore him. Than followit his army, ladin w^{it}h riche pray of men and gudis. The tabillis war coverit afore þe nobill houffs⁹ of þe ciete, ful of mete and

25 wynes. þan followit þe cietejanis, etand delicius metis or ellis singand melodius sangis. On þe samyn day l[utius] manilius, prince of tusculanis, was made cietejane of rome. þe dictator eftir þir feliciteis had left his office, war nocht the *commites* of Wolchius, þe fals witnes aganis Cesò, war

30 *cumin*. The tribunis durst *nocht* empesche þe said *commites* for fere of þe dictator. in þir *commites* Wolchius was condampnite, and past to lavinium in exile. l[utius] q[uintius] left þe dictatory¹⁰ on þe xvj day eftir his creatioun, howbeit It was gevin to him for vj monethis.

¹ 3oke.³ Inp.⁵ obeysant.⁷ a fi.⁹ houssis.² dewydit.⁴ ligat.⁶ capitanis.⁸ 3eid.¹⁰ dictatourry.

- (248). How þe pepil purchest ten tribunis to be ȝerelie create
 in defence of þare acciouns aganis þe faderis and
 consullis; how þe equis war sindri tymes vincust;
 how þe romanis send þare legatis to Athenis to
 bring lawis to governe þame in Iustice. 5

Ca. x.¹

- The consul nautius faucht vailȝeantlie in þis dayis aganis þe
 sabinis, for nocht onelie war þe sabynis dantit with grete
 slauchter, bot als þare landis waistit *witȝ* sindri incursiouns.
 q[ui]ntius] fabius was surrogate in þe place of minutius, and was 10
 send with ane army to algidum in þe lattir parte of þis ȝere.
 the tribunis lauborit as afore for þe law tirintill; ȝit becaus two
 armyis of romanis war furth of þare ciete, the faderis wald suffir
 na alteratioun to be done to þare returnyng. The small pepill
 purchest in þe begynnyng of þis ȝere þe sam² tribunis þat war 15
 afore to be continewit to³ þe fift ȝere. Mony wolvis⁴ war sene
 þis ȝere in þe capitoll, and chasit away *witȝ* houndis. for fere of
 þis prodigie þe capitoll was purgit be the sacrifice lustrale.
 p. 271. (XXX) In þe ȝere following, q[ui]ntius] Minutius | and M.
 horacius puluillus war made consullis. howbeit þe begynnyng 20
 of þis ȝere was in quiet, but ony externe weris, ȝit þe tribunis
witȝ þe law afore rehersit made na litil seditioun in þe ciete. so
 fer war þe myndis of þir tribunis inflammyt with haterent, þat
 þare Iniuris had procedit forthir, war *nocht* þai war Impeschit be
 sindri novellis, quhilk schew þat þe equis with huge fere and 25
 violence of armes had tane þe toun of Corbio, and slane þe men
 of armes quhilkis war left in defence þareof. for fere of þis
 trubill þe consullis convenit þe senate, and war *commandit* to
 pas with ane haisty army to Algidum. now has þe tribunis left
 þare debate⁵ concernyng þe law tirintill, quhen þai began ane 30
 new debait⁵ concernyng þe rasing of þis army. always þe

¹ lvijj.

² small, *A.*

³ in.

⁴ wolchis (1).

⁵—⁸ *om.*

- empire of consullis had bene aluterlie vincust be authorite of tribunis, war *nocht* ane new effray come haistelic, saying þe sabinis war *cummyn with* grete incursiouns in þe romane landis, *and purposit to tak þe ciete. for fere of þis trubill þe tribunis (249).
 5 sufferit ane armye to be rasis vnder þis condition, sen þai war frustrate vⁱ *3eris* continually of þare purpoiss, and sa few in nowmer þat þai *mycht nocht* support þe pepill in þare public actiouns, ilk 3ere þarefore in tymes *cummyng* sal be create ten tribunis. The faderis thocht þe trubill occurring sa grete, þat
 10 It war necessare to admitt þir desiris, vnder sic conditioun þat þir tribunis sal *nocht* be continewit, bot 3erelie changit in þare office; and þat þis promiss new made be þe faderis sal *nocht* be in vane eftir þe returnyng of þe army fra batal, as was oft tymes provin afore, Thir *commites* of tribunis war instantlie haldin.
 15 In þis 3ere (quhilk was fra þe first creatioun of tribunis xxxvj 3eris) war create x tribunis of pepill, þat is to say, two tribunis of ilk class. It was ordanit þat þir x tribunis sall be 3erelie create on þe samyn maner. þe army beand rasis on þis wise, Minutius past aganis þe sabinis; bot þai war fled afore his
 20 *cummyng*. the tothir consul, horacius, past aganis þe equis, eftir þat þai had tane þe toun namyt hortana, & slane þe ganesoun of romanis laid [at] | Corbio. Nochtþeles he met p. 272.
 þame at Algidum, and slew be set batell nocht onelie ane huge nowmer of þame, bot als chasit þe remanent baith out of hortana
 25 and Corbio; syne kest down þe towe of Corbio (becaus þe garnisoun quhilk was laid for defence þareof was distroyit). (XXXI) In þe nixt 3ere M. valerius and Spu. virginus war made consulis. This 3ere was in quiet, baith at hame and of feild. In It was grete penurite and derth of victualis, quhilk come
 30 throw Intemperate & excessive wetis.² Than was ane law made þat mont aventyne sall be publist and dividit amang þe pepill; and 3it þe tribunis war continewit as afore in þare authorite, *Nochtwithstanding* þe Actis made be þe faderis. In þe nixt 3ere A. Romulus and C. Veturius war made consullis.
 35 In þe mene tyme thir tribunis afore rehersit rase *with* grete
 fywe. ² weytis.

power of pepill, & purposit to estabil þe law tirintil; for sen þare power was ekit *with* grete nowmer, þai tho~~cht~~ na litill dishonour was to þame, þat þare purpois come to na mare effect In þir two last ȝeris Than It did afore in thir vthir ȝeris. quhil þe tribunis war dressing þis mater *with* maist Craftynes, come 5
 (250). certane effrayit messin*geris fra Tusculum, schewing þe equis cummyng with ferefull Incursiouns in þare landis. The humanite and kyndenes latelie done be þe tusculanis movit þe romanis to haisty þare supporte. Incontinent baith þe consulis war send *with* ane armye to Algidum, quhare þare Inemyis war campit 10
 afore þare cuming, and gaif batall. in þis batall vij^m Inemyis war slane, and þe residew discomfist *with* lang chase. grete pray of riches war gottin in þis battell; bot It was sald be þe consulis, ffor þe tressoure of Rome was pure. The selling of þis pray brocht þe consulis in grete haterent of þare army, and gaif occasion to þe 15
 tribunis to persew þe consullis criminaly afore þe pepill. At þe nixt commites spu. tarpeus & A. Eter[m]ius war made consulis. in þe tyme of þir consullis ane day of Jugement was set to ti. Romulus be Clau. cicero, tribune of pepill, and siclike ane day
 p. 273. was sett to | Veturius be L. halienus, edile of pepill, and þai 20
 war baith condampnit *with* grete Indignatioun of þe faderis. Romulus was condemnit in x^m brasin d,¹ and Veturius in xij^m. This Iniure and cruelte done to þe auld consullis made nocht þe new consullis þe leß vigilant, for þai allegit It was possibil to þame to be condemnit as þare predecessouris; ȝit nowthir þe 25
 tribunis nor small pepill had power to mak lawis. The tribunis herand þir wourdis left all molestacioun and trubill concernyng þe law tirintil, & began to be þe more curtaß to þe faderis; and said gif þe lawis made be þe pepill war odius and displeand to þe faderis, þai sall put ane finale² end þareto, 30
 sa þat certane persouns war chosin be consent of þe faderis and pepill to mak lawis proffittable for þame baith, to defend equalie baith þare liberteis. The faderis wald nocht contempne þir offeris of smal pepill, bot þai wald suffir nane to execute³ nor minister the lawis bot þameself, and becaus þai culd nocht 35

¹ pennyis.² small (!).³ exerse.

- aggre quha suld be þe ministeris þareof, þai send thre nobil men
namyt spu. posthumius, A. manlius, and p. sulpicius as am-
bassiatouris to Athenis to write þe lawis [of Solon *vith* þe
maneris, lawis] & Institutiouns of vthir noble townis in grece.
- 5 (XXXII) The residew of þis ȝere was in quiet, but ony vncouth¹
weris, and þe ȝere nixt following was more quiet, In quhilk p.
sulpicius & sextus quintilius war made consulis. the tribunis put
perpetuale si*²lence to all þare lawis, and abaid alanerlie on þir (251).
vncouth¹ and strange lawis, quhilkis war to cum out of athenis.
- 10 In þe mene tyme rais þe sorowful harmes, þat Is to say hunger
and pestilence in perdition baith of man and beist, Throw
quhilk noc³t anerlie þe landwart villagis bot als þe ciete, be
continuall berying of dede bodyis, was desert and waist. mony
Illuster and nobil houffs war full of sorow be deith of þare
- 15 maisteris. Sextus cornilius, þe preist quirinal, was deceissit,
and ho. puluillus, þe divinour²; in quhais place was surrogate g.
veturius, and þe erare becauþ he was condampnit afore be þe
smal pepil. siclike six³ quintilius, consull, was deceissit, &
thre | tribunis of pepil in þe said pest. so was þis ȝere ful of p. 274.
- 20 pest and trubil, and þocht na dangere apperit be externe weris,
ȝit in þe ciete war sindri motiouns of trubill.

Of þe returnyng of romane legatis fra athenis; how
þe consullis war put down, and ten men chosin to
regne in þare place; of þe chance and ordinance
25 þaræftir following. Ca. xj.⁴

Now war þe legatis returnit fra grece with þe lawis of Athenis.
þan laubourit þe tribunis besely⁵ to haue þir lawis publist, þat þe
pepill mycht be gouernit be lawis gevin to þame in writt. At þe
first assemblance of senate was decernit þat x⁶ men sal be create
30 to exerce and prattik⁷ þir lawis abone þe pepill, but ony appel-

¹ vncou².² dewinour.³ sextus.⁴ lix.⁵ besalie.⁶ ten.⁷ practik.

lacioun. fforthir to eschew all contentiouns (gif ony war [rysing]
 amang the pepil) It was statute þat na vthir magistrate nor
 dignite sal haue place during þat ȝere, providing all wayis þat
 na derogatioun war made to þe law Atiliane concernyng mont
 Aventure, nor ȝit to nane vtheris sacrate lawis. (XXXIII) The 5
 ȝere iiij^e and ane fra þe first fundatioun of Rome, the gouernance
 of romane empire was changit; for as þe first gouernance þareof
 was changit fra þe empire of kingis to þe empire of consullis, so
 fra þe empire of consullis It was changit now to þe gouernance
 (252). * of x men. This translatioun was þe les notabil, þat It was noch 10
 permanent; for as þe begynnyng þareof was full of pride and
 Insolence, so was þe declinatioun þareof þe more suddane, and
 was occasioun be quhilk þe empire returnit (as afore) to þe
 consullis. The names of þir x men followis: Ap. Claudius, ti.
 genutius, pub. festius, l. veturius, g. Iulius, Au. manlius, pub. 15
 sulpicius, pub. curacius, T. romulus, & spu. posthumius.¹ I
 fynd þat Appius Claudius and ti.² genutius war ekit amang þir
 x. men becaus þai war chosin to haue bene consulis in þis present
 ȝere; & fra þai war frustrate þareof, þai war ekit amang þe
 nowmer of þir x men. pub[lyus] festus was made ane of þir 20
 p. 275. | ten men becaus he dressit þis mater to þe favoure of faderis
 aganis þe mynde of his colleig. spu[ryus] posthumius, pub[lius]
 sulpicius, and Aulus manlius war chosin to be of þir ten men In
 recompens of þare travell and laubouris; for þai war send as
 legatis to bring þir lawis foresaid, as men of grete experience, & 25
 semit þarefore to be þe more abill to constitute new lawis for þe
 gouernance of þare ciete. The remanent ten men war chosin be
 wisdom & grauite of age, to mak þame þe leß repugnant to ony
 gude materis done be þe remanent faderis. þe gouernance of þis
 new ciete stude maist be Ap[pius] Claudius, for he cled himself 30
 with sa new Ingyne, þat quhare he was haldin afore gretest
 persewar and Inemy to þe pepill in all þare actiouns, he become

¹ Appius claudius, titus genutius, publius sestus, Lutius weturius, gneus Iulius, Aulus manlius, publius sulpicius, pu[b]lius curatius, titus romulus, and spurius posthmyus.

² tytus.

haistelie þare mænteinare and principall favorare.¹ Thir ten men
 satt Ilk day þare courß about in Iugement for administracioun
²of Iustice, and before him þat had þe administratioun² for þat
 day went xij *seriandis* armit with axis, wandis, and vther orna-
 5 mentis riall, & afore Ilkane of þe remanent ix³ went ane maser.⁴
 Thus war þir ten men all of ane opinioun and concorde, to vse
 þir lawis with maist seuerite & Iustice abone þe pepill. The
 moderatioun and gouernance of þir ten men may be knawin be
 exampil of ane of þame self; for eftir þat þir x men war create
 10 gouernouris of þe ciete but ony provocatioun, was found ane
 man slane and hid vnder erde in þe houß of pub. sextius,⁵ a man
 of lynage patriciane. thus was ane day sett to þe said pub. six.⁶
 be g. Iulius, x⁶ man, to here him crymynally accusit afore þe
 pepill for þis felony þat was sa patent & terribil. ȝit þis g.
 15 Iulius⁶ chesit erare⁷ to be accusare of þis pub. six.⁵ afore þe
 pepill þan to be Iuge þareof, þat þe * thing þat was tane fra his (253).
 autorite and new power suld be ekit to þe liberte of pepill.
 (XXXIV) Als sone as þe grete & smal estatis of þe ciete had
 schewin þame content to haue þir lawis exercit abone þame,
 20 *witȝ* na leß reuerence þan þe samyn had bene cummyn fra þe
 orakillis & respons⁸ of goddis, Incontinent þir x men sett þame
witȝ vter diligence to publis þe said lawis; and to þe grete desire
 and fervent expectatioun of pepil þai publist þir x tabillis afore
 | rehersit in public concioun; and to þat fyne þat gude fortoun, p. 276.
 25 felice, and honouris may succeid to þame and þare barnis, thay
 prayit þe pepill to rede & avise *witȝ* þe said lawis, for sen þe witt
 of mony Is bettir þan of few, they haue devisit (sa fer as ressoun
 and Intelligence may haue place) gude and equale lawis, als
 lele⁹ for riche as pure; and schew þai wald be frequent dis-
 30 putacioun discuß euery mater be þame self, and eftir maist solid
 and ferme deliberatioun, þai wald bring þare sentence to licht
 equivalent to þe valoure þareof, þat It may be said the romanis
 has *nocht* onelie lawis made in writt, bot als executis þe sammyn

¹ fauourare.²⁻² *om.*³ *nyne.*⁴ *maßer.*⁵ *publius sextus.*⁶ *gneus Iulius, tent.*⁷ *errar.*⁸ *oracles and responsis.*⁹ *leill.*

be public consent. als sone as þe pepil had sene euery titill & cheptoure of þir lawis, correckit as apperit sufficientlie, The foresaidis lawis writtin in tabillis war pronuncit in commites centuriat. Thir x tabillis, amang sa grete¹ multitude of confusit lawis, war þe first fontane of all public & private Iuris. Than 5 was ane murmur² amang þe pepill þat twa tabillis ȝit laikit, quhilkis beand ekit to þe first x tabillis, all difficulte of quhat-sumeuir questioun occurring for the tyme mycht haue sufficient decisioun amang þe romanis. The pepill abaid with sic desire to haue þir other twa tabillis, þat quhen þe nixt commites war cummyn, Thay continewit þir ten men in þare autorite; for þis new signorie of x men was so plesand, as apperit, þat the pepill thocht þe names of consullis was als odius as þe names of kingis, and þarefore nowthir socht þai þe supporte of tribunis in þare materis, nor ȝit þe remeid of appellacioun, traisting noch onelie 15 all þare materis and acciouns to be plesandlie dressit in tymes cuming, bot als traistit þir x men to leif þare auctorite quhen tyme requirit, as Iulius did afore. (XXXV) Now war þe commites proclamit to be haldin þe thrid day eftir þe nundinis for creatioun of þir ten men, quhen grete seditioun be desire of 20 (254). honouris rais in þe ciete. þe grete princis and faderis * þareof dredand þis new signorie to fall sum tymes to vnworthy persouns began to frequent þe pepill; and þocht þai Impugnit oft tymes þis new signorie,³ ȝit þai lauborit to haue ane parte þareof afore p. 277. þe samyn pepill | with quham þai had sa frequent contentiouns 25 afore. This new and dulce auctorite movit ap[pious] Claudius (for he was in his ȝong and flurisant ȝouth) to persew þe sammyn with sic ambitioun, þat It was vncertane quhiddir he suld be nowmerit amang þe x men or amang þe candidatis; for he be crafty dissimilacioun schew him[self] erare ane desirare of office 30 þan to be presentlie cled with þe sammyn. he reprochit þe faderis & grete princis of þe ciete, and began to extoll the new litis & vtheris sic as wer clothit in quhite vestiture and went oft tymes amang þe duellianis and Icelianis in þe merkett, traisting be þare familiarite to conques þe favoure populaire; quhil at last 35

¹ grite.² myrroure, *A*.³ signorance.

- his collegis (quhilkis war mervelluslie gevin afore to him in all materis) beheld *wit* grete sollicitude his doingis, havand na litil admiracioun quhat he purposit to do. Na thing be his doingis apperit to þame commendabill. Na benigne nor swete con-
- 5 tenance semit be his proude havingis; for he *nocht* allanerly apperit oure desirus of new digniteis, bot als our frequent and familiare *wit* private persouns. Thir war na signis þat he ony way purposit to departe fra his auctorite, bot erare signifijt him at þe nixt commites to be continewit. alwayis his collegis durst
- 10 *nocht* oppone¹ þame opinlie to his avarice, bot set þame þe maist presand way þai *mycht* to soft his preið. At þe nixt commites, howbeit he was 3oungest, his collegis gaif him all² power to cheið þe x men to be gouernouris of þe ciete for þe nixt 3ere. This was done be crafty slicht of his collegis, to þat fyne þat sen
- 15 þe power was gevin to þe said Appius to cheið þe x men of new, he suld *nocht* cheið him self; ffor³ It was neuer herd afore þat ony man chesit him self to ony auctorite or office, Except anis þe tribunis be þare wikkit exempill practicate sic ane like thing afore. Appius consentit weil to his collegis to be principale
- 20 haldare of þe nixt commites, and to cheið þe x men more eselie, he thocht best to remove all thingis þat war Impediment to him. So quhen he had deprivit two nobil men of þe houß of quintius, namyt q. Capitolinus & q. cycynnatius,⁴ of all auctorite & honouris, & siclike had | deponit his fader broder,⁵ namyt C. p. 278.
- 25 Claudius, quhilk was ay ane defen*doure of public liberte, he (255). chesit x men to be gouernouris of þe ciete, howbeit þai war *nocht* of sic preeminence and wisdom as þir vthir ten men þat rang afore; and first of all he chesit him self, howbeit na man wald haue belevit sic thingis, for It was reprevit *wit* al gude men;
- 30 and eftir þat he had chosin him self, he chesit M. cornelius maleginensis, M. sergius, l. minutius, q. fabius, q. petulius, T. Anthonius, Ceso duellius, spu. Appius, & a. Robuleus.⁶

¹ expone. ² haill. ³ bot, *A.* ⁴ citijmatus. ⁵ father brother.

⁶ mertius cornelius maleginesum, Martius sergius, Lactetius minutius, quintius fabius, quintius petulius, titus Antonius, Ceso Duellius, spurrius appius, & A. Robulious.

how þir ten men rang *witʰ* grete tyranny abone þe
 romanis, and how þai empeschit þe *commites* and
 generall electioun of pepil to mak þame self regne
witʰ perpetuall empire abone þe romanis.

Ca. xij.¹ 5

(XXXVI) This was þe fyne of þe *commissioun* gevin to
 Appius, þat he chesit him self quhare he suld haue chosin
 vtheris to þis new signorie. than Appius began to leif eftir his
 sensualite² and appetite, Inducing þe remanent of his collegis to
 follow his maneris. afore þai war *cummyn* to þare auctorite, þir 10
 x men made quiet consultatiouns amang þame self, but ony avise
 of vther cumpanyis; and belive þai war instruckit with sa pride-
 full consel, þat þai couth³ *nocht* dissimill⁴ þare hicht, and kepit
 þare entreß sa strate, þat þe pepill couth⁵ *nocht* but grete
 difficulte haue speich of þame. Now was þe mater drawin ford- 15
 wartis to þe Idis of maii, be quhilkis *cummys* þe solemne sesoun
 to begyn ony officis or digniteis. The first day of Iugement
 haldin be þir ten men was richt notabill be huge dredoure and
 fere appering to þe pepill; for þocht þir other ten men (quhilkis
 rang in þe 3ere afore) kepit sic ordoure during þare tyme, þat 20
 euery ane of þame rang þare day about, havand afore him for þat
 day þe xij *seriandis witʰ* axis, wandis and ornamentis riall, On þe
 first day of Iugement euery ane of þir ten men come with xij
seriandis, armyt *witʰ* axis and wandis, to þe court atanis, Extend-
 (256). ing in þe hale to þe nowmer of j^cxx⁶ *seriandis*, * and sen þir x 25
 men war create but appellacioun, na man durst oppone him to
 p. 279. þare autorite. þus þai repre|sentit þe resemblance and figure of
 x kingis attanis afore þe pepill. This terroure was multiplijt sa
 hie, þat It nocht onelie made þe small pepill, bot als þe faderis

¹ lx.

² sensewalitie.

³ could.

⁴ dissimbill.

⁵ culd.

⁶ ane hundreith & t[w]enty.

and grete princes of þe ciete, astonist, traisting þir ten men subornate¹ and in sindri wise Instruckit to seik occasioun for þir hereschippis and slauchter. apperit gif ony man war mynde-full of sic thingis as concernis þare liberte, Or spak ony thing in
 5 defence þareof afore The senate or pepill, þat þis man (Nocht-witstanding of quhatsumeuir preeminence he be of) sall be first scurgit with wandis, syne hedit with ane ax, to þe grete fere and terroure of all otheris þat wald attempt sic thingis in tymes cummyng. and abone þir dammagis na support was left to
 10 romane pepill aganis thir x men; for nocht onelie all appella-cioun was tane away, bot als with þare awne consent euery other thing þat mycht þareto mak Impediment was on þe samyn maner tane away. howbeit It was nocht so with þir men þat rang in þe ȝere afore, for þai sufferit þare sentence and decretis to be
 15 correkkit be vigoure of ane appellacioun, Interponit fra ane of þame to þare collegis, as was provin in þe actioun of Iulius x man aganis sextius²; for þis Iulius, of his fre volunte & benevo-lence, remittit certane thingis to þe Iugement of pepill, how beit þe decisioun þareof pertenit to his awne auctorite. Thus was þe
 20 terroure certane tyme grete in þe ciete, to na leß terroure of þe faderis þan small pepill; [bot at last It was conwertrit halely on þe small pepill,] for þis ten men abstenit fra all Iniure of þe faderis and princis of þe ciete, exercing þare luste and Insolence with grete cruelte and rigoure on þe commons and vilest parte
 25 of þe ciete alanerlie. forthir þai war gevin to þe favoure of party bot ony sicht to Iust or Iniust mater[is]; & þat þare favoure mycht haue strenth of equite, þai gaif þare decisionis and Iuge-mentis of al materis at hame, syne publist þe samyn in opin courte. gif ony man appelit fra ane of þare sentence to ane
 30 vthir, he was sa trublit þat he repentit sare þat he stude nocht at þe first sentence. In þe mene tyme raiß ane quiet rumoure (howbeit na man durst be autorite þareof) þat þir men war sworne & convenit amang þame self to reiose þis new senzorie, nocht onelie for þe | tyme present, bot als for all tymes cummyng, p. 280.
 35 In sic wise þat þai sall [stop and] empesche * all commites for (257).

¹ subornit.² sextwis (!).

election of new magistratis and digniteis.¹ (XXXVII) The small pepill, opprest *with* mony harmes, beheld reuthfully þe visage of þe faderis, and began to favoure þare liberte, for throw þe fere and dreddoure of seruitute² þai brocht þare commoun weill in þis present troubil. þe faderis *nocht* onelie hatit þir x men, bot als 5 hatit þe small pepill, na thing commending þe thingis done be þame, and thocht na thing vnsemand þat þir hevy *dammagis* war fallin to þame, sen þai of þare awne fre volunte sufferit þame self to be thirllit to *seruitude*. The faderis wald *nocht* supporte þe pepill in þis mater, bot dissimillit to þat fyne þat þe trubill & 10 Iniuris done Ythandlie be þir ten men suld be sa odius & vnsufferabil, þat þe pepill suld be constrenit to desire þe consullis to be chosin agane, & þe ciete to [be] brocht to þe samyn estate as It was afore. Now was þe maist parte of þe 3ere gane, And two tabillis ekit to þir vther x tabillis afore rehersit. Thus was 15 It be mature deliberatioun concludit, gif þir two tabillis, full of lawis (as said Is), war pronuncit in *commites* centuriate, þat It was *nocht* nedefull to haue þis new signory of x men continewing ony langare abone þe pepill. Thus abaid þe pepill *with* grete desire to haue þe nixt *commites*, þat be the samyn þare consullis 20 *mycht* be chosin as afore, & tuke grete sollicitude in þare myndis, how & be quhat maner þai *mycht* recovir agane the power of tribunis, quhilk was þe onelie protectioun of þare liberte, how beit It was lang desertit. All way apperit na mentioun to be made of the *commites*, for þir ten men garnist þare sidis with þe 25 patricians & nobil 3ounkeris of þe ciete, quhare þai war wount to garniſ, þe sammyn *with* þe tribunis to conquess³ þe favoure of pepill. apperit þarefore þe gouernance of þir ten men to be in plane eversioun and *dammagis* of tribunis; for þir ten men war nocht onelie gouernouris of the pepil, bot als gouernouris of þare 30 gudis & fortoun, in sic wise þat quha had maist riches had maist p. 281. autorite abone þe laif. and abone þir Iniuris | mony of þe

¹ *B. proceeds*: quhairthrow þai sall reiose þis new signorie *nocht* onlie for þe tyme present, bot als for all tymis cuming, and to reiose þe said signorie perpetewalie þai sall empesche and (!) *commis* for electioun of new magistratis & dignyteis. þe small pepill, etc.

² *seruitude*.

³ *conqueis*.

small pepill war scurgit *witȝ* wandis, & vtheris hedit with axis,
 and to þat fyne þat þare cruelte suld nocht appere for nocht,
 eftir the slauchter or punycioun of þe man followit confiscatioun
 of his gudis. The 3oung nobillis, corruppit *witȝ* rewardis, tuke
 5 na sollicitude to resist þe Iniur^{is} done be þir ten men, bot erare
 war gevin to fortifye * þare licence and opyn renȝeis¹ than to (258).
 desire þe commoun liberte. (XXXVIII) Now war þe Idis
cummyn of maij,² but ony substitutioun or electioun of new
 digniteis. Thir private persouns regnand in the place of ten
 10 men, *witȝ* myndis na thing mynyst to bruke perpetuale empire,
 come to þe sight of pepil clothit with axis, wandis, and othir
 ornamentis riall, schewin be þe sammyn þe verray resemblance
 & similitude of king^{is}. Thus semyt þe public liberte perpetuale
 to periß, for na man for þe tyme present nor to cum apperit to
 15 be recoverare þareof.

how the sabinis and Equis made grete Incursiouns in
 þe romane landis; how the ten men sumound þe
 senate and faderis to consult in þis mater; Of þe
 20 scharpe³ orisoun made be Valerius & horacius
 aganis þe ten men. Ca. xiiij.⁴

Nocht onelie war þe romanis disparit but ony esperance of
 releif in þis mater, bot als war contempnit *witȝ* þare nyctibouris,
 quhilkis thocht vnwourthy þat romanis suld haue ony empire,
 sen þai had na liberte. In þe mene tyme, þe sabinis with grete
 25 power maid diuerß Incursiouns in [þe] romane landis; and eftir
 þat þai had waistit braid boundis þareof *witȝ* huge pray of men
 and gudis but ony resistance, þai colleckit þare army *vngiddir*,
 quhilkis *witȝ* Incursiouns war wide skatterit throw þe cuntre, and
 set down þare tentis at Eretum, beleving þis new *discreitoun*
 30 [rising] amang þe romanis to be Impediment to the raising of

¹ renȝeis.² may.³ scharp.⁴ xij.

ony armye. The romanis war *nocht* onelie effrayit be messingeris,
 bot als be fleing of landwart pepill to þe ciete for fere of þis
 p. 282. trubil. þe x men | tuke consultatioun, quhat was to be done, &
 howbeit þai war vode of all gude esperance, knawand bait^h þe
 haterent of þe small pepill and þe princis of þe ciete aganis þame, 5
 zit þare dredoure was ekit be ane new trubil; for þe equis on þe
 tothir side *wit^h* sindri Incursiouns waistit þe tusculane landis,
 and sett doun þare tentis at Algidum. Incontinent come
 (259). *legatis fra þe tusculanis, desiring supporte aganis þe equis. þis
 new trubil made þir ten men sa effrayit, þat þai war constrainit 10
 to tak consultatioun of þe senate, quhat was to be done aganis
 þir two armyis of equis and sabinis, liand with awfull mynassing
 about þare ciete; and howbeit þai knewe na thing bettir þan
 extreme haterent & Invie¹ baith of þe faderis and pepill aganis
 þame, zit þai *commandit* þe senatouris to be *summond* to þe 15
 courte, knawing weill þe frequent hereschippis made in þe romane
 landis be Inemyis, & all the troubill following þareapoun, wald
 be sa hevelie² Imput to þame, þat þe pepill *mycht* tak occasioun
 þarethrow to depone þame baith of þare auctorite & honouris,
 leß þan þai war þe more stoutlie confederit togiddir vnder ane 20
 mynde to resist ane few nowmer of þame þat desirit to bring þare
 digniteis to nocht, & to tak sic punycioun³ on þame, þat þe
 residew of þare attemptatis suld be þe more eselie dantit. als
 sone as þe *seriand* be opin proclamatioun *summond*⁴ þe
 senatouris to þe court, becaus þai war *nocht* *summond*⁴ lang 25
 tyme afore to sic effect, þe novelte þareof brocht all þe pepill in
 sic⁵ admiracioun, *nocht* knawand quhat was happynnyt, Nor þe
 cauß quhy þe thing (þat was sa mony 3eris afore vnhanit⁶ and
 out of consuetude) was brocht agane in vse; and becaus sic
 thingis war done as pertenit to þe auld liberte of þare ciete, The 30
 thankis⁷ þareof suld be gevin alanerlie to Inemyis. The pepil
 lukit throw all partis of þe merket and saw few senatouris
 present. thus was þe courte of ten men desert but ony cum-
 pany. þe small pepill allegit þe cauß quhy þe faderis nocht

¹ Inwy.³ punisioun.⁵ grit.⁷ thank.² hewaly.⁴ *summond*.⁶ on hantit.

convenit was þat private¹ men war clothit *witʒ* authorite aganis þare lawis, and had na power² to | convene þe senate. apperit p. 283.
 þarefore þe tyme ganand to recovir³ þe public liberte, gif þe small pepil wald concur *witʒ* þe faderis, and consent na mare to
 5 þe rasing of ane armye þan þe faderis has done to convene at þe command of þir ten men. few of þe faderis war sene owthir in þe merkett or in þe ciete, for mony of þame departit of þe ciete to landwart placis, and but ony sollicitude of public materis gaif þame to þare awne besines, traisting ay þe more distant &
 10 ferrare þai war fra þe cumpany of þir ten tyranfull men, to be þe ferrare fra euery trubill approcheing. * als sone as þir ten men (260). saw þe faderis *nocht* convenit, þai send apparatouris to þare houß⁴ to tak plegis for þare non-comperence,⁵ and to inquire gif þai desist⁶ fra public convencioun be sett purpoiß. Thir
 15 apparatouris schew at þare returnyng þe faderis war departit of þe ciete to landwart placis. the x men war mare glade quhen þai herde þe departing of faderis to þare landwart placis, þan to haff herde⁷ of þare rebellioun, & þarefore commandit þe faderis to be summound as afore to compere on þe nixt morow; & on
 20 þe said morow þe faderis convenit with more nowmer þan was belevit. þan þe small pepill began to rummys, saying þe faderis has betrasit þare public liberte, obeying to þe command of þir ten men, as þai had bene lauchfully summond; for þir x men war private persouns but ony auctorite. (XXXIX) 3it þe faderis
 25 convenit mare of þare awne benevolence þan for ony ferefull wourdis of þir ten men. It is said quhen Appius Claudius had schewin þe causß of þare convencioun, or evir þe senate & faderis had gevin þare votis & consultatioun concernyng þe mater proponit, þat ane prudent man, L. Valerius, askit licence to speik
 30 sum thing concernyng þe common weill; and becaus þir x men had Inhibit him *witʒ* awful mynassing to speik, he rasit ane huge noyis & troubil in þe courte. Incontinent M. horacius ruschit *witʒ* feirß sprete in þe courte, & callit þe x men for dispite ten tarquinis, and said sen þe tarquynys & kingis war banist and put

¹ prewait.³ recowere.⁵ none-comperance.⁷ haue hard.² powarre.⁴ houssis.⁶ desistit.

fra þare empire be þe lynnage & houß of Valerius & horacius his
 predecessouris, he thocht It resonabil þat þir ten men war banist
 p. 284. be | him on þe samyn maner. "þe ten men" (said horacius) "ar
 nocht hatit to þe pepill for þoure name, for grete Iupiter¹ and
 romulus the begynnare of oure ciete, and all þe remanent kingis 5
 eftir him succeding, & þe kingis of sacrifice, ar callit men; bot
 þe ar odius for þoure tyranny & pride, resembland to þe pepill þe
 figure of x kingis, and sen we mycht suffir na Iniuris nor wrangis
 in l. terquyne þat was oure king, Nor ȝit in his son sixtus ter-
 quyneus þe deflorer of lucreß, how may we suffir ony tyrannys 10
 of private² men? Avise discretelie, howbeit þe haue grete
 pussance, to Inhibit men to speik owthir in þe courte or vtouth
 þe courte." forther he couth persave na ressoun quhy It pertenit
 (261). nocht als wele to him, þat was ane private [man], to con*vene þe
 pepil to ane concioun, as It pertenit to þir ten men to comvene 15
 þe senate. Thir x men, gif þai pleiß, sall haue sone experience
 quhiddir þare dolour Is greter in recouering þare liberte, or þare
 averice greter in posseding of wrangwis empire. "thir ten men"
 (said horacius) "has convenit þe senate to haue consultatioun
 concernyng the batell now appering be sabinis, howbeit na 20
 battallis apperis sa damageus³ to þe commoun weill as þir men,
 quhilkis war create for ministratioun of lawis, and has left na
 place to equite nor Iustice in oure ciete, bot has tane away þe
 commites, þe ȝerelie digniteis, and þe thing þat was þe onelie
 defence of þare liberte, þat Is to say, þe changeing of empire 25
 þare ȝere and courß about, put doun be þare manifest tyrannye;
 and þocht þai be bot private persouns, þai regnne with kingly
 empire and kingly ornamentis. soith⁴ is þat eftir þe proscrip-
 tioun of kingis war certane ȝerelie digniteis create to be chosin
 onelie of þe patricianis, & sone eftir, be secessioun of pepill to 30
 þe sacrate montane, war create certane new digniteis to be chosin
 only of þe plebeanis; bot þis new signorie is nowther for þe
 weill of þe patricianis nor plebeanis. þai ar nocht for þe weill of
 plebeanis, for þai did neuer thing be avise of þe pepill. þai ar
 nocht for þe weill of patricianis, for in þis ȝere quhilk is now nere 35

¹ grit Iubiter.² prywaite.³ dampnagius.⁴ suith.

gone þai desirit nowthir þe faderis nor princis of þe ciete, nor ȝit
 nane other of þe patricianis to ony of þare consultation, and
 regnis now *witȝ* | sa pridefull empire þat þai Inhibit ony man to p. 285.
 speik for þe public weill; and to þat fyne þat þare autorite sall
 5 *nocht* continewe be onelie esperance þat þai haue in dredoure of
 þe pepill, I say þe pepill now presently sustenis ma cruelteis &
 oppressiouns be þir ten men, þan may be ymagineate or dred to
 cum on þame in tymes *cummyn*."

Of the orison made be C. Claudius to soft þe ferocite (262).
 10 of Appius Claudius; Of þe orison made be l.
 Cornelius to continew þir ten men in þare auctorite;
 how twa armyis of romanis war rasis aganis þe
 sabinis & equis, and baith discomfist.

Ca. xiiij.¹

15 (XL) Quhen horace had said thir wourdis, þe ten men war sa
commovit þat þai couth *nocht* fynd þe way how þai suld meis
 þare Ire, nor ȝit how þai mycht reveng the samyn, *nocht* knowing
 to² quhat fyne þis contentioun suld cum. Incontinent C.
 Claudius, fader brother to appius Claudius tent man, began to
 20 speik to his said nevo,³ erare in maner of prayer þan ony
 displesere, Requiring him for þe lufe he had to þe saul of ap.
 Claudius his fader, to assist erare to þe civile⁴ societe In
 quhilk he was bred & nurist þan to þe wikkit confederation
 maid betuix him and his colleigis. And forther he requirit
 25 him to consent þareto, erare for þe lufe he had to his awne
 fader, þan for þe favoure he had to þe *commoun* weill; for gif þe
commoun weill be *nocht* defendit *witȝ* gude will, It will be
 haldin in þe richt perforce; and becaus of grete debate risys
 grete Invie and haterent, he dred sarelie þe end of þare con-
 30 tentiouns, throw þe haterent ot pepill aganis þame, suld be

¹ lxij.

² be, *both*.

³ newoy.

⁴ *sewyle*.

noysum & perrellus. quhen þe x men had Inhibit C. claudius to speik ony thing *wit*hout he war demandit, he eschamit a litil. Nochtþeles he opynnyt his mynde *wit*h more dispite, & said he thocht expedient þat na consultatioun of þe senate suld be made in tymes cummyng be ony avise of þir x men, for þai war bot 5 private persouns, regnand in auctorite but ony commites or electioun of pepill. mony of þe faderis and grete princes of þe ciete assistit to his opinioun. ane other sentence, semand mare p. 286. pronȝeand and scharp, was pronuncit in þe said | courte, howbeit It was nocht of sa grete effect, quhi/*kis* said þe patricianis war 10 convenit to cheiȝ ane Interking, becaus na man aucht to convene þe senate *wit*hout he war clothit *wit*h public office, and sen (263). C. claudius has decernit þir x men alanerlie bot private *persouns, Thay haue na Iurisdiction nor power to assembl þe faderis to ony convencioun. The actionn of ten men beand 15 nere perist in þis wise, raiȝ vp l. Cornelius, brother to M. cornelius x man,¹ for he was ordanit be all þare avise to speik in þe lattir end of þis mater; & Incontinent l. Cornelius vnder þe schaddo of batall (as þe samyn war Instantly appering be sabinis and equis) began to defend þe action of his 20 brother and his collegis, Saying he had na litill admiration how and be quhat maner It was happynnyt, þat þir ten men suld be Impugnit,² specially be sic men as reiosit þe signorie þareof In þe ȝere afore. "quhat Is þe cauȝ" (said he) "þat na man Impugnit þis new signorie sa mony monethis bipast? 25 and now quhen Inemyis approchis to oure portis, ȝe raiȝ trubil and discorde amang þe pepill." he mycht nocht vnderstand þe samyn done to ony vthir fyne, bot onelie to mak þe mater (In quhilk þai lauboure) sa dirk and nubilus, þat na thing salbe sene clerelie In It quhat suld be done. forther, nane Is amang 30 þame, sen þare myndis ar chargit *wit*h sic sollicitude, þat can remove the thing þat dois maist preiudice in þis mater. as to þe mater presentlie occurring, he thocht þir ten men suld departe fra þare office at þe nixt Idis of maij, as valerius & horacius afore desirit; for als sone as þe batellis war endit, 35

¹ tent man.² Impugnit.

þe public weill *mycht* be brocht as afore to tranquillite and peace. In þe mene tyme he thocht expedient þat Appius Claudius (quhilk was chosin to create þir x men) suld be examine¹ quheþer he create þame to reiose þare autorite alanerly for ane
 5 þere, Or gif he create þame to continew ay and quhil þe lawis (quhilkis failzit and Inlakit) war completit. for þir ressouns he thocht na thing was to be done except alanerlie þe rasing of armyis aganis | the sabinis and equis. Attoure, gif þai belevit p. 287. the fame of þis batell was vane, gif þai belevit na faith was to be
 10 gevin to þe messingeris þareof nor zit to þe legatis of tusculanis, gude war to send furth exploratouris to reporte all thing (as apperit) *wit* maist securite; & gif ony faith war to be gevin to þe saidis legatis, gude war to rais ane armye, and þe sammyn to be led as þir ten men thinkis expedient, and na other mater to be
 15 presentlie tretit. (XLI) This orisoun of Cornelius movit þe 30ung faderis to assist to his opinioun. * Than valerius & (264). horatius began feirslie to Invay aganis þir ten men, and desirid licence to speik for þe *commoun* weill afore þe pepill, sen þai war Inhibit for þis present factioun to speik afore þe senate. Con-
 20 sidering þir ten men war bot private persouns, Thay had na power to Inhibit ony man to speik owthir in þe courte or concion. Na place aucht þarefore to be gevin to þare vane and vsurpit autorite. Appius (traisting þis new segnorie aluterlie to peris gif he resistit *nocht* þe violence of valerius² and horacius
 25 *wit* siclike audacite as þai persewit) commandit na man to speik bot gif he war requirit. At last, becaus Valerius said he wald *nocht* kepe silence³ at þe *command* of ane private man, Appius commandit ane *seriand* to pas and apprehend him. Thus was þe debate more feirþ þan afore; and þocht valerius requirit þe pepill
 30 to assist to his opinioun, he was *nocht* supportit⁴ bot violentlie eieckit out of þe courte. þan C. Cornelius embrasit appius, and causit him put ane finale end to þis debate, and gaif power to Valerius to speik quhateuir he list, howbeit his speking *nocht* avalit. thus bure þe ten men furth þare autorite, *Nochtwith-*
 35 standing ony reclamatioun in þe contrare. the agit faderis and

¹ examenat.² weolence of waleryus.³ cilence.⁴ suport.

nobillis of þe ciete had grete haterent aganis þe power of tribunis; And becaus þai knewe þe pepill war more desirus to haue tribunis þan consullis, Thay had levir þir ten men had gane fra þare autorite plesandlie þan to be put fra þe samyn be p. 288. force and haterent of þe pepill. for gif al materis war ple[sandly] 5 dressit, It mycht happin owthir be continuatioun of battellis, or ellis be moderate and soft empire of þe consullis, þat þe pepill mycht desist fra ony desire of tribunis in tymes cummyng. finallie, be tollerance of þe faderis, ane army was rasit. þe young men of þe ciete (becaus þe empire of þir ten men was but 10 appellatioun) gaif þare names in writt but ony obstakill. als sone as þe legiouns war writtin, thir ten men tuke consultatioun amang þame self quha¹ sall pas to batall, and quha sall be capitannis of þe armyis. the principall amang þir ten men was Appius Claudius and q[uintius] fabius; and becaus þe trubill apperit 15 mare noysum at hame þan of feild, this appius was fund for his feirß and violent Ingine mare gannand to dant civil contentiouns, gif ony occurrit in þe ciete, þan to lede ony army. On (265). þe tothir side was fund þat * fabius was more Ingenius² in chevelrie³ þan constant in civil werkis; And pocht he was ane 20 nobleman, and sum tyme richt proffittabil to þe ciete, baith in were and pece, zit þe signorie of þir x men, & þe Ire of his collegis, alterit his mynde in siclike sorte, þat he desirit erare to be like appius in maneris þan to be like himself. The charge of batall aganis þe sabinis was gevin to þis q[uintius] 25 fabius, havand *wit* him M. rabuleus & q[uintius] petuleus to be collegis. On þe tothir side war send aganis þe equis M. Cornelius, l[ucius] minutius, Ceso duellius, T[itus] Antonius, & M. sergius. Spurius oppius was ordanit to remane⁴ *wit* appius Claudius to helpe him to reule þe ciete. (XLII) The 30 commoun weill of rome was na bettir gidit at hame þan of feild. It was evil gidit at hame; for appius Claudius and spurius Oppius be þare wikkit gouernance drew all þe pepill in þare Inuy and haterent; and þe mater was evil gidit of feild

¹ quhay.³ chywilre.² Ingynius.⁴ A new hand (No. 11) begins here in B. (p. 321).

be falt of knichtis and men of armes. for þe saidis knichtis
 (to þat fyne þat na thing suld follow *witʰ* felicity þat was done be
 þir ten men) sufferit þame self to be vincust to þare hie dis-
 honoure & *dammage*. Thus war þe romanis discomfist baith
 5 at Algidum be þe equis, and at Eretum be þe sabinis. howbeit
 þe *sammyn* was in diuerß sortis, for sa mony of þame (as | war p. 289.
 discomfist be sabinis) fled within þe *nycʰt* to rome, & campit
 þame *witʰ* garnist Oistis¹ on ane hie montane betuix Crustu-
 meria and fidenā, and defendit þame fra persute of Inemyis²
 10 mare be strenth of þe place quhare þai war campit þan be ony
 manhede or vertew of þare handis. The romanis gat mare
dammage at Algidum þan at Eretum; for *nocʰt* onelie war þai
 brokin and spulzeit of þare tentis at Algidum, bot als spulezeit
 of all þare other gudis and constrenit to fle to þe toun of
 15 tusculum to saif þare livis be fidelite of þare confederate
 freyndis be quham þai war *nocʰt* frusterit.³ Thir tithingis,
 being divulgate in rome, made þe faderis sa effrayit þat þai put
 aside⁴ all Invie & haterent þai bure aganis þir ten men, &
commandit continuall walking to be in þe ciete, and be generale
 20 edict *commandit* all þame þat *mycʰt* bere armoure and wappynnys
 to stand in þare statiouns for defence of þe wallis & portis;
 syne ordanit ane new power to be send haistelie to supporte
 * þe romanis at tusculum, and to cauß þe ten men (quhilkis war (266).
 in tusculum) to departe fra þe said toun, and keip þare army
 25 vnder garnist tentis in þe feild; and *commandit* þe tothir army
 of romanis þat lay betuix fidenā and Crustumeria to transport
 þame in þe sabyne landis to mak the sabinis sa effrayit, seand
 þare Inemyis⁵ campit in þare landis, þat þai sall desist fra ony
 segeing of þe romane⁶ ciete.

¹ hostis.² Inimes.³ frustrat.⁴ on side.⁵ Inimes.⁶ romanis.

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS.

1

2

3

2nds

8142 ³
80

Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 009 611 844

~~PLATING~~

Stanford University Library
Stanford, California

In order that others may use this book, please
return it as soon as possible, but not later than
the date due.



PRINTED IN U.S.A.

